MEMOIRS

OF THE

LIFE AND GOSPEL LABOURS

OF THE LATE

DANIEL WHEELER,

A MINISTER OF THE SOCIETY OF FRIENDS.

"He brought me up also out of an horrible pit, out of the miry clay, and set my feet upon a rock, and established my goings. And He hath put a new song in my mouth, even praise unto our God."—PSALM xl. 2, 3.

Abridged Edition.

LONDON:
CHARLES GILPIN, 5, BISHOPSGATE WITHOUT.
1852.

BX7795
W35A3
1852

PREFACE.

The present work was undertaken in 1845, by Daniel Wheeler, who had edited the larger edition of his father's memoirs. After bestowing much pains and thought in preparing it, he judged it best to delay its publication for a time; and his decease, which occurred shortly after, still further postponed it.

His near connexions have since endeavoured to complete the work thus interrupted. They have found it no easy matter to make such a selection as should comprise within the limits of the present volume, the most important and interesting portions of the original, and present at the same time a continuous narrative. Many of the omissions have been reluctantly made; but it is hoped that the diminished size, and cost of the work may be the means of extending its usefulness.

Bristol, First Month, 1852.

CONTENTS.

PAGE.

CHAPTER I.

Introductory Remarks by the Author—His parentage, education—Early becomes an orphan—Enters the Merchant Service, then the Royal Navy—Is paid off—Enters the Army . . 1

CHAPTER II.

The Author goes to Plymouth, thence with his regiment to Ireland—Kilkenny—Dublin—Harassing service—Personal danger—Recruits—Liverpool—Bristol—Southampton—Embarks thence with troops for the campaign in Holland . . . 13

CHAPTER III.

Nimeguen—Many dangers—Attacked by fever—Hospital treatment, heavy mortality among the sick—Disasters of the British Army—Retreat to Bremen—Returns to England . . 24

CHAPTER IV.

Sails with his regiment to the West Indies—Remarkable preservation—Serious impressions—Returns to England—Becomes convinced of Friends' principles—Received into membership in 1797—Settles in business and marries—Acknowledged a minister in 1816 36

CHAPTER V.

Prospect of duty in Russia—Offers himself to the Russian Government to superintend agricultural improvements near Petersburg—Visits Petersburg, 1817—Removes with his family to Russia, 1818—William Allen and Stephen Grellet—Visit from the Emperor, &c. 47

PAGE.

CHAPTER VI.

Sundry letters to his friends in England—Visit from the Emperor —Inundation at Petersburg 62

CHAPTER VII.

Visits England, 1825—Death of the Emperor Alexander, and occurrences consequent thereon, 1826—Extensive fires, &c., 1827—Correspondence 80

CHAPTER VIII.

Visits England with his wife in 1830—Religious engagements there—1831. Cholera at Petersburg—Epistle to Friends of York quarterly meeting, 1832 94

CHAPTER IX.

Prospect of distant religious service—Resigns his appointment in Russia—Sails for England, 1832—Obtains certificates for religious service in the South Sea Islands, &c.—Decease of his wife —Illness of his children—Journey to Russia, in 1833—Return to England—Sails for the South Seas—Detention at the Isle of Wight 104

CHAPTER X.

Departure from the British Channel—Rio Janeiro—Tempestuous Voyage 126

CHAPTER XI.

Van Diemen's Land—James Backhouse and G. W. Walker—Sydney—Norfolk Island—Tahiti 147

CHAPTER XII.

Tahiti 161

CHAPTER XIII.

Tahiti continued—Eimeo 180

CHAPTER XIV.

Eimeo continued—Huahine—Raiatea—Bolabola—Voyage to the Sandwich Islands—Oahu 195

PAGE.

CHAPTER XV.

Sandwich Islands 216

CHAPTER XVI.

Sandwich Islands continued 238

CHAPTER XVII.

Rarotonga—Friendly Islands 257

CHAPTER XVIII.

Friendly Islands continued—New Zealand . . . 280

CHAPTER XIX.

New Zealand continued—Sydney—Hobarton—Return to England 302

CHAPTER XX.

Attends the yearly meeting in London of 1838—His prospect of religious service in America—Visits his family in Russia—Sails to New York—Travels in the United States . . . 326

CHAPTER XXI.

Travels in North America—Return to England . . . 344

CHAPTER XXII.

Alarming illness of his son Charles, then in France, proceeds thither, death of his son—Returns to England—Again sails for New York—Last illness and death—Concluding remarks . 359

MEMOIRS OF DANIEL WHEELER.

CHAPTER I.

INTRODUCTORY REMARKS BY THE AUTHOR—HIS PARENTAGE, EDUCATION — EARLY BECOMES AN ORPHAN—ENTERS THE MERCHANT SERVICE, THEN THE ROYAL NAVY—IS PAID OFF—ENTERS THE ARMY.

HAVING frequently derived much valuable instruction from the perusal of the narratives of those who have long since exchanged an earthly for an heavenly inheritance, the thought has at times occurred to me, that a short memoir of my own life,—however evil "the days of the years of my pilgrimage" have been,—might, under the Divine blessing, be made in like manner useful to others. But, perhaps, from the humiliating conviction, that days as without number have been miserably devoted to madness and folly, in forgetfulness of a long-suffering Lord God, who is abundant in goodness and truth,—the guilty mind would gladly hide the remembrance of these for ever in oblivion, and pass over them in silent abhorrence; or, conscious that there yet remains a stubborn and unsubdued residue of human corruptions, —a sense of unworthiness and unfitness may have hitherto operated to retard the undertaking; lest the creature should in any degree be exalted, to whom shame only with blushing and confusion of face must ever belong.

Whatever may thus far have impeded any attempt of the kind, I am induced, not as a matter of choice, but as a duty, now in the sixty-first year of my age, to commence the work; humbly imploring the assistance of Him, who "knoweth the thoughts and intents of the

heart, to enable me, as far as it may be carried forward, to accomplish it to his own praise and glory, as a faithful testimony for the advancement of my holy Redeemer's kingdom in the hearts of our fellow-creatures.

Although no man can possibly be excusable for having done wrong because others may have been as bad as himself, or even worse,—yet the magnitude of the present undertaking would, in my view, be diminished, if on reviewing writings of a similar kind, any thing like resemblance, or a parallel case could be discovered. But, alas! all that have gone before, appear to me to have travelled a much shorter time than myself, in the broad way that leadeth to destruction. Many have yielded again and again to the temptations of the unwearied and insidious enemy of mankind, and have been long in the fetters of sin and death; yet I feel to have surpassed all others, that I have read any account of, in having drawn "iniquity as with cords of vanity, and sin as it were with a cart rope." I can adopt as my own, I hope in a degree of true abasement of self, the acknowledgment of the apostle,—"this is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief."

I was born in London, the 27th day of the Eleventh Month, 1771: my parents, William and Sarah Wheeler, were members of the established religion of the country, and strict adherents to all its rites and ceremonies; and although not particularly conspicuous as being more religious than others of the same class, yet they were highly esteemed and respected by a large circle of acquaintance for uprightness and integrity,—of which there are at this day many living witnesses. They had a large family of children, whose minds they endeavoured to imbue at an early age with the fear of their great Creator,—taking them regularly to attend the performance of public worship, and also reading the Holy Scriptures in the family at home; portions of which I well remember reading aloud when very young.

By a document now in my possession, it appears that until some time after my father's marriage, he was not in any line of business; but afterwards, to meet the demand occasioned by a great increase of family, he commenced

the wine trade in a select way. To enter into minute family details is not the present object, nor is it within my reach, being too young, when deprived of both parents, to be able to speak from knowledge of my own. I have but a very indistinct recollection of my father's person, not being quite seven years old when he died, at the age of forty-three years. Some time before his death, our once large family of children was reduced to five only, of whom I was the youngest. We then lived in London, at the Bond Street end of Lower Grosvenor Street; but those parts of the premises which looked into Bond Street, were occupied by another person, as tenant to my father.

My mother was endowed with a large capacity, combining great sweetness with firmness of mind: and although an entire stranger to every kind of business, she persevered in an extraordinary manner after the death of her beloved husband, in carrying on the trade for the support of the family; and so long as she lived, it continued increasingly to flourish, our eldest brother being her assistant in the business. When she was attacked by the illness that deprived her family of their endeared and only surviving parent, I was sent for home on the mournful occasion, being then at a boarding-school at Parson's Green, near Fulham. Of the loss of such a mother, I was very sensible, being about twelve years old at the time; and as I had a much greater personal knowledge of her worth and solicitous affection, than I could possibly have had of my dear father, the event of losing her made a deeper and more lasting impression. I had had much of her maternal society, and had largely partaken of her constant parental and tender care, of which, perhaps, from being the youngest of the family, I had more than an ordinary share.

A clergyman related to my mother by marriage, who resided on a living in the West Riding of Yorkshire, had the whole management of our family affairs, being left sole executor. He came up to London at this eventful moment; and after having examined into the state of things, it was judged eligible that the business should still be carried on for the benefit of us all, by our eldest brother, whose character at that period, and known capability, seemed fully to warrant such a decision. Shortly

after, I was sent again to school; and our little family band, although lamentably reduced, still remained awhile longer unbroken.

For a few months after this great bereavement, all things went on as well as could be expected with our solitary family; but the deep affliction into which it had been plunged, by degrees began to wear away, although for a time it seemed as if it could scarcely be borne, much less forgotten. Our brother, on whose conduct the welfare of the rest greatly depended, thus left without parental control, became less and less attentive to business; and gradually sliding into bad habits, and mixing with evil associates, gave way to every excess and indulgence in his power. From his extravagance and negligence, the affairs entrusted to him at home became so much embarrassed, that it was now determined by the executor in trust, that the business should be disposed of; and the necessary steps were taken accordingly. It was not long before a person came forward, who was competent to purchase the stock on hand, and enter into the trade on his own account.

Although by our brother's imprudence, the family were now banished from a comfortable home, and separated, never all to meet again in mutability; yet the business itself received no material check, nor was it for a single hour suspended; but was afterwards carried on to advantage for several years by our successor. When proper arrangements were made, our beloved but unhappy brother sailed for Jamaica, preferring in all probability a foreign clime, rather than endure the reflections which he so justly merited at home, for having thus brought ruin and disgrace upon a family, whose prospects had been less clouded than those of many others in similar circumstances. It cannot be doubted that much sorrow of heart would be his portion: but I had never an opportunity of obtaining much information respecting him, from the time he left England until several years after his death. He died at the age of thirty-eight years; and it appears that he had been comfortably settled for the last several years of his life and been frequent in correspondence with those branches of our family that were more stationary than myself. My other brother had previously

settled in the West Indies. At this time, my eldest sister went to reside with our relative in Yorkshire to whom she looked up as a guardian, until married: my youngest sister was at a boarding-school at Putney; and I remained with the family which succeeded to the business. Having been previously removed from school to assist my brother in the counting-house, I had acquired considerable knowledge of its management; it was therefore a convenience to them who were entire strangers to it, and for a time no other occupation offering for me to engage in, I was furnished with employment, and had still a comfortable home.

Our family compact was now for ever dissolved;—we were scattered and widely separated from each other, without any near relative in the world. My father was an only son, and my mother an only daughter, so that we had neither uncles nor aunts; and I believe, in the strict application of the term cousin, not one that could properly be called so: neither were any of our grand-parents living, or had ever been known to us, except our dear mother's mother, who ended her days at our house three years before her daughter's decease. Our family being thus severed from each other, we were cast upon the wide world, as to relatives, in a peculiarly destitute situation; but yet not altogether friendless,—for some who had long been bound to the family by ties of strong attachment, clearly evinced their sincerity, by never withdrawing from the orphan children, (now overtaken by adversity,) that regard and kindness, which had been extended to their deceased parents in the days of their prosperity;—a test which the friendship of the world can but seldom bear.

Having brought my little narrative to this point, it seems necessary to determine in what manner it shall be carried forward, before we proceed any farther. After due consideration, I am of the mind that it should be hereafter confined principally to events relating to myself; only in future bringing into view other branches of the family, when the hand of time shall, through the over-ruling providence of Almighty God, have again led some of us into connection with each other at periods far remote: one of which was made productive of the most striking and important change in the history of my life;

and which I humbly hope will lead to the accomplishment of another, transcendentally greater and everlasting, at my death. But, reader, if the power to choose were mine, to draw an impenetrable shade over the next several years would best suit my natural inclination; it would save me many pangs, and I should at once bring thee to the time when I could tell thee with delight, "what the Lord hath done for my soul." But with these years omitted, the long-suffering and unutterable goodness of my gracious God and Saviour would be eclipsed, his tender mercies would be ungratefully robbed of their lustre, the riches of his grace obscured, and its glory hidden. I must therefore, like the regular and progressive gradations of nature, proceed from those days of childhood and youth, at which I had now arrived,—would that I could say, of innocency. But ah! at this distance of time, I can painfully trace the springings up of the evil root, which failed not at an early age to bring forth fruit of those things "whereof I am now ashamed;" having sorrowfully found from woful experience, that their "end is death." Canst thou then wonder at the shrinking of human nature from the task of thus re-opening a dark picture of guilt? such as I pray it may never be thy lot to know, or to have to render an account of as thine own. Though now in full abhorrence of the same, through the mercy of God in Christ Jesus, I have a hope that my sins, though many, will be forgiven, and for ever blotted out as "a thick cloud;" and that my tribulated soul will yet be cleansed by the precious "blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel." *This* only "cried from the ground" for vengeance against the offender; whilst the blood of Him who cried—"Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do," cleanseth from all sin, and was shed for many, for the remission of sins,—yea, for all that repent, believe, and obey the gospel in the secret of their hearts revealed, which is "the power of God unto salvation." But although ready to shudder at the prospect before me, I feel strengthened to proceed, so far as I may rightly do, from a belief that the work in which I am now engaged, is prompted in mercy, and will not be in vain, peradventure to myself, if not to another. For if permitted to

finish it, I shall have had another opportunity afforded, even at this late hour, for repentance,—a truly great and blessed privilege to every sinner. And how much more shall I owe unto my Lord, if in the course of a diligent search, it should please the "faithful witness," in condescension to discover to the view of my mind sins, which, through the subtle working of the grand adversary, have been partly hidden and imperfectly repented of.

For some time after the separation of our family before hinted at, had taken place, my attention was fully occupied; until the party who had taken to the business became acquainted with its usual routine. The master of the house, holding a post in a public office under government, which required his regular attendance, was absent every day until after dinner; and as his family consisted only of very young children, I had no associates but among the servants; whose example did not fail to have in many things a baneful influence on my thoughtless mind,—though at the time imperceptible—and the consequences unregarded. Yet I was at times desirous that a situation in a well-conducted family, with whom in the days of my parents we had been intimately acquainted, would offer for me; which in all respects would have been much more guarded, than that in which I was; but in this my hope was disappointed.

There was a merchant in the city, who had long shown much friendship for us; on whom, without any particular reason, I kept an eye, as one who was likely to befriend me. He frequently called on business: and one day on perceiving him coming, it occurred to me immediately, that his business was on my behalf. This proved to be the case: for in a short time I was sent for, and informed that he had obtained a situation for me, on board a ship then lying in the Thames, fitting out for Oporto, commanded by a respectable man, a lieutenant in the navy, then on half pay; she belonged to some merchants with whom he was connected in the import trade. This offer was at once accepted on my part, and I suppose that any other would at that time have been the same, without regard to choice; as I do not remember that one occupation had any preference with me rather than another. I am not aware that any attempt was made to dissuade me from this undertaking, by those whose sentiments would

have been regarded, or by any other person; so that the needful preparation was immediately made for this unexpected change of station.

I should not feel easy without noticing in this place, for the benefit of others, the manifold temptations to which young people are necessarily exposed, when brought up to trades similar to that in which I was then employed. From the nature of these trades, there is scarcely a probability of escape from insensibly falling into habits (much more readily acquired than shaken off,) of tasting different kinds of wines and strong liquors, which too often leads the way to intemperance. The injurious effects of these practices, and of such exposure at an early age, having been felt and witnessed by myself, make me the more desirous to warn others against the business.

But a short time elapsed before I went on board the ship, which, in a few days, proceeded to Gravesend. The weather being rough, we were detained a day or two at the Nore; and after reaching the Downs, we were again hindered by boisterous and contrary winds for more than a fortnight. From these and other detentions at sea, the ship was too late to procure a cargo in Portugal, which resulted in our wintering in the Douro; so that before we reached London again, the voyage had occupied fully six months. We were but a short time in the river, before we sailed again on the second voyage; which was completed in less than half the time of the former. During our stay in England, my time was taken up in learning navigation; so that I had scarcely any opportunity of seeing either my sister, or any of our old friends. Whilst I belonged to this vessel, we had a providential escape from fire: the danger was greatly increased by the river being frozen at the time: but with prompt assistance from other ships then in the Thames, the ice was broken, and sufficient water procured to extinguish the flames, before much damage was done. By the time our second voyage was completed, I had become tolerably accustomed to the situation; and although we had experienced some rough weather, I was reconciled to it as much as could be expected.

Soon after returning to London the second time, I found that some of my friends had succeeded in procuring for me the station of midshipman on board a ship of war,

then commissioned at Plymouth, and preparing for the cruising service. This affair was brought about by an intimate friend of my late dear mother, whose brother was appointed to the command of this vessel; and it was considered by those who felt interested in my welfare, as an important foundation-stone, upon which my nautical career would at a future day be established. The change, however specious in appearance at the time, was to me but as an introduction to a school, which is not often equalled, and but seldom surpassed, for vice and immorality. After the necessary equipments were provided, I took leave of my youngest sister, who was still at Putney at school, and of some of those with whom we were the most intimately acquainted, and joined the ship at Plymouth. The situation I had now obtained, was for some time much less comfortable than the one in which I had been engaged. Before, I had been placed amongst only a few strangers, but now the crew altogether consisted of many; and being an entire stranger to naval etiquette, my situation was dull and mortifying; particularly as from my not having completed my fourteenth year, all those of the officers with whom I could use freedom were several years older than myself. It was not long before we left the harbour, and sailed for the Isle of Man station. This was a stormy and dangerous passage, in which, through Divine mercy, we were favoured to witness a marvellous preservation from shipwreck,—the dawn of day discovering to us just in time the small island of Grasholm; towards which the vessel was drifting in a direct course, and already within a short distance of the breakers. We were lying to at the time under two or three storm sails; but there happily being room to wear clear of the rocky crags, the danger was soon left behind. After remaining in these parts about fourteen months, visiting alternately the coasts of Scotland, Ireland, and Wales, and putting into a variety of harbours for provisions and water, as occasion required, we reached Liverpool in a leaky condition. Here we expected to be repaired; but instead of being permitted to go into the dock for that purpose, instructions were received from the Admiralty to procure an extra pump and proceed immediately to Plymouth; this, although

attended with much risk, was at last accomplished in safety.

Whilst in this harbour, interest was made on my behalf with an admiral of considerable estate and influence in the neighbourhood, with whom in former days some of our family had been personally acquainted. Through this medium, I was in a short time received on board a ship of the line, then bearing the flag of a rear-admiral. This advance, under such patronage, was considered to hold out a promising aspect; but whilst it seemed to pave the way to promotion, it opened at once a door to an extensive range of acquaintance with officers on board, whose circumstances in life enabled them to deviate with less difficulty than myself from the path of virtue; whose example I endeavoured to follow, until nothing but the want of means prevented my going still greater lengths than the worst of them. Whilst in this ship, when about sixteen years of age, having been unwell, and probably led to reflect a little on that account, I was made sensible of a Divine visitation being extended to me: disclosing with indubitable clearness the vanity and emptiness of every earthly station, tarnishing the pride and glory of this perishing world in my sight; and which, though little understood and less regarded at the moment, has since, at different periods of my chequered life, been brought to my remembrance, by Him "who declareth unto man his thoughts,—who maketh the morning darkness, and treadeth upon the high places of the earth,—the Lord, the Lord of hosts is his name." When this occurred, although then entered into the bond of iniquity, I had not launched so fully into its dreadful abyss, as was afterwards most lamentably the case; and from what I have since witnessed in unutterable mercy, of the strength and power of redeeming love, a belief is induced, that if this warning voice, then sounding in the secret of my sinful heart,—"Behold I stand at the door, and knock," had been hearkened unto, and waited upon, my footsteps, even mine, would have been conducted from the horrible pit to which they were fast verging.

I continued nearly six years in the navy: but were all the changes from ship to ship enumerated which took place during that time, and the great variety of incidents

which befel me, they would swell this narrative far beyond the limits intended: whilst however I am desirous of avoiding the error of gratifying self, or merely amusing others, I beg to be preserved from a greater,—in omitting any thing tending in the slightest degree to make known the aboundings of that wondrous goodness and mercy, which followed me all along through an unparalleled course of presumptuous and unrestrained liberty. It may therefore suffice for me to say, that notwithstanding the many and great dangers I was exposed to, and the hardships and suffering I had to endure, through all which I was preserved and sustained in a manner at this day inconceivable to myself; yet none of these things were sufficient to soften the rocky heart, or bring me to a sense of my lost condition: for whether on board or on shore, in harbour or at sea, or in whatever country, if I could meet with associates prone like myself to evil, I was always ready to hasten with them to it, either in word or in deed.

An expected war with a foreign power had occasioned an unusually large fleet to collect at Spithead; but after a time, the differences being adjusted, the ships were dispersed to their respective posts, and that to which I belonged was paid off. She was commissioned again the next day as a guard-ship, and I have no doubt that I might have resumed my station as one of her mates, had I made application: for with all my private failings as a poor sinful creature, my public character had not suffered in any of the ships in which I had served, but rather the contrary; for my pride and presumption had often prompted me in moments of extreme danger, in a daring manner to take the most hazardous post, even when duty did not require it, or warrant the risk. But instead of applying to be reinstated in my former berth, I remained on shore in pursuit of sinful gratifications; and going up to London, so much time elapsed before my return, that I never afterwards attempted to procure a situation in the ship I had left, or in any other. In this way I left the service altogether; and would I could say, that I left the service of sin at the same time: but I had not then filled up to the brim the measure of iniquity. For some time I remained without any employment; at length I concluded to go to Canterbury, without any other motive than what arose from examining the names of places to which stage

coaches ran from the inn at which I was then stopping; and as I knew nothing of that place, it is very probable that I thought no person there knew any thing of me.

I now found the disadvantage of not having been regularly brought up to a trade; and although desirous of getting into some employ, no matter what,—yet for want of this knowledge, I was alike unfit for all; and I could not bear the thought of making my forlorn situation known to those who had been the friends of my childhood, amongst whom there is no doubt but helpers would have been found. As my means became every day more scanty, I was at length reduced to complete poverty; and after many fruitless attempts to procure a livelihood, there seemed left to me no other alternative, than that of entering as a volunteer into the army: this plan was accordingly adopted without delay.

I must now digress awhile from the narrative, to mention a circumstance, which the facts just related have afresh awakened and impressed on my memory. Towards the latter part of the time of my being in the navy, it was suggested to my lost and bewildered mind, by the subtle destroyer of men, that nothing short of making away with myself, could extricate me from the difficulties by which I was surrounded, and shelter me from shame and disgrace; and the method of its accomplishment was at seasons hinted at. But,—blessed be the name of the Lord God of heaven and earth for ever! his invisible arm of merciful interposition preserved me from this dreadful snare; and in the greatness of his love and strength he hath at this distant period, put it into the heart of his unworthy creature to record his mighty acts, to his praise and to his glory with humble and reverent thankfulness. Greatly do I desire, that if this relation should ever fall into the hands of any poor sinners and servants of the cruel taskmaster, such as I then was,—that such may be hereby strengthened and encouraged to look unto the Lord their God for help, even though they may be plunged into the very gulf of despair: for "his compassions fail not,"—they are new every morning; his tender mercies are over all his works; and he will give power to the faint, and strength to them that have no might of their own, to resist this, and every other temptation of that wicked one, who was a liar from the beginning.

CHAPTER II.

THE AUTHOR GOES TO PLYMOUTH, THENCE WITH HIS REGIMENT TO IRELAND—KILKENNY—DUBLIN—HARASSING SERVICE — PERSONAL DANGER — RECRUITS — LIVERPOOL — BRISTOL — SOUTHAMPTON — EMBARKS THENCE WITH TROOPS FOR THE CAMPAIGN IN HOLLAND.

It was a little remarkable, that, after all the pains I had taken to screen my fallen situation from the knowledge of those who had been acquainted with me, the regiment in which I had engaged, proved to be at that very time on duty at Plymouth, a place where, above all others, I had the greatest number of acquaintances; but I was so completely metamorphosed in appearance, that I was never in one instance found out by any whom I had formerly known, even when brought into close contact with them. This change of condition, however, wrought in me no change of life. My conduct for a time was almost entitled to the appellation of reformed, but this period was short indeed; for, having speedily acquired a knowledge of all that was required of me in the way of duty, I began to rise above the impressions made by difficulties gone by, and again to look forward to a farther participation in the delusive and miserable pleasures of this transitory and wicked world.

In less than a year we were ordered to Ireland; and three transports having arrived for us in Catwater, a short time completed the embarkation: we sailed for the Cove of Cork, reaching it in safety after a fine passage. While at sea, it was soon discovered, that I was no stranger to the management of a vessel; and though I concealed my having served several years in a superior station, yet I felt so much at home, that I voluntarily performed the duty of a sailor during my stay on board, not a little proud of my qualifications. It is most probable that pride and self-conceit were the only motives that prompted these endeavours to be useful; few,

indeed, of our actions, however specious in appearance, are wholly divested of *self* in some shape or other, when examined in the pure mirror of truth; such is the depravity of the human heart in its natural state.

Having frequently been sheltered before by the coves, bays, and harbours of Ireland, and frequently been on shore in different places, I was tolerably well acquainted with the character and customs of the people; whose hospitality to strangers has long been acknowledged by all who have visited their shores: and although now unable to move in the same sphere as formerly, I still found opportunities to indulge the evil propensities of fallen nature. But as the miserable inhabitants in some of the provinces were rapidly ripening for rebellion, our time was much occupied by hard and laborious service.

After landing at the Passage of Cork, we proceeded to that city, but shortly marched forward to Kilkenny. This place was a station that afforded more quiet and comparative ease, than any which afterwards fell to my lot, whilst engaged in the regular service; but our stay here was of short duration, before entering upon the arduous duty of Dublin garrison. The agitated state of public affairs at that period, greatly augmented our fatigue; and it frequently happened that we were on duty every other night, and this in the winter season.

Discontent increasing and disturbances breaking out in the interior of the country, small detachments of troops were dispatched from Dublin, to strengthen the authority of magistrates in their endeavours to maintain public tranquillity, and to afford protection to the peaceable inhabitants from the nightly depredations of numerous gangs of misled and intoxicated desperadoes, to which they and their property were constantly exposed under a variety of diabolical pretences. It was my lot to be chosen with the first of the detached parties, to a share of this dangerous and harassing service; on which, such was at one time the emergency, that we were kept on the alert night after night, without any intermission for a week together, with only such intervals of rest as could be procured in the day time. Whilst on this expedition, on a particular enterprise with a constable, I was to all appearance reduced to the necessity of taking the life of another to

save my own. The constable perceiving the danger, had left me alone; when I was suddenly attacked by a poor infuriated creature, in a state little short of perfect madness from continued intoxication, supported by several others, but in a less outrageous condition. I kept him at bay for some time; but at last he got so near, that it became every moment more difficult to avoid being reached by the violent strokes he made with some kind of weapon, I think of iron, which were repeatedly received by the firelock in my hands, then loaded with ball. In this situation, there seemed left to me no other than the dreadful alternative of shooting him to save myself. I called in vain in the language of appeal to the other people to interfere: they stood by, as if to see how matters were likely to terminate, before they began to act or take a part of any consequence either way; which they nearly carried too far: but when they saw me actually preparing to shoot the man, they hastily cried out,—'spare life! spare life!'—which I only wanted their help to enable me to accomplish. They then seized him, and in the midst of the struggle and confusion which took place amongst themselves, my escape was happily effected. I cannot suppose at that time, when I wanted only the help of other men to enable me to spare life, that the principal motive was other than that of self-preservation,—accompanied by fear of the immediate consequences that would inevitably have followed, and must have resulted in my own destruction. Therefore it is greatly to be feared (although that heart must be callous indeed, which in all such cases does not recoil from the horrid act,) that it was not love to my fellow-creature, which prompted the desire in me to spare his life. Let none mistake it as such. I have frequently thought of this circumstance since it occurred, I hope with humble thankfulness to the great Preserver of men; and now on committing it to record, as one of those many events, in which there was but one step between me and the grave, and whilst shuddering at the strong recollection of it,—my soul magnifies that unmerited and amazing mercy, afresh displayed and multiplied to my understanding in a two-fold view:—on the one hand, in withholding me from the crime of taking away the life of a

fellow-creature, like myself, "in the gall of bitterness;" and if I had escaped myself, thus sparing me, at this late hour, amidst the decay of nature, when the shadows of the evening are stretched out, and my feet drawing near the margin of the grave,—the appalling thought of a brother's blood, yet unwiped away:—on the other hand, in rescuing from immediate death two miserable sinners, wholly unprepared to die; for had I taken away the man's life, my own would doubtless have been forthwith sacrificed to the revenge of his enraged companions. Thus as my history rolls on, the enormous load of debt which I already owe unto my Lord still accumulates; and verily it can never be liquidated, but in that infinite and wondrous mercy, which delighteth to forgive every repenting sinner, who in the depths of humility and abasedness of self, has indeed "nothing to pay" withal.

On the arrival of some fresh detachments from the garrison, I learned that a vacancy had occurred during our absence on this service, and that the blank was filled up by the promotion of myself. Although this circumstance was of trifling import, yet it served to flatter and feed pride, and eventually to open the way again for a renewal of those evil habits, from which for a time I had been sheltered. As each body of troops was relieved from this extra fatigue at a given time, our turn came in regular course at the expiration of a few weeks, when we again returned to Dublin. Not long after this, inquiry was made for a person qualified to assist in the writing department of the commander-in-chief, under his own personal inspection: I never knew exactly how it was brought about, but in the course of a few days, it was decided in my favour; and I immediately entered upon this new and altogether unexpected employment. Being now on most days at liberty at an early hour, and freed from restraint and control, and from that incessant round of duties, which had before fully occupied my time and attention, and compelled in a degree to orderly conduct, together with having it more in my power by possessing greater means, —I soon began to take my swing in every inordinate gratification to which I was naturally propense, and in which an extensive metropolis furnished ample opportunity to indulge; thus adding sin to sin, and making farther

woful work for repentance. And although at times, in the midst of these evil practices I was made sensible of convicting reproofs, sufficient to have awakened any one but myself; yet they only seemed to deter me for a short interval from persisting in them, or until another opportunity offered;—such was their dominion over me. This course was however at last stopped, by my attendance being no longer necessary at the writing department, together with the sudden march of the regiment to Granard; but not before my health had begun to suffer from my folly.

Our stay was not long at this place; for the French revolution, which had occurred about two years before, now began to occasion more frequent movements and changes amongst the military. I was engaged in some hazardous enterprises whilst lying here; and although the town was small, and our time in it short, yet there were sufficient temptations to be found for my unwary feet to fall into. From this place, a part of the regiment, consisting of two hundred picked men and a suitable number of officers, was drafted to serve in an expedition then preparing to act in the West Indies. The same quota was selected from every regiment in Ireland, then seventeen in number,—and possibly from every regiment in England also. From all the information that I could ever obtain, the greatest part, if not the whole of these poor devoted fellows, then declared to be the flower of the British army, fell victims to the climate and the war. I mention this lamentable fact, although foreign to my subject, to perpetuate all in my power, the ravages of this horrid and desolating scourge of the human race. At the same time, under a deep sense of my then sinful and still sinning condition, my mind is struck with admiration, that I was not included in the above-mentioned draft, to which I was no less liable than others; were it only as a punishment which I so justly merited, for my unprecedented rebellion against a long-suffering and all-gracious Lord God.

Our next remove was to Galway; where after some weeks I was again promoted, from what cause I do not now remember; but, as had been the case in the navy, so, now, however profligate my conduct in the general,

I still kept up a fair name, by being ready for all the duties that devolved upon me.

By this time several new regiments were raising by field-officers, in expectation of promotion when the number of each was completed, according to the then existing proposals of the government: at whose expense, and under whose particular patronage these measures were undertaken, for the purpose of more vigorously prosecuting the continental war. In order to expedite the formation of these new corps, application was made to the commanding officers of old established regiments, for persons competent to assist in their equipment and discipline, where such could be recommended. For one of these regiments, intended to be formed in Dublin of recruits raised from the different provinces, two others with myself were selected, and accordingly dispatched immediately to commence the necessary operations in that city. After leaving Granard, and to the time of my again reaching Dublin, perhaps my course of life, from one or other cause, might not be quite so dissipated as for some time previous. But this could only be attributed to an accumulation of duty, and not to any change wrought in myself: for alas! the old evil root still remained in unabated strength, though dormant; which in a while did not fail to shoot forth, and produce those works of unmortified flesh, which had so long and so often been manifested in my conduct and conversation, and were now not likely to be less frequent, from my being again promoted shortly after joining this new regiment. Some progress was made in organizing the new troops, as the different small detachments arrived in the course of the winter from the interior of the country; and by the time the spring fairly opened, the whole number stipulated was raised and accepted. Such was the urgency of affairs just then, that, whilst in a raw and incomplete state of discipline, almost beyond conception, from the wildness of character of the class of people, of which the principal part of the regiment was composed, immediate embarkation was ordered, and transports were actually in waiting to receive it. In two days, the whole were on board of three ships, which sailed with the first tide for Bristol. When the time for sending off these

newly raised troops was fully come, the utmost dispatch was necessary; for it was very evident, that had time been allowed for the information to spread to any material extent, the embarkation could scarcely have been effected without bloodshed. As it was, though the preparations commenced soon after three o'clock, in the morning, the concourse of people assembled together was immense, to behold their unfortunate countrymen in every relation of fathers, husbands, brothers, and sons, forced away from their native shores,—I may say forced away, for it was necessary to assemble a strong military force from the garrison to ensure the embarkation, which after all was not effected without some difficulty. From my own personal knowledge of the fate of many of these poor fellows, and of the destination of those remaining after I left them, I think it is possible but scarcely probable, that any of them ever returned to their families, friends, or country any more; as will subsequently appear, if this narrative be proceeded with.

We were favoured with a fine passage to the Severn, and landed about six miles below Bristol; in which city we remained one night, and then marched forward to an encampment, where several other regiments were previously assembled, at Netley Abbey, not many miles from Southampton. From the undisciplined condition, with but small exception, of the officers and men who composed our regiment, it was only reasonable to suppose it had now reached its destination for the present; but after a few weeks training, it was numbered with the line. We received a set of new colours, and embarked on Southampton river, with the other regiments which formed the camp at Netley Abbey, to join the British army then on the Continent, under the command of the Duke of York. We dropped down to Spithead the next morning, and the same afternoon, Earl Moira, the commander-in-chief, having joined the expedition, we sailed, thirty-seven ships in company, under proper convoy to the coast of Flanders.

The weather being thick, with light airs of wind, our passage, though fine, was rather tedious, before reaching an anchorage off the port of Ostend. From circumstances of an unfavourable cast, unknown to us at the time, it

was judged most prudent for the expedition to be free from every incumbrance likely to retard or impede its movements through the Netherlands; the success and safety of the enterprise wholly depending upon its ability to evade and elude, by the rapidity of its movements, in forced marches by night, the greatly disproportionate strength of the enemy. The number of troops then under Earl Moira, was little more than 7,000; whilst the French force, through which we had to pass, was estimated at 80,000, and they were at the time so posted, as seemed to prohibit our junction with the Duke's army. It was therefore concluded, that every article of baggage and stores belonging either to officers or soldiers, beyond what they could themselves carry, should be left on board the ships. At an early hour of the morning after our arrival in the roads off the town of Ostend, every officer and soldier was furnished with a blanket, and an allowance of three days' provisions and water from the stores of the transports; it being very uncertain whether any supplies could be obtained for some days to come. Thus provided, the troops were disembarked under cover of two large floating batteries, prepared for the occasion, to prevent any attempt to frustrate their descent. As the boats employed had many times to pass to and fro, between the ships and the shore, before the whole were conveyed, it was near night when the landing was fully accomplished. To expedite the landing, a large float was made use of, to assist in crossing a narrow space of water connected with the harbour; so that the troops were enabled to land at more than one point at a time, and then unite. It was well for those who had nothing to do with this ill-adapted float; for in the hurry, it became overladen with soldiers, and was quickly overturned, causing the loss of many men, who, from their being encumbered with arms, baggage, and provisions, were incapable of making much effort to save themselves; this weight being strongly attached to their bodies, they sank before they could extricate themselves from it. I landed on the main shore of the harbour, and thus providentially escaped with only seeing the float then loading, just before the accident happened.

I do not know how it fared with others, but it is

scarcely probable, all circumstances considered, that there could be any material superiority in the accommodation of one more than another. On the morning that we landed, I might doubtless have been supplied with a blanket, in common with others; but as I occupied a station, in which little rest could be expected, even when others slept, and supposing that I should be able to borrow from some of the others when they could not be used by themselves, this opportunity was lost; but I afterwards regretted the non-acceptance of it. From the day we left the transports, several weeks elapsed before I got to sleep under the cover of a tent; as these, with the rest of the luggage and stores, were left on board the ships to be conveyed to Helvoetsluys, as a place more secure from the French than Ostend. We remained upon the sand hills near Ostend three days and nights after landing, and then commenced a march which could scarcely be equalled for fatigue and hardship; as we were wholly unprovided with food and every common necessary, with which the generality of troops are furnished at the opening of a campaign.

It would be no very difficult task for me at this day to enter into minute detail of particular circumstances, were it consistent with the declared object before me, in setting about to pen this memoir; for although so many years have rolled away since these miserable scenes were actually shared in and witnessed,—yet such are the strong impressions stamped on my memory by the sufferings endured, and the manifold deliverances which followed, that while endeavouring to insert such incidents only as are needful to preserve the chain of history, in sufficient links of connection to enable me to proceed with correctness,—transactions that have long been forgotten, though they once formed a prominent feature in the toils of the day, are recalled from oblivion in a remarkable manner. I must however forbear to intrude them here, and proceed with saying, that on leaving the neighbourhood of Ostend, we passed through Bruges, and penetrated into the country by way of Ghent. The first halting place of the army, in the evening of the same day that it left the coast, was called the "Pigeon's Nest;" but it did not prove a very quiet one,—for by two o'clock in the morn-

ing, the advance of the enemy was announced by the firing of the picquets, by which we were surrounded. Whether this attack was intended to alarm only, or to endeavour to take us by surprise, I never understood; if the latter, it certainly failed, for the troops were literally sleeping on their arms, covered with their blankets, so that in a few minutes, a line was formed, with the commander-in-chief present. It was however considered prudent to remain there no longer, and in half an hour this post was abandoned, and the march continued until noon the next day, when a stoppage occurred, from the French having occupied a bridge over which we had to pass. Notwithstanding the men were almost ready to faint for want of food, having scarcely tasted any thing for twenty-four hours; yet on its being proclaimed through the line that volunteers were wanted to force the passage over the bridge, a sufficient number immediately offered, apparently glad of such an opportunity. After three hours' detention, the obstruction was removed, I am inclined to think by its being found that the force advancing against it was much too strong for that by which the bridge was occupied. The army then moved forward until midnight, although its course was much impeded by a tremendous storm of thunder, lightning, and heavy rain, which commenced at nine, P.M., and continued several hours. I do not see how I could have sufficiently exalted the name of my God, and his gracious dealings with a poor benighted and rebellious creature, without mentioning the two facts just related; inasmuch as they magnify in my view, his long-suffering and protection, to one who was utterly insensible of his loving-kindness, and who then knew Him not: and I trust I shall not be permitted to overlook or pass by any thing that will shew forth his praise, and tend to his glory; or be prevented from acknowledging his power and his might; who hath according to his mercy, so many times delivered me out of every distress. For, notwithstanding the constant exposure to every shower of rainthat fell, without covering over my head, and with no couch but the earth, and that at times soaked with wet; whilst harassed with fatiguing marches night after night, and with little rest by day; amidst hunger and thirst, being often short of food for days together,

and occasionally no water to be had, without digging a well to procure it, to avoid the unwholesome waters of the stagnant pools ;—and although for several weeks together my clothes were never taken off, but to renew a shirt, and my shoes but seldom off my weary feet ;—yet through all, my health was not materially affected, till near the approach of winter. But in the above description, not one half has been told of that marvellous mercy which was still extended for my preservation, when many fell by the sword, or were taken captives by the enemy,—when thousands were swept off by pestilence,—and whilst unhurt myself, I saw the wounds of others bleed. Once whilst gone to Helvoetsluys in search of some baggage, I entirely missed a contest, in which our regiment was deprived of twenty-eight men ; and, when at last overwhelmed with sickness and distress, the same Divine and compassionate arm of everlasting love and strength, was still underneath to bear up my helpless head, and in his own time to rescue me from the very jaws of death, to celebrate his praise, and to declare in humble thankfulness and gratitude of soul, "his wonderful works to the children of men."

CHAPTER III.

NIMEGUEN — MANY DANGERS — ATTACKED BY FEVER— HOSPITAL TREATMENT, HEAVY MORTALITY AMONG THE SICK—DISASTERS OF THE BRITISH ARMY—RETREAT TO BREMEN—RETURNS TO ENGLAND.

As the winter approached, the health of the troops began to fail to an alarming and awful extent, from exposure to cold rains which fell almost daily; and yet we were compelled to keep the field, being constantly on the retreat before the greatly superior force of the enemy. As we drew near the walls of Nimeguen, the British forces made a stand, probably to afford time for preparing a floating bridge across the Waal, to secure our retreat behind that river. At the same time, the French used every effort in their power to intercept our retreat, by endeavouring to get between us and Nimeguen, which from the strength of its fortifications was capable of affording a cover for several days, or until our army had passed in safety over the bridge.

The last two or three days the contest between the two armies became more severe, by the continual arrival of fresh divisions of the French at this point: on the last day the cannon scarcely ceased to roar from sunrise to sunset. The regiment to which I belonged was ordered on the reserve with three others; two of which were British, and the third Hanoverian. As the cannonade increased, the first regiment of reserve was called upon, in two hours after the second was summoned, and by eleven o'clock in the forenoon, the third. The direction from which the sound of the conflict issued, left no doubt that it was rapidly approaching the ground on which we stood; and although, as the last reserve, we had not been ordered to march, yet our tents were struck, and every thing prepared to move on the first alarm.* I

* Our expedition landed without any tents, but a supply was furnished about six weeks afterwards, I think, whilst we were encamped on the plains of Breda.

had been going about in the wet for several days previous, without the practicability of obtaining dry clothes; and this day being colder and more rainy than usual, with the increased exertion necessary on account of the threatening aspect of things close upon us, might hasten an illness, the foundation of which had already been deeply laid, and which began with shivering fits, just in the interval of waiting for the expected courier to call us to the field of slaughter. About three o'clock in the afternoon, a light dragoon arrived with a despatch, but instead of its hastening us to the scene of action, it proved to be an order for us to join the rear of another regiment then retreating towards Nimeguen. Our army, after sustaining for many hours with great loss the unequal combat, was at length compelled to retire. Thus were we preserved when on the very brink of danger, in a manner as unlooked for as unmerited, from sharing in the disasters of a day, in which much human life was wasted, and which entailed great suffering and distress on many who survived it. After we had moved forward two or three miles, the coldness and shivering I had previously felt were succeeded by violent heat and fever, and my throat seemed almost closed up. For several days I had found swallowing very painful and difficult, from its extreme soreness,—but had taken little notice of it. In this condition I was still able to keep up with the body of the regiment; but after entering the gates of Nimeguen, from the frequent stoppages which took place in the miry streets of the city, owing to accidents constantly occurring with the floating bridge, occasioned by the fire of the French upon it,—I became more and more affected with something of the cramp kind, which nearly prevented my standing upright. As the night drew on, it became colder, and my pain increased, but I kept going on as well as I could; at length we came in sight of the bridge, when we were again stopped for some time. I was near the colours of the regiment, and an officer who carried one of them, made some remarks to me about the bridge; but feeling myself much worse, I told him I should never go over that bridge. He endeavoured to cheer me up, saying, that I should go over that and many more; but however, my assertion proved correct, for before the line

again moved forward, I had left it, and was leaning against the wall of a house, no longer able to proceed from increased illness.

In this position I remained for some time; and after having painfully beheld the last of the rear of the regiment pass on and leave me behind, there seemed to be no hope left, as the only men in the world from whom I could expect a helping hand were all out of sight. But, although apparently forsaken by all, and left to perish unseen and unknown, yet that ever-compassionate Arm, which had so often been with me in extremity, was again stretched out, and did not long allow me to remain in this deplorable condition; but in adorable mercy, my gracious Lord was pleased to put into the hearts of some of the regiment who knew the real cause of my absence, to send two of the men back to endeavour to find me out, and render every assistance in their power. As I had not gone from the place where I stopped, they had no difficulty in finding me, although it was by that time nearly dark; but as I could not possibly go forward to the regiment, they at last concluded to leave me in the hands of a picquet of cavalry, which was left to cover the retreat of the army through the city. Having helped me to the place, and left me in charge of the picquet, they made off with all haste to overtake their companions. Here the wife of a soldier gave me some ground pepper mixed with heated spirits; and although, from the state of my throat, I could scarcely swallow the fiery mixture, yet it proved useful, considerably relieving the pain in my stomach, and renewing the general warmth. As it was expected that the enemy would attack the batteries in the night, which however was not the case, although they kept up a heavy firing, I was helped into a loft to be out of the way; here I remained until the morning, and was then assisted on board of a galliot, provided for the reception of those, who, like myself, were disabled by sickness or other causes. The hold of this vessel was filled with as many people as could lie close to each other: they were in the various stages of a violent epidemic disorder, and from the heat occasioned by so many being crowded together, the air was very oppressive, and difficult to breathe. Two other galliots of a similar des-

cription, proceeded in company with us up the river, in hopes of getting round a neck of land, at which the Waal and the Rhine unite. But although considerable exertions were made by the sailors, aided by such of the sick as were at all able to stand, of whom I made one, they had not succeeded in warping round the point, when a party of French hussars made their appearance on the shore. It was fully expected they would endeavour to prevent our escape, by opening a fire with cannon; but before they had time to bring any near enough to bear on us, we had got fairly into the current of the Rhine, and were soon beyond their reach. Being much exhausted I went below, but soon became very ill from the closeness of the place. Whilst under this and other distressing circumstances, both of body and mind, one of our companions who lay next but one to me, was removed by death from all his troubles; and although none of us could expect at the time, but that a similar fate would in all probability soon overtake us,—yet, in my own case at least, notwithstanding I was worn down with fatigue and sickness, and without a glimpse of any thing to make life any longer desirable, except the fear of death,—still nature could not but feel appalled, when the dead body of a fellow sufferer was dragged past, to be taken on to the deck of the vessel. As the evening came on, I became much worse; and although the night was cold and frosty, I thought it better to get on deck, where I could breathe more freely, rather than remain any longer below; accordingly three or four of the people helped me up, for I was now so faint for want of support, that I had scarcely any strength left. I remained on deck all night and got a little sleep; in the morning, the cold compelled me again to go below, but I felt a little refreshed, and better able to bear the closeness of the place, keeping near the hatchway, where there was a greater circulation of air. In two days more we arrived at Rhenin, a town close to the bank of the Rhine, where an old monastery was fitted up as an hospital for the British sick.

Sometime after reaching this place, a person came on board the galliot to see if there were any amongst the newly arrived sick, with whom he was acquainted. He came down below, and after looking round was about

going away, when I made what effort I could for some one to stop him. He had looked at me amongst the rest, but I was so much reduced and altered in appearance that he had not recognised me, but passed by, although he had once known me very well. When brought back, he soon recollected me, and feelingly expressed great regret at finding his old acquaintance in such a weak condition. He had been a patient in this hospital himself, and when restored to health again, being found an active and useful person, he was retained as a ward-master for the benefit of others. Having had the fever, he was tolerably well acquainted with the best mode of treating it; and soon after finding me, he administered a small quantity of strong cordial, which had the desired effect for a short time, by enabling me to get on shore. With his assistance I was conveyed to the hospital, where he soon procured one of the surgeons to examine me, and being very desirous to render every assistance in his power, he suggested to him the propriety of giving some particular medicine, which had often proved useful in bad cases; to which the surgeon replied, not aware that I heard all that was passing between them, 'he will not want any thing long.' By this it was evident that mine was considered a hopeless case; which could not be wondered at, the disorder having been so fatal, that those who had recovered were said not to average more than one in fifty; and as my attack had been so long neglected, the conclusion was reasonable, although it did not prove correct. In a few days I was so much recruited as to be able to walk about the town: but it was a distinguishing characteristic of this complaint, that having once had it, was no security whatever against a second attack,—and that those who got well through it the first, or perhaps the second time, were frequently its victims on the third encounter. I found by experience that this report was not without foundation, for instead of being fully restored to health again, as for the first few days seemed probable, the disorder returned a second time, and with much more violent symptoms. As a state of high delirium soon came on, I was but a short time sensible of what transpired, after the application of a large blister; except the workings of a terrified imagination,

some of the impressions of which, even at this distance of time, are not wholly obliterated from my memory,—so deeply and strongly were they engraven. From the treatment which followed when no longer delirious, the disorder must have been of the nature of typhus,—as at one time a liberal allowance per day, of equal parts of brandy and port wine was given me, as hot as could well be taken. How long this continued I am not aware, but I was confined to my bed for such a length of time, as to be wholly unable to move in any direction from extreme weakness; and so generally was this the case in this disorder, that a man was appointed in every ward to go round occasionally, to turn from one side to the other, such of the patients as were incapable of turning themselves.

I was at length brought so near the brink of the grave, that, to all appearance, no alteration for the better could be expected. I am not aware that I had even a wish to live; but my mind was so reconciled to the prospect of death, which then seemed near and inevitable that I had given my watch into the hands of the person who had visited the galliot, with a request, that he would inform my family where I had ended my days. Indeed, when some expectation of recovery was at last held out, I could not help looking forward with a feeling of regret, to the probability of having again to encounter the series of hardships and distress, to which I should unavoidably be subjected. As I regained a little strength, I began to take notice of the state of things around me; and having daily heard a noise like that of a carpenter's shop, I now ascertained the cause to be the nailing up of the coffins, each day, of those who had died in the last twenty-four hours; and I found that the dead-house, or place where the dead were deposited previously to interment, when taken out of the wards, being opposite the windows of the room I was in, afforded full opportunity for my beholding the striking and affecting scene, which could not fail to excite feelings of horror and dismay, in one so much enervated by the very disease, which I now witnessed to be so fatal to others. The average number of deaths was twenty-seven in a day and night; but sometimes the number so increased, that the Dutch could not furnish coffins sufficient for the demand of the day; and then the

method of sewing up the bodies in the bedding they had occupied, was resorted to. Several waggon loads of bodies were carried off every afternoon for interment.*

When able to walk about the room with the assistance of my stick, it happened that the regiment to which I belonged, was quartered in a village about two miles from the bank of the Rhine, opposite to that on which the hospital stood. Some of the officers came over to ascertain for themselves, whether any of the missing from their regiment were amongst the sick; at length they came into the ward where I was, and the second in command, with whom I was well acquainted, being with them, I requested his help to get me liberated from the hospital,—telling him, that I had no chance of becoming thoroughly well whilst in it, and of the danger to which I was constantly exposed of having another relapse. He immediately applied to some of the medical staff on duty, and conducted them to me through the wards; but it ended in his informing me, that the doctors could not suffer my going out until farther recovered, as I was quite unfit for exposure. Not knowing how long I might be detained, I was now determined to make my escape on the first opportunity; and the next day being remarkably fine, I walked out two or three times into the air, though with much difficulty. The following morning I met with a person belonging to the regiment, who was going to join it again the same afternoon; and as we were well acquainted, I did not hesitate to disclose my intention of quitting the hospital in a clandestine manner, and resolved to accompany him, if possible.

I returned again to the hospital as at other times; and in the afternoon, as if going to take another walk, I proceeded to the river side; and the ferry boat being just ready for setting off, I got into it undiscovered, and passed the Rhine, arriving at the village of Kesterne soon after dark the same evening, without taking cold, although the river was thickly frozen over, and a passage cut through the ice, to allow the ferry boat to cross back-

* The accounts of the deplorable treatment of the sick, and of the disasters of the British army in their retreat to Bremen, as given in the Annual Register, of 1795, more than confirm the description of the author of this biographical sketch.

wards and forwards. From this time I rapidly gathered strength, and at the end of a week was so much recruited, as to venture back to the hospital to see how those fared, whom I had left behind; at the same time, it is very probable, to show how I had fared myself; without any fear of being detained, as I was evidently much stronger than when under their roof. To lessen the fatigue, I procured a horse for the excursion, and proceeded accordingly towards the river side. The risk I then ran, however unwarrantable, afforded me another opportunity of seeing the effect of a renewed attack of this dreadful disorder, upon a Scotch sergeant of the Highland watch, who had had the fever twice, and both times recovered from it. He was a very stout man, and when I left the hospital, appeared in perfect health and strength. In the interval of my absence, he had been seized with it a third time, and when I saw him, had nearly finished his course; he was speechless, and survived but a short time afterwards: I think this last time, he was ill only three days. Although I escaped any further infection, yet I was punished for my temerity before getting back again to Kesterne. After crossing the river in the boat, I had to pass through a small sheet of shallow water which had been frozen, but was then broken up by the loaded waggons that passed that way. On getting up to it, I found it in a half frozen state, the old ice not being sufficiently strongly united again to bear the horse, which refused to pass it; and on my urging him forward, he lay down with me in the water. It was with difficulty that I could extricate myself from him, and it is doubtful whether I should have succeeded, without the assistance of another person then at hand. In this wet condition I had a long distance to go, in a keen frosty night, in an open waggon, which the day following threatened a renewal of my illness; but by the timely use of medicines, I was favoured, not according to my desert, to escape without any serious indisposition.

In looking back at the marvellous manner in which I was sustained through all this conflict, and again restored as one brought back from the dead, I cannot avoid adverting to that period of my illness, when my mind felt so reconciled to the prospect of death, as before-mentioned;

and I now fully believe, from what I have since been mercifully favoured to experience, that so far from being in any degree prepared for such an awful event, a deceptive feeling must have been super-induced by the state of torpor and insensibility in which I then was, and which totally benumbed any better feelings and desires as to the future. To this may be added a predominating fear, of having to endure more of those sufferings, of which I had had no small share; which, the probability of being again restored to health seemed to banish every hope of escaping. Truly awful is the thought which this view of my then lost condition occasions, when I contemplate the woe and misery which must have been my eternal portion, if unutterable mercy and long-suffering had been withdrawn; and if the soul had been required of one, who had witnessed no repentance towards God the Judge of all, except what at times the fear of punishment had extorted; and who was a stranger to that saving faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, as the "Lamb of God that taketh away the sin of the world,"—without which, his precious blood would have been shed in vain for me:—I should thus have died in my sins, which unrepented of, would have followed after to judgment, in terrible array against my guilty soul—and yet when my end was apparently so near and inevitable, if such questions as are frequently proposed on the like occasions had been put to me, I have little doubt, but satisfactory answers would have been returned, as to my belief and hope in the essential truths of the gospel. But alas! this would have been from hearsay and traditional report, and not from any heartfelt saving knowledge of my own: for it is now plain to my understanding, that no man can have saving faith in Jesus Christ, who is unacquainted with, and does not walk in, the light of that Divine Spirit, which is so justly styled the Spirit of faith. It is through this alone, that the death and sufferings of Christ and his whole sacrifice for sin are availing, and truly applied to all those, who through faith lay hold of him, the true Light and Saviour of them that believe in his inward and spiritual appearance. These can say to others from sensible and blessed experience,—"Behold the Lamb of God, that taketh away the sin of the world:" they have received the

atonement by Him, and they reap the glorious fruit and benefit of his death and suffering for sin, by the sacrifice of himself, and of his resurrection and ascension; in that he ever liveth to make intercession for those, who are thus willing to come unto God by him. A man may yield an assent to all the great and solemn truths of Christianity,—the miraculous birth, holy life, cruel sufferings, ignominious death, and glorious resurrection and ascension of our blessed Redeemer;—he may believe in the abstract, in his inward and spiritual appearance in the hearts of mankind by his Holy Spirit; and yet he may fall short of the prize immortal,—unless he comes to witness the saving operation of the Holy Spirit in his own heart, and to know thereby, through faith in it, a purifying preparation for the kingdom of righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost. How can I sufficiently appreciate or declare the extent of the endless mercy, which suffered me not to perish in the midst of my sins, when so many were swept away by the same pestilential disorder?

After having mentioned the facts connected with my sickness and recovery, it seems only due, however feeble on my part the effort, to endeavour to commemorate such gracious dealings with humble gratitude and reverence; earnestly desiring that no motive whatever may be allowed to prevail with me for making the attempt, but that of promoting the glory and honour of the great name; that others may know, and fear, and believe in the all-sufficiency of that power, which hath "shewed me the path of life," and which alone can bless for their instruction what has been written, to press the necessity of contending for that saving faith "once delivered to the saints." Without it, all religious profession is a dream, a shadow, and a doubt; but with it, a glorious reality;—yea, "the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen,"—even the salvation of the soul, through Christ Jesus our Lord.

Whilst the severity of the winter greatly facilitated the operations of the French army, by enabling them to cross the frozen rivers without difficulty, and at almost any given point; so it contributed most effectually to harass the diminished numbers of the retreating British forces. It was the more felt from the scarcity of provisions, occa-

sioned by the inhabitants withholding from us every supply, in compliance with the intimidating threatenings of our victorious enemy; so that we frequently could not procure needful food even for money: whilst our opponents were supplied by the terrified householders at free cost. In some places, the inhabitants openly declared they were withholding their provisions for the supply of the French, aware of the cruel treatment they should witness at their hands, if unable to provide for them when they arrived; although they considered the British to be their friends, and were well treated by them.

Before I left the hospital at Rhenin, the French had approached so near, that the windows of the place frequently shook with the discharge of their artillery. Sometimes a waggon load of the wounded English would arrive at the hospital; when many, whose recovery would in a healthy situation have been speedy and almost certain, were carried off in a few days, by the infectious disorder which prevailed at the place; and from the disastrous issue of the campaign, however greatly this was to be deplored, it could not be avoided. We were not long permitted to remain at Kesterne, before being obliged to move towards the north of Holland; when the town of Rhenin with the hospital fell into the hands of the enemy. Soon after this event, the frost became more intense; and the Dutch could no longer make graves for the interment of the dead, but piled the coffins upon each other in great numbers, until a thaw took place.

Although my strength was considerably recruited before we left Kesterne, I was yet very unequal to the subsequent exposure, having to pass great part of the first night in the frost after leaving that place: but although I slept in a cart with a canvass tilt, I do not remember taking cold, or otherwise experiencing any injurious effects, either then or afterwards, beyond what might have been expected from great fatigue and improper diet, there being at that time little to be procured, but coarse black bread and ardent spirits. During this harassing march, at such an inclement season, many of the poor men lost parts of their toes, by imprudently sitting down in the frost for too long a time at once, and from not having their feet properly protected. I can well remember having been so wearied myself, as to come to the determination

to sit down, and risk the consequence,—although fully aware of the danger of falling asleep in such circumstances; but I was prompted by a secret impulse to resist the inclination, although nearly overcome with fatigue: then after moving about awhile longer, I have again begun to give way, but still struggled on. And when at last, it seemed as if human nature must give up, the thought of relations in England, as if I had had a home, would cross my mind, and stimulate me to try again in hope, until something has occurred, to bring relief, and shelter, and repose. Perhaps, if more food could have been procured, the propensity to sleep, which exposure to cold occasioned, would have been irresistible.

In this manner the winter wore away: but at length we got so far out of the reach of the French, as to allow a longer space of time for rest at each place we arrived at. The cold weather continued, until we reached the banks of the river Weser; when the retreating wreck of our army was unexpectedly cheered with a sight of the mast-heads of the British fleet lying off Bremen-leke, and waiting to convey it from the shores of the Continent; where it had witnessed so much distress, wasting, and destruction,—to be attributed much more to hardship, fatigue, and pestilence, than to the sword of the enemy, although greatly superior to us in strength, and possessing local advantages, of which we were wholly destitute.*

[*Here ends the Author's biographical sketch of his own life.*]

* It is stated in the *Annual Register*, that on the arrival of the British army at Bremen, the kind and cordial treatment they received from its inhabitants, was strongly contrasted with the hard-heartedness and hostility of the Dutch. 'It was something like a dream,' says a witness and partaker of their sufferings:—'we who had lately been so buffeted about, driven like vagabonds through frost and snow over the wilds of Holland; and who, in our greatest extremities when we asked for any thing to refresh ourselves, with the money in our hands, were answered only with a shrug of the shoulders "nothing for the Englishman!"—now to be seated in the most elegant apartments,—servants attending, ready to anticipate every wish,—beds of down to repose upon, without being disturbed in the morning by the thundering of cannon, or the usual alarms of war. They omitted nothing that could contribute to either our ease or pleasure: and a great number of the inhabitants accompanied us out of the town, and showed us every respect.'—*Annual Register*, 1795, pp. 55, 56.

CHAPTER IV.

SAILS WITH HIS REGIMENT TO THE WEST INDIES—REMARKABLE PRESERVATION — SERIOUS IMPRESSIONS — RETURNS TO ENGLAND — BECOMES CONVINCED OF FRIENDS' PRINCIPLES—RECEIVED INTO MEMBERSHIP IN 1797— SETTLES IN BUSINESS AND MARRIES — ACKNOWLEDGED A MINISTER IN 1816.

It is matter of much regret, that for many years subsequently to this period, no biographical memoranda appear to have been made by our dear father; and it is impossible at this distance of time, to supply any minute details of that important change in his sentiments and manner of life, which occurred shortly after the time to which the preceding narrative refers.

In the autumn of 1795, he obtained a commission in a regiment destined for the West Indies, and sailed with the expedition appointed to that service, under Sir Ralph Abercrombie, the fleet, including convoy and transports, consisting of about two hundred vessels, with nearly sixteen thousand troops on board. During this voyage he experienced some remarkable preservations to which he often afterwards referred, as the merciful interpositions of an overruling Providence; of these, one in particular appears to have arrested his attention. The vessel in which he was to have sailed was considered a remarkably fine one, but was much crowded. On the day before their leaving port, he proposed to one of his friends that they should go on board a collier lying along-side, being one of the hired transports. His fellow officers ridiculed the idea of preferring her to the noble ship in which they were; but he and his friend persisted in their intention, and, although straitened for time, succeeded in obtaining permission to transfer themselves according to their inclination. The second night after leaving port, a dreadful storm arose, in which the vessel they had quitted went down, with all on board. His heart had, in some measure,

been softened by previous chastisements, and this signal preservation produced in his mind indescribable emotions, under a sense of his own sinfulness and unfitness to appear before the tribunal of eternal justice, and of the mercy of God in sparing him awhile longer. A sincere repentance was commenced, and though the work was gradual, its fruits were soon apparent to those around him. After a stormy passage, they were once in sight of the West India Islands, but were driven back by a tremendous hurricane, in which several of the vessels foundered, and great numbers of the troops perished. A malignant fever also raged with fatal violence amongst the crews of the fleet; twenty-seven deaths occurring from this cause, in the ship in which Daniel Wheeler had embarked. During these awful circumstances, he had been selected to read the burial service of the Episcopal church over the bodies from time to time committed to the deep. He himself described his state of mind as one of intense anxiety, and he accepted this service hoping thereby in some degree to allay his own uneasiness: he performed the ceremony with solemnity, and many years afterwards remarked in reference to it, "the Lord knew the sincerity of my heart."

Bowed under the chastening hand of God, he sought in silent, fervent prayer, for the forgiveness of his sins for Christ's sake: he did not mention the state of his mind to any one, looking to the Lord alone for help. In reference to this period, he once remarked to a friend, on being questioned as to the means made use of in the Divine hand for effecting "a new birth unto righteousness" in his heart,—that he could not remember any outward means having been employed, unless, indeed, he might except a storm at sea, during which his mind was deeply affected; and when, under a feeling of his own lost condition by nature, he was mercifully enabled also to see the remedy, and the entire spirituality of the Gospel dispensation. In accordance with this feeling, he added,—'I was at this time convinced of Friends' principles, they being neither more nor less in my estimation, than pure Christianity. I remember when the Friends visited me on my application for membership, I told them I was convinced at sea; for I verily believed, in looking back, that

this had been the case: no human means were made use of;—it was altogether the immediate work of the Holy Spirit upon my heart.' Under these feelings, he became dissatisfied with the military profession, and resolved that, if permitted again to reach the shore, he would endeavour to lead a life of more circumspection, and which should tend to the glory of that Being, who had thus so mercifully visited him by His free grace. To this resolution he adhered:—he quitted the army in the early part of the year 1796.

For some time subsequently, to this event, he became an inmate in the family of his eldest sister, Barbara Hoyland; who was settled in the neighbourhood of Sheffield, in Yorkshire. She had married a member of the Society of Friends; and before the period of our father's joining them, had herself become convinced of their principles, and united herself to them. While residing with these relatives, his mind became renewedly impressed with the importance of Divine truth; and in the course of a few months, he was led openly to espouse those views of it, of which in after years, he was an unflinching advocate. The little meeting which he attended in the early part of his religious course, that of Handsworth Woodhouse, was usually held in silence; and he has been often known to refer to some of those solemn seasons, as times of peculiar instruction to his mind; in which the power of the Lord was sensibly felt, and his Truth revealed.

Being made a partaker of the great privilege enjoyed by those who are of the flock of Christ, in being enabled to distinguish between the voice of the good Shepherd and that of the stranger, he was earnestly desirous that obedience should keep pace with knowledge. He waited patiently upon the Lord for instruction in his various steppings; and being brought into a state of deep humility and prostration of spirit, he was made sensible, that the only path in which he could walk with safety, was that of self-denial. The change which he thought it right to make in his mode of dress, occasioned him much mental conflict. He once recounted to a friend in lively terms, the effort which this cost him; especially as in going to the meeting at Woodhouse, he generally met a

number of his former gay acquaintances, whom he crossed on the way to their place of worship, which he had himself previously been in the practice of attending. In this instance, it was hard to appear openly as a fool before men; he thought if his natural life might have been accepted as a substitute, he would gladly have laid it down:—but this was not the thing required. He diligently examined his heart, and believed he clearly saw his Master's will in the requisition; and that it was a discipline designed to bring him into a state of childlike obedience and dependence. In great distress he cried unto the Lord for help; and a passage of Scripture was powerfully applied to his mind,—"whosoever shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven: but whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven." His resolution was immediately taken:—the proposed change was made, and with his mind staid upon the Lord, set out to join his friends at meeting. His difficulties vanished,—sweet peace was his covering; and he was enabled experimentally to know the fulfilment of that declaration,—"greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world."

In the course of the year 1797, he was received into membership with the Society of Friends; and about the same time, he entered into business in Sheffield, in the seed trade. To this novel occupation he applied himself with that energy and assiduity, which characterised all his pursuits; and by the Divine blessing on his exertions, he soon succeeded in obtaining a business fully adequate to his very moderate desires. It was striking to some of those around him, to observe how readily he adapted himself to this total change of habits; and with what true content and cheerfulness he engaged in the drudgery and toil of a retail shop; the daily attendance in which, rested for some years exclusively on himself. He has been frequently heard to refer to this period of his life as one of great peace and comfort; and it appears to have been a time, in which his experience of the reality and power of Divine grace was deepened and enlarged. It was his daily practice, at those intervals when the attendance in his shop could be

dispensed with, if but for a few minutes at a time, to retire to a small apartment behind it, and in a prayerful spirit to explore the contents of the sacred volume: the light which shone upon many passages as he read, and the clear and strong views of religious truth which were then unfolded to his seeking soul, were such, as greatly to confirm his faith, and strengthen him to persevere in that strait and narrow path, into which his feet had been so mercifully turned. The study of many of the prophetical books of holy writ, was at this time the means of great comfort and encouragement to him; and the extensive and accurate knowledge of these parts of Scripture, for which he was afterwards conspicuous, was then chiefly acquired.

It was his uniform practice, from his first commencement in trade, to close his shop during the hours of worship on week days; and though this must have required a strong exercise of faith, at a time when his future support seemed to depend on his assiduity and exertion, he was never satisfied to neglect the worship of Almighty God, from the prospect of any outward advantage; and he has often expressed his belief, that a blessing had rested on this sacrifice of apparent interest to duty.

In the year 1800 he was united in marriage with Jane Brady. She was the daughter of Thomas and Rachel Brady, of Thorne; and her family had been connected with the Society of Friends almost from its rise. Being a person of peculiarly mild and amiable disposition, and fully devoted to the promotion of the views and wishes of her beloved husband, she proved a true help-meet for him; and their union was productive of much solid happiness to both. The great delicacy of her constitution, at times involved him in much solicitude, and seemed to give warning of an early termination of that domestic felicity, for the simple pleasures of which, few, perhaps, have ever possessed a keener relish than himself; but their union was mercifully protracted to the lengthened term of thirty-two years: through all the vicissitudes that were permitted to attend them, she evinced that deep and devoted attachment, which led her cheerfully to forego every other enjoyment, and cordially to unite in every step which he felt called upon to take, however great the

sacrifice it involved to her timid and retiring nature. She may be said to have possessed pre-eminently the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit; and notwithstanding the great mildness of her disposition, this was most happily tempered with a degree of firmness and moral courage, by which she was enabled calmly to meet those dangers and difficulties, before which a casual observer might have anticipated that her gentle spirit would have shrunk. As a wife and a mother, she has, perhaps, rarely been surpassed in disinterested affection, or in that constant and quiet consideration for those around her, which led her habitually to forget her own liability to fatigue, and cheerfully to put forth all her energies for the promotion of their comfort and welfare.

Although our dear father for a series of years subsequently to this period, was actively engaged in attention to business, he was watchful to prevent its engrossing more of his thoughts, than was consistent with higher duties. As a tradesman, he uniformly maintained an unblemished character for integrity and fair dealing; and his daily course of conduct was characterized by an habitual reference to a higher principle than that of mere interest; which insured for him, in no common degree, the respect and confidence of those with whom he was connected. At length his health began to give way, under the close attention which he had thought it needful to give to business; and about the year 1809, he removed to a short distance from Sheffield, for the advantages of greater quiet and more exercise in the open air. This proved a great relief to him; but some time afterwards, finding that his concerns in trade continued to increase upon him, and demanded a closer attention than he felt satisfied to give, he thought it his duty to relinquish a branch, and that a very profitable one, of the business which he had so successfully established. When his mind was once satisfied as to the path of duty in the case, he hesitated not to yield a full and unmurmuring compliance; although, with an increasing family dependent on his exertions, and the comparatively slender means which he possessed, this step must have required no small exercise of faith, and in the eyes of the wise and prudent around him, appeared a doubtful one. To him, however, it occasioned not one

moment's regret; and as he sought not great things for himself, so the gracious and bountiful Master whom he served, failed not amply to supply his every want, and to grant him at the same time that blessing which maketh truly rich, and whereunto no sorrow is added.

His attention was now a good deal turned to agricultural pursuits, in the management of which he took great delight: indeed, rural occupations and the simple pleasures of a country life, harmonized peculiarly with his pious feelings; and he loved to trace in the works and beauties of creation, the goodness and power of the great Creator. It appears to have been in reference to the step just adverted to, that the following note, addressed to some intimate friends, was written :—

'Forasmuch as it has pleased Almighty God, in his unutterable mercy and great condescension, in so eminent a manner to rescue my soul from the paths of vice and inevitable destruction, it seems incumbent upon me, in gratitude for such an unspeakable favour, to endeavour as much as in me lieth, to make all the return I am capable of; and as much as possible, through His Divine assistance, to dedicate the residue of my days to so gracious and merciful a Creator. I have at seasons for some years past, when it has pleased the Lord to humble me and make me sensible of my extreme unworthiness, been made willing to make a surrender of my life and my all to Him and His divine disposal; and the query has often been raised in my heart, what shall I render unto the Lord for all his benefits towards me? As I have from time to time endeavoured to dwell near, and abide in and under, the calming influence of His power, I have been led to believe, that something sooner or later would be required as a sacrifice on my part: and having for a considerable time past, been fully convinced not only from my own feelings, but from impressions made upon my mind by divers testimonies borne by exercised Friends, of the necessity of my separating myself as much as may be from the world and from the things of the world,—and having felt the force of our Lord's declaration on the Mount,—"Ye cannot serve God and mammon;"—I am sensible that the time is at hand, for me to put into practice what I believe to be an indispensable duty. After

having experienced such a wonderful and great deliverance from the power of sin and Satan, even as a "brand plucked out of the burning," it cannot be supposed that the remainder of my life ought to be spent in the hurry and bustle of business of any kind, and particularly in one which has so much increased as to require more attention than I am capable of paying to it, even if I had no claims of a higher and more important nature to attend to. I have frequently thought of late, that taking an active partner might answer the end intended, and be a means of removing part of the weight and care from off my shoulders, and at the same time set me at liberty to attend distant meetings, and take exercise in the open air which my health very much requires: but having given this a solid consideration, I have found that it would only be doing things by halves,—as great responsibility and anxiety would still rest upon me: it would seem also like making a reserve of the best of the sheep, and the best of the oxen, the bleating and lowing of which would be continually in my ears. I therefore fully believe, that it will be most conducive to my present peace, as well as future well-being, entirely to give up the trade I am at present engaged in, and retire with my family into a small compass. Not that I have acquired a sufficiency, without doing something for a livelihood;—far from it. I have still a prospect of maintaining my family comfortably, with care and industry, leaving the event to Him who knows the thoughts and intents of the heart: and though my income will be smaller than it is at present, my expenses will be smaller in proportion. It will no doubt be a matter of surprise to some, that one who has so young a family should think of declining so prosperous a trade, as many people, I believe, think mine is. To these I answer, that I have no desire to accumulate riches for my children; the blessing seldom attends it, and the baneful effects thereof are too often visible, even in our society. This is a matter of no small importance with me,—it is not a sudden thing. I wish to consult my friends, and to take their advice in it. It has been a long time growing with me, and latterly has scarcely ever been out of my thoughts; and not having frequent intercourse with my friends, it seemed best for

me to state in writing the principal grounds for taking such a step, which might be readily handed to those most likely to impart counsel.' Perhaps the whole bearing of these impressions was never fully understood, even by himself, till some years subsequently; when he was called upon to make a still further surrender of his will to that of his heavenly Father, by quitting his native country, and the bosom of that society which he so much loved, and going forth at the call of apprehended duty to sojourn in a strange land.

But to return to the period of which we have been speaking. Though he had been necessarily much occupied with his own concerns, he had not been a useless or inactive member of the religious body to which he was united. For many years he filled the office of overseer in the meeting to which he belonged; and in discharge of the duties connected with it, he was remarkable for his unwearied zeal and charity, his labour, his forbearance, and brotherly-kindness. The power of Divine grace having wrought so effectually on his own mind, his benevolence extended to the whole human family.

For a number of years, the impression was strong upon his mind, that he should be called to the work of the ministry; but in connexion with this feeling he was long harassed with doubts and fears. He was not rebellious, but his faith was weak; he earnestly desired to have indubitable evidence that such was indeed the will of his Lord and Master: but He who knew the sincerity of his heart, graciously condescended, in his own good time, to leave him without a doubt on this important subject. He underwent deep baptisms of spirit; indeed such were his mental conflicts, that his health materially suffered. In referring to this circumstance at a subsequent period, he remarked to a friend, that he regarded it as an especial blessing to him: for sometimes he slept little, and frequently his nights were spent in prayer; at other times, prayer being his last engagement previous to consigning himself to sleep, he found in the morning, (to use his own expression) his 'mind still covered with the same precious influence. I think,' he added, 'I at that time knew in measure what it was to "stand continually upon the watch-tower in the day time, and to be set in my ward

whole nights."' His mind at this time appeared to be particularly impressed with the feeling of the great uncertainty of time; so that he has been heard to acknowledge, that for months together he seldom lay down in bed, without endeavouring to commit his soul into the hands of the Lord; feeling it very uncertain whether he should be permitted to see the morning's light. In reference to this period, a dear friend remarks:—'Of that time, and of many months previous to his appearance as a minister, my recollection is very clear. We were then confidential friends, and often together; and during the lapse of years that has intervened, I have frequently reverted to it. The exercise which then attended him, almost bore down the natural cheerfulness of his disposition;—he was so serious, so humble, so watchful, lest at any time he should be thrown off his guard in the freedom of conversation; and lest he should dissipate the influence of that heavenly love and goodness, which often filled his mind, and led him into holy covenant with his Lord. He one day took me to a small field nearly surrounded by trees, on the south side of his house, where he told me he was accustomed to retire alone at an early hour of the morning and late in the evening, and often at noon when at home; thus adopting the resolution of David:—"Evening and morning and at noon will I pray:" the spiritual communion he witnessed there, and at many other times, would strengthen him no doubt in his earnest endeavour to perform the will of his Divine Master. Yet it was only from his deportment that I judged my dear friend to be under preparation for the work of the ministry. He spoke of that exercise to no one, and when our friend, Sarah Lamley, who visited families in Sheffield in the summer of 1813, and in the sitting with his family, told him she was sensible that he was called to that important work, his dear wife heard it with extreme surprise.'

Sitting in meeting on one occasion, he was particularly impressed with the language of our Saviour, after he had cleansed the leper;—"Were there not ten cleansed, but where are the nine? I tell you there are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger." The remembrance that he had ever read such a passage

in the sacred volume was entirely obliterated from his mind; he thought he felt the requisition of duty to address it to the meeting, but he was perplexed; he knew not at the time where it was to be found: he gave way to reasoning,—his dependence not being simply on the Lord alone; and in great distress of mind, he allowed the meeting to break up. He hastened home, and opening his bible, the first passage that met his eye was,—"were there not ten cleansed," &c. He was deeply affected:—he entered renewedly into covenant with the Lord, that if He would be pleased again to visit him, he would be more faithful; and when again he felt the requisition, he was strengthened in much brokenness to comply. A sweet and inexpressible feeling of peace was mercifully permitted to follow this sacrifice; confirming to his mind that it was indeed a sacrifice prepared of the Lord. From this time he continued occasionally to express a few words in the line of the ministry; and not unfrequently he was permitted to derive comfort from the united exercise of others engaged in this work, who were occasionally led to express the substance of the burden he himself was labouring under:—this was very confirming to his mind: and he has been heard to recount with gratitude to God, his condescension to him during this period of infancy in the work.

He was acknowledged a minister in the year 1816; and shortly afterwards he accompanied another Friend in a visit to the meetings in Lancashire, and some parts of Yorkshire.

CHAPTER V.

PROSPECT OF DUTY IN RUSSIA—OFFERS HIMSELF TO THE RUSSIAN GOVERNMENT TO SUPERINTEND AGRICULTURAL IMPROVEMENTS NEAR PETERSBURG—VISITS PETERSBURG, 1817—REMOVES WITH HIS FAMILY TO RUSSIA, 1818—WILLIAM ALLEN AND STEPHEN GRELLET—VISIT FROM THE EMPEROR, &c.

A NEW field of action was now about to open before our dear father, for which his mind had been secretly preparing, until a willingness had been begotten in his heart, to follow the requisitions of his Lord, whithersoever these might lead him, or whatever sacrifice to his natural feeling, an acquiescence in them might involve.

For several years, he had an impression that it would be required of him to go abroad. This prospect frequently cost him much exercise of mind; and one day whilst pacing up and down his parlour, feeling unusually burdened under it, he was led earnestly to cry unto the Lord, desiring that he would be pleased to show him to what part of the world he must go. One of his children was in the room putting together a dissected map, and as his father approached him, his eye rested on Petersburg with such an intimation that thither his Divine Master would send him, that, said he, in relating the circumstance many years afterwards to an intimate friend, 'I never afterwards doubted:' he however kept the matter entirely to himself, believing that when the right time should come, way would be made for him.

Early in the year 1817, inquiry having been made, by order of the late Emperor of Russia, for a person to undertake the management of an agricultural establishment in his dominions, he believed it his duty to offer himself for this service. The Emperor, as the reader may recollect, visited this country, in the year 1814, and was much struck with the perfection of the English system of farming. His attention had been drawn in several ways

to the Society of Friends; and a casual visit made to the farm of a Friend, on the Brighton road, had given him a favourable impression of their character as agriculturists. This impression, as the event proved, was not soon effaced; for having three years afterwards concluded on the drainage and cultivation of certain marshes and waste lands, in the immediate neighbourhood of Petersburg, and inquiry being made in England for a suitable manager for this work, the Emperor particularly specified his wish, that a member of the Society of Friends should be selected. The information was circulated in the Society, by the late Richard Phillips of Wandsworth; and the following extract from a letter received from a Friend of Sheffield, in reference to this subject, is inserted as showing the manner in which this undertaking was entertained by D. W.

Second Month 15*th*, 1817.

Little did I suppose on the receipt of thy letter of the 22nd, that I should have occasion so speedily to reply to it. Soon after reading it, I observed to my wife, if such a Friend as Daniel Wheeler had believed it right to embark in such an undertaking, I knew of no person, that for all the purposes required, might be so fully recommended. But this idea did not at that time operate farther on my mind, than to induce me to conclude to take him into consultation, respecting some one well qualified. On the receipt of thy letter, he was engaged in a family visit in a neighbouring meeting. In consequence, I was prevented from communicating the subject to him, until yesterday; when I perceived, to my surprise, that it made considerable impression on his mind, and that, from some questions he put to me, he was making the application to himself. Without noticing this, I told him, I wished he would give the overtures of the Emperor a place in his thoughts; and if any eligible person occurred to him, to inform me within a week. But my surprise was increased this morning, by his coming to inform me, that it would be mere form to defer acknowledging, that his mind was already made up to offer himself for the situation, for which it had been preparing more than two years. Great as the trial will be to many, to spare such an one out of our Monthly Meeting, there was an assent in my mind,

like that of "thou art the man." I have often said, that in respect both to civil and religious attainments, I knew of no one, moving in a similar sphere, who is so much qualified for the superintendence and the direction of others. A novice as to the world, or one who had had little experience as to the ways of men, however much he might have had of agriculture, would want many requisites, essential to the filling with propriety a station, designed to be under the immediate eye of an Emperor. In his character, so much of true dignity is united with Christian humility, as qualifies him to appear before princes.

After acquiring the first reputation in Sheffield as a tradesman, he took a farm, as if to give proof of his practical skill in agriculture; which has excited the admiration of the neighbourhood, and demonstrated that his talents in this direction are of a superior kind.

For a person of his qualifications, to come forward on the ground of religious sensibility, appears to me an extraordinary instance of devotedness; but he has been heard to say, he has been forgiven so much, that he cannot give too great proof of gratitude and attachment to the King of kings. If he enter upon this undertaking, it will be no small sacrifice in a pecuniary consideration, which he will have to make.——

One of the first difficulties which presented itself, in regard to this movement, was that of mentioning his prospect to our dear mother. He believed her timid nature would be ready to shrink under such a requirement. His distress therefore on her account was great: but what was his surprise and comfort, when on informing her, and querying whether she could leave her friends and native land to go with him, she sweetly and calmly acquiesced; stating her belief, that if it was the will of the Lord, strength would be given them to bear the trial, as well as ability to perform the service required, whatever it might be.

In a paper addressed by Daniel Wheeler to an official person in Petersburg, after alluding to his first impressions on the subject, he says, 'Some time after this, as I was returning home late one evening, I had a sense of invitation after this manner,—What if the Emperor of

Russia should want a person for the superintendence of agriculture? at which time a willingness was begotten in my mind to go, if that should be the case; but when, or in what manner, this was to come to pass, was totally hidden from me. The frequent conflict of soul I had to pass through, none can conceive or have an idea of, but those who have been alike circumstanced; all which was permitted in infinite wisdom, for the subjection of the natural will, and is what I verily believe all must pass through, before they can in sincerity of heart say, "Not my will, but Thine be done."'

It was concluded that Daniel Wheeler should, in the first instance, visit Petersburg alone; and for this purpose he set out from his home, towards the close of the Sixth Month, 1817; and after making a satisfactory journey, returned the same autumn. The following are extracts from memoranda made during this visit:—

Seventh Month 15*th*.—Arrived at Cronstadt. After the ship was secured, we went on board an old ship of war, fitted up as the Harbour Master's Office. In the places where the public business is transacted, are paintings of the saints richly ornamented, before which the members of the Greek church repeat their prayers: they make a point of bowing and crossing themselves as soon as they see them. I observed the people, employed in the office, stared very much at me, principally I believe on account of my wearing my hat. On going into the presence of the Port Admiral, of whom I had to obtain a pass, I observed he also noticed my hat; and finding he could speak English, on his coming to inquire my name, I said, I hoped the keeping on my hat would not be considered as intended disrespect, and entered into an explanation of my reasons, for not taking it off to man; when he stopped me by saying, when it was omitted from any motive of religion, he did not wish it. I left Cronstadt in the steam-packet that afternoon for Petersburg, and on landing there I was met by one of the Bible Society's agents, who conveyed me to the Bible Office, the gift of the Emperor to the Bible Society; at which place I was treated with great kindness and courtesy, and found in it a quiet asylum for several days.

23*rd*.—Received a message that I was to be intro-

duced to Prince Galitzin to-day: I had little time to spare for preparations, but had not many to make, having no clothes but what I landed in, my luggage having been detained at the Custom house. I was accordingly conducted to the splendid mansion of the Prince, the entrance and marble staircase of which were well lined with attendants; in whose countenances surprise and anger were evidently depicted, at my assurance in keeping on my hat. We waited a short time in an open gallery, as the Prince was engaged; and took a turn into a spacious room, the walls of which were hung with pictures of all the imperial family of Russia, from the first to the last. In a short time a messenger came to say that the Prince was at liberty; when we were ushered into his apartment of ample size. The Prince came forward, and met us in a very courteous manner; and on —— introducing me, he took me by the hand, and we retired to the back part of the room, and sat down at the end of a writing-table. He asked many questions with great affability in Russian,—my companion interpreting betwixt us. Amongst others, he inquired what family I had; which being answered, he wished to know whether I would bring them all with me, if I came to reside in Russia. I said, 'Yes; I should not leave a hoof behind: at which he seized my hand, and expressed his satisfaction. He then inquired, how I should do, as there was no place of worship for me,—no meeting—no society,—how was that? I told him the worship of Almighty God was not confined either to time or place,—that it is neither in this mountain, nor at Jerusalem; but in every place incense should be offered to His name, and a pure offering. After pausing a little, he desired the sentence might be thoroughly explained to him. He then seemed quite to understand it, bowing his head in a reverent manner, and appeared to ponder over it. In the midst of this, I found my mind drawn into silence; but the Prince kept asking question after question, as if afraid of losing time: my answers were now very short; and at last, I endeavoured to explain to my companion the situation I was in, but could not make him understand me. The conversation then turned to agriculture, and the soil of the neighbourhood, and to the Emperor; but as a burden

still remained with me, I cannot recollect all he said, or what answers I made him. At last, we rose from our seats as with one accord; but before the Prince had time to bid me farewell in his way, I found my time was come: and I was enabled to declare unto him the everlasting foundation,—even Christ Jesus, the rock of ages,—who was "to the Jews a stumbling-block, and to the Greeks foolishness;" but to them that obey his gospel inwardly revealed in the secret of their hearts, Christ crucified, the power of God, and the wisdom of God unto salvation. As I stopped at the end of every sentence, my companion interpreted, as if he had been accustomed to the work, and might have known what he was going to do. After we had finished, we stood like statues for a short time; and on my moving, as if I was at liberty, the Prince took me by the hand, saying, 'although our languages are different, the language of the Spirit is the same.' He held my hand till we got near the door, when I bade him farewell, and departed, comparatively as light as a feather. I cannot but admire how I was guided; for in delivering what was upon me to the Prince, at the end of every sentence, all was taken from me, as if I should have nothing further to say: but when ——— had had sufficient time to interpret, then a supply was again vouchsafed. Whereas if I could have proceeded, as it were without stopping, I should have overpowered the interpreter, and the work would have been marred altogether. Thus the blind are guided in ways that they know not, and in paths that they have not seen: but truly the pillars of my tabernacle were mightily shaken. May I ever be preserved in that humility, through which alone the grateful heart can bless His holy name, "who redeemeth our lives from destruction, and crowneth us with loving kindness and tender mercies."

[From this time to the 15th of Eighth Mouth, Daniel Wheeler was employed in examining the waste crown lands and the marshes in the vicinity of the capital, in preparing reports of his investigations, &c.]

Eighth Month 3rd. On the 15th, I began a letter to my dear wife, and had finished two sides of it, when I seemed quite at a loss for a subject, which I could not account for. I went into the yard, and walked up and

down for fresh air; but had not been there long, when I received a message, that the Emperor would see me that afternoon, and that I was to be at five o'clock at the lodgings of Prince Galitzin, which are close to the gate of the palace of Kamenny Ostrof. Having been kindly assisted in procuring a conveyance, I was there in time, and the Prince received me with his usual openness. In about half an hour a messenger came, and (bareheaded) conducted me through the garden, and the different guards, who stared at me not a little. At last we entered the palace, and after going through a range of rooms, I was shown into the apartment of the Emperor, who received me with more parade than I expected; but I thought afterwards this was only on account of the page, for as soon as the door was shut, he took me by the hand, saying, 'Sit down, sir.' I was not, however, quite ready to sit down; for the salutation arose in my heart, of "Grace, mercy, and peace be multiplied, from God the Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ," upon the noble Emperor, &c. As I proceeded I took off my hat, and the Emperor stood quite still, until I had finished; when we both sat down. He had several questions to ask, and expressed his surprise and satisfaction at the manner in which I had been led into Russia. I had a great deal to say to him, and full opportuuity to express every thing that arose on my mind. He mentioned my memorial, and I think touched upon every particular head distinctly, and said he agreed to the whole. I then gave him a paper I had ready in my pocket book, which brought the peculiar principles of our Society into view; this he read, and questioned me about all of them; which gave time to clear myself fully. I had a good deal to say to him on silent waiting. I remember my last words were, the expression of a desire that attended my mind, 'that when time shall rob thee of thy earthly crown, an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled—a crown immortal, may be thy happy portion.' He held my hand fast in his for some time, and did not utter another word. I then returned to Prince Galitzin, and on taking leave, I had a little matter to express to him, which ———, who was present, interpreted. The next morning, I finished my letter to my wife, in time for the post, and

thought myself clear of Petersburg: but in the evening, I found something like an invitation to such of the English people as inclined to sit down with me.

The next day, after dining with J. Paterson, he invited me to go to hear their sermon, which I declined; but afterwards I told him, that if his friends inclined to sit down with me in a large room at the Bible Office, if I had any thing for them they should have it, and if not, they must forgive me. It was accordingly fixed that we should meet at seven o'clock the next evening. I repaired thither about the time, and found a larger number assembled than I had any expectation of, including four ministers of the Independent denomination. Scarcely an individual amongst them had sat in silence before, in this way. I was enabled to declare the truth amongst them about three-quarters of an hour, to the relief of my own mind, and the sitting ended well: there seemed something like an unwillingness on their part to break up: I was, I trust, thankful when it was over.

The forepart of the 18th and 19th instant was employed in taking leave of my friends, and preparing for my homeward voyage. On the 20th, I went down to Cronstadt by steam-boat, and proceeded at once on board the *Fortune*, a fine ship, for Hull.

21*st*.—Going on shore in the course of the day, I found a long-looked for letter from home, and thankfulness was raised in my heart to the Giver of every good and perfect gift, for the cheering account it contained.

[The voyage to England was completed in safety.]

During the ensuing winter, D. W. was actively engaged in winding up his affairs preparatory to leaving England. Ample provision of agricultural implements, seeds, and cattle was also made; and, at length, all being in readiness, he embarked for Russia, with his wife, family, and assistants, in all twenty souls, on the 22nd of Sixth Month, 1818.

The following memorandum is from the pen of a friend, and refers to this period.

On the 18th of Sixth Month, 1818, we were agreeably surprised by seeing our dear friend Daniel Wheeler come into our meeting at Sheffield; for he had taken leave of us, not expecting to meet us again before embarking for

Petersburg: towards the close of the meeting, he expressed himself nearly as follows:—

'It has afforded me consolation once more to sit with my dear brethren and sisters, though in great weakness; and painful my feelings have been, when thinking that I may never have another opportunity of doing so; being with my dear family about to be removed from scenes like these, to a land of strangers, amongst a people whose language we know not. I do not wish to multiply words unnecessarily; but as there are perhaps few present who are acquainted with my motives for leaving, I have believed it would be right for me, near the close of this meeting to inform you, as ability may be afforded. Nearly four years ago, in the vision of that light in which I believe, it was clearly manifested that it would be right for me to remove with my dear family to that land. Many were the conflicts and deep the baptisms I passed through, known only to Him who seeth in secret; but whilst abiding under these impressions, for he that believeth maketh not haste, I was brought into a willingness to give up thereto: and thanks be to the Preserver of men, I can now say without boasting, I am willing to go whithersoever He may be pleased to send me. With these feelings, I went over last summer to see this strange land; and though I met with many trials, my faith was not shaken, but remained fixed on Him, "who walketh upon the wings of the wind."

'Painful as the separation is to me, I would not have my dear friends think that I consider my lot hard; for in sincerity I can adopt the language,—"What shall I render unto the Lord for all his mercies?" Few have received greater benefits from His hand,—few have experienced greater deliverances; and none more unworthy. I am weak and frail; yet in me you behold a monument of His everlasting mercy. He has kept me from the devouring sword;—He has preserved me from the raging pestilence, when thousands have fallen by my side;—He kept me alive in famine;—He saved me from shipwreck, when the deep was ready to overwhelm, and the briny waves to swallow me up:—but, above all, He has showed me his marvellous Truth.

'To this Power, my dear friends, I commend you, which

is able to do all things for you. When we are far separated, we may still pray for each other; and perhaps those prayers may prove more availing, than whilst we have been together. In the words of the Apostle,—to His grace, which is able to keep and preserve you alive in the most holy faith, I commend you, together with myself and my dear family,—all that go, and all that stay; and in the love of the everlasting gospel, I salute you, and affectionately bid you farewell.'

[After his arrival at Petersburg, he writes to his friend Samuel Smith, as follows:]

Ochta, near Petersburg, Eighth Month 19th, 1818.

My dear Friend,

I am fully aware that thou hast long before this time heard of our being favoured to land in safety, complete in number as when we left our native country. After replenishing our stock of hay and water at Elsineur, we proceeded on our voyage, and arrived at Cronstadt, on the 16th day from Hull: one day was lost at Elsineur, so that we could not well have had a more favourable and expeditious passage; for which, I humbly trust, all of us who are capable of reflection, are truly thankful. Several things combined to detain us at Cronstadt, so that it was eight days before we reached the habitation prepared for us, which is situated on the bank of the Neva, nearly opposite the Smolny monastery. It is a stuccoed brick house of two stories, with the necessary stabling and outbuildings; and we have now got it into tolerable order. * *

The greater part of the time we have been here, it hath pleased Him, who best knows what is best for us, to dispense a season of poverty and barrenness, as far as relates to myself; and my dear wife has been much in the same condition. At the same time, a ray of light hath been mercifully permitted to shine upon the path, sufficient to strengthen the belief, that our being here is in the counsel of His will, without whose knowledge a single sparrow falleth not to the ground. If it was not for a gleam now and then of this kind, though faint and transient, how deplorable would our prospect be,—separated from those we dearly love, surrounded by many persons

disposed to take every advantage of us, with a dreary half-year's winter gathering round us. * * *

I have lately been inquiring the manner in which the winter here begins; and am informed that, after some cold rainy weather, the English winter commences, which freezes over parts of the Lake Ladoga: these are soon broken up by the wind, when the ice comes down in large flakes, and blocks up the Gulf of Finland and the Neva. Shortly after this, the winter comes in reality, and fixes the ice, often in a very rough state, just as it has been hurried down by the current,—many of the flakes lying one upon another. Often, the whole becomes solid in forty-eight hours; after which roads are levelled over the rough ice, at those places where the pontoon bridges and ferries have been, which are marked out by fir-trees set up in the ice. These crossings frequently remain passable until the Fourth Month; for although the snow melts off the land three weeks earlier, yet the river remains frozen, owing to the frosty nights:—the roads are sometimes dusty before the ice breaks up in the river. This I believe is the season when people suffer the most, as the days are so warm that they change their clothing, whilst at the same time there are strong frosts by night.

Ninth Month 4th.—Last First day, in our little meeting, the Master was pleased to preside, and it was indeed "a feast of fat things;" and the language which arose in my heart was, "Take eat; this is my body." I never remember being under such a covering, and my desire is, that I may never forget it: and oh! that the fear of the Lord may so prevail amongst us, as to entitle us to His love, which can alone enable us "to run through a troop, or leap over a wall;" and which at this time enableth me to call every country my country, and every man my brother.

[During the time of Daniel Wheeler's residence in Russia, he was accustomed to render a yearly account of himself and his family, to the Monthly Meeting in England of which they were members. Many of these letters contain much excellent counsel, but the limits of the present work will only allow of the insertion of the following, and of one which will be found under date of First Month 23rd, 1823.]

To Balby Monthly Meeting.

Second Month 17*th*, *O. S.* 1819.

Dear Friends,

In conformity with the desire expressed in your minute of the Fifth Month last, we have endeavoured to render an account of ourselves in the foregoing part of this letter. It was thought that by drawing up answers to such of the queries as were applicable to us, the most correct statement of our situation would be obtained.

In thus drawing the attention of the Monthly Meeting to its distant members, a belief accompanies my mind, that tender sympathy and feeling are excited on our account; and my heart is humbled within me, in the remembrance of the "goodly tents of Jacob, and the quiet dwelling places of Israel,"—of those dear brethren and sisters, with whom I can no longer assemble before the Lord, and from whom my dear family and self are far separated, as from the bosom and fostering care of the church. Yet amidst a dispensation so painful to human nature, I have abundant cause to acknowledge the continued regard of Israel's great and compassionate Shepherd; who faileth not to care for His sheep, however widely scattered, and who at seasons is graciously pleased, not only to afford the healing balm of resignation, but to replenish with His love, which many waters cannot quench, nor distance diminish; but which at times is sensibly felt to flow towards the flock at home, even to the hindermost,—and to clothe with ability in secret broken aspirations to supplicate on their behalf, that "not a hoof may be left behind," and that none may be missing in the great day; but that all of every age and of every class, may hear His voice, be known of Him, and follow Him: that when He, the Great Shepherd, shall appear, we may appear also, and be all bound up together in the Lord's "bundle of life;" which is frequently, fervently, and at this time, the desire of your friend,

D. W.

To Mordecai Casson.

Third Month 19*th*, 1819.

——— I do not know that we have ever had more than 21 degrees of frost by Reaumer's scale, (16° below

zero, Faht.)—indeed, but few of the Russians recollect so mild a winter. I think we never passed a winter in England with less sickness in the family: the merciful Dispenser of all our blessings has indeed done more than we could have thought or asked for. During four months of the darkest season, we have had the company, generally two days in the week, of our beloved friends William Allen and Stephen Grellet; through whom we have often been cheered and refreshed as with dainties from the dear Master's table. They have had a narrow path to tread in, yet are well satisfied with their labours here; though they have been in a different way from what is customary with those who move on such errands: they have truly been led in paths that they knew not, and in ways that they have not seen, to their own admiration, and to the praise of the great and excellent Name. They left us ten days ago, with minds full of peace,—beloved and regretted by all who had the happiness to become acquainted with them. The stream of gospel love, which was at seasons permitted to flow, when channels were open to receive it, has made, I believe, an impression on the minds of some, which will never be obliterated; and which has clearly evinced, "whose servants they are." They were, I think, of all men the most fit to move in such a work, in such a place, and under such circumstances.

I saw them set off from the city, just at the edge of dark, in a covered sledge, in the midst of a heavy snow-storm. They are furnished with letters and documents, sufficient to open the way wherever they go: they have also a document called a podorojni, which obliges the post-masters to furnish them with horses as soon as they arrive at a station; so that they are not likely to suffer detention on the road. Their luggage is put in the bottom of the sledge; over it is a bed covered with black morocco leather, on which they can either sit or lie: they have also provisions with them; and a servant who can speak French, German, and Russian.

Since the departure of our friends, we have felt much poverty and strippedness; yet at times a renewed evidence hath in unutterable mercy been vouchsafed to us, that the Rock remains, and that the Foundation standeth sure: so that there is still encouragement, even amidst

the gloom by which we seem surrounded, humbly to hope that we shall be preserved and enabled to maintain our ground; however feeble our attempts may seem, and however much our weakness may be felt. The responsible situation in which we are placed, is at times almost enough to overwhelm me with fear; lest I should let fall any of those precious testimonies given us to bear, and thereby bring reproach upon the blessed cause of Truth. I have however great consolation in observing, that my eldest son also begins to feel the importance of this; and it is a great favour when the eldest takes the right way, as there is then a hope that the younger ones will follow after.

To Barbara Hoyland.

Ninth Month 22nd, O. S. 1819.

My dear Sister,

——— Since I last wrote to thee, our work has made great progress, and being now widely extended, is not likely to lessen my fatigue; but I am looking forward to a little respite, as the winter is expected shortly to be with us. Since the spring opened, I have been much harassed, having been engaged from four in the morning until late at night, except on First-days, when I do not suffer any work to be done, and of course I have no occasion to go out myself. It is a common practice here to transact business, and hold the principal markets on First-days: but I made a stand against it, as soon as I came, and have been under the necessity to this time strongly to object to it. On Fifth-days also I take the forenoons; so that our little meetings are regularly held, which is a great comfort to me, as well as a respite from toil, and when at seasons the Great Master is pleased to preside and own the slender few. * *

Amidst the numerous avocations of the Emperor, time has been devoted by him for a thorough examination of the work carrying on by us; which gave me full two hours' time with him alone, and another hour was occupied at our house: so that I had an opportunity given of clearing myself, and I hope nothing was kept back on my part. I rejoice in believing that a spark remains unextinguished in his noble bosom, which I trust will never

be suffered to go out or diminish; but may be permitted increasingly to brighten, even unto the perfect day. Yet I cannot help fearing, when dwelling on the critical situation in which he is placed, the exalted station he fills, and the many besetments by which he is surrounded. I will content myself with reviving his own expression;—when speaking on the subject of war, I alluded to the vast army in this neighbourhood, and the state of mankind in general; he replied,—'the things that are not possible with man are possible with God.'

We have also had a visit from the reigning Empress: she is a very amiable woman,—so unaffected and unassuming, that our fears of being embarrased in her presence were soon changed into admiration and regard; and though she manifested great condescension and affability, true dignity still appeared. She came to the house, and afterwards went to view the work; and I shewed her every thing that I thought would please. She walked for a considerable time on the land, and was much gratified with its being so dry, as well as with the apparent change in the face of the country. The Empress speaks a little English, and had with her a companion who understands it well.

I remain, &c.

CHAPTER VI.

SUNDRY LETTERS TO HIS FRIENDS IN ENGLAND—VISIT FROM THE EMPEROR—INUNDATION AT PETERSBURG.

To Samuel Smith.

Second Month 2nd, 1820, *O. S.*

I will endeavour to give thee some idea of a plan which opened in my mind last autumn; but I must in the first place make thee a little acquainted with the state of things here. The land belongs principally to the nobles, who have immense estates cultivated by the peasants born on them, who are the absolute property of their masters, man, woman, and child alike. They either work for their proprietor, or they deliver to him a part of their earnings, liable to be increased at his pleasure. The result is, that they have no interest in anything; and I have heard it said among them, that life is not worth a copeck, or the hundredth part of a shilling: this is a very affecting circumstance. My idea is, to make a trial of placing peasants in farms at a moderate fixed rent, on the land we have drained and cultivated; and if these are favoured to prosper, I have a hope that the nobles will see it their interest to divide their large estates in a similar way, and place their peasants on the same footing; and I am persuaded their incomes would be greatly increased. If when each peasant had paid his rent either in money or produce, the remainder was to be his own, he would be stimulated to industry; there would be something worth living for.

It was intended that the whole of the land which we drain and cultivate, should be farmed by us; but this is now in part set aside. The land is now to be divided into small farms, of from thirty to forty-five acres, to be let at a moderate rent, but sufficient to pay interest on the outlay for draining, cultivating, and building; the tenants to be under wholesome restrictions in the management of their land, that their farms may be taken proper care of.

On each piece of land where there are farms established, a part will remain in my hands, as an example for the small farms, where a complete establishment for agricultural purposes will be built. I have been very busy constructing a model for a farm-house, suitable for the object in view; and it is expected that several of these houses will be erected next summer.

I had the happiness to see the land which has been drained, quite free from vapour, when all around it has been covered as with a cloud; so that the surrounding neighbourhood cannot fail to become more healthy from its expulsion. This would be a pleasant picture for the mind to dwell upon, if there was not mourning and lamentation on other accounts: but the state of things, in a religious point of view, is very affecting and discouraging; and the query often arises, what can be done for these people?—to which the answer at this time is, "vain is the help of man." And truly I am often fearful that the creaturely activity of man, instead of helping, is marring the good work already begun in the tender minds of many; causing them to stop very far short of that undefiled rest, which is prepared for the people of God: but it is my most firm belief, that their earthly wisdom will be confounded, and that the Most High will scatter them as chaff is scattered before the wind; and that He will magnify His own glorious power in the hearts of his children, who in simplicity are turning their faces towards his holy mountain,—taking of the things of Christ, and shewing them to these his little ones.

For my own part I am a very poor creature, and sometimes fearful that I myself shall become a castaway; yet after times of deep suffering, and self-abasement, love for the dear people here abounds more and more in my breast; and often is the desire breathed, that the cultivation in their hearts may not only keep pace with, but abundantly surpass and excel, that of the wastes by which we are surrounded. Then would "the wilderness be as Eden, the desert as the garden of the Lord;" joy, gladness, thanksgiving, and the voice of melody would be heard therein.

The question—when shall we meet again? I should be glad to have it in my power to answer; but it is only

known to Him who seeth the end from the beginning, whether again in this world or not. Let us look up with humble confidence to Him to enable us through every dispensation yet to come, to say—"not my will, but thine be done; at the same time labouring with unremitting assiduity to know, what His righteous will is concerning us. Evening, morning, and noon, let us pray, my much loved friend; and He, who will not break the bruised reed nor suffer it to be broken, in his own time will not only reveal it to us, but will enable us to perform it, to the praise of His great and excellent name, and to our unspeakable peace. Farewell in the Lord, my dear friend.

To Richard Cockin, Doncaster.

21*st of Second Month*, 1820.

My dear Friend,

Hearing by letters lately received from England, that affliction had visited your abode, I cannot help waiving all other considerations, however pressing at this time, and endeavouring to dip into sympathy and sweet feeling with my long loved friends; to whom my spirit is united in the binding influence of that love, which extends from the river to the uttermost parts of the habitable globe: humbly desiring that the God of all consolations may be with you, and comfort you together, with the riches of peaceful resignation to His righteous will; sustaining you in lowly patience, wrought by tribulation and suffering, in mysterious wisdom dispensed for sanctifying purposes, to His own glory, and the refinement of those who are precious in his Divine sight. "It is by these things men live;" they have led the righteous in all ages to blessed experience, being productive of that glorious hope which maketh not ashamed, because the love of God is shed abroad in their hearts; which in the true dignity of its character, animates the Christian travellers with innocent boldness, to persevere in the tribulated path cast up for them, to meet with unshaken firmness the yet remaining storms of time, and to behold with the placid eye of faith, the "far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory" about to be revealed, and which awaits the ransomed and redeemed of the Lord in the kingdom of Christ Jesus,

that will never have an end; where pain and sorrow cannot enter, and all tears are for ever wiped away.

I well remember the dear young woman who has terminated at an early period her innocent career, and entered into everlasting rest; and fresh in my memory is every part of the family, at whose hands I have so often had kindness shown me in simplicity and godly sincerity. These circumstances may not have been thought of by you; but in my memory they will long retain a lively and sweet fragrance. This acknowledgment will apply to many of my beloved friends, and I would gladly make it to all of them: very pleasantly can I reflect on the intervals which I was permitted to enjoy, when a sojourner amongst you, when my mind has been refreshed with the countenances of my friends, as "iron sharpeneth iron;" with some of whom, though a weak and feeble helper, I have been engaged in endeavouring to turn "the battle to the gate;" whilst united together in love, and harmonising in sentiment, as "our bows abode in strength, the arms of our hands were made strong" by the mighty God of Jacob. But as a dream vanishes when the sleeper awakes, so are these seasons departed; leaving me to gaze in abasedness of self, to adore and tremble at the gracious dealings of that Almighty power, which has been with me all my life. Though few and evil have been the days of my pilgrimage, yet few lives have been more chequered with vicissitude and variety, since cast upon the wide world an orphan boy; then cradled on a boisterous element and nursed in the free-school of iniquity, with sinners my companions,—but myself the chief! Oh! wondrous mercy, signally displayed!—in saving from the fire a burning brand, and following up from time to time with judgment's rod, the far-fled wanderer!—flying still, and still pursued; until overtaken, and in matchless love obliged to yield, and reluctantly to retrace step by step destruction's mazy track,—and to stop at many a place; and I hope in sincere repentance, made to dwell on scenes of mispent time and sinful deeds innumerable, "gone beforehand" (I humbly pray) to judgment;—not to "follow after," or where would be now my hope at this late hour, if forsaken by that gracious Lord;—who in so great compassion, wrought the miracle, and in the

greatness of his love and strength, has led my straying feet beside the still waters, and made me to lie down in the green pastures of life: who brought me amongst the assemblies of his people, with whom I now feel precious unity of spirit in the bond of sweet consoling peace:—and though far separated from them, I am at this day, I trust, "sitting and clothed and in my right mind," under a sense of my own unworthiness, and of such great and unmerited mercy.

When I began this letter, I had not the most distant thought of saying what I have done; but on looking it over, I believe they are words of truth and soberness, and I do not feel at liberty to alter them. Truly my mind is at this moment humbled as in the dust, in taking a retrospective view of the things that have been, and of our present peculiar situation. I think I never knew a time when watchfulness and prayer felt so needful, in order not only "to strengthen," but even to retain "the things that remain that are ready to die." It is like contending for every inch of ground in a well contested field, and being unable at night to discover whether the morning's position has been maintained; so that we stand in need of the prayers of our brethren in old England, that we may be preserved watchful, humble and faithful, amidst the various snares and temptations by which we are surrounded.

Believe me thy truly affectionate friend,

D. W.

To Richard Cockin.

Tenth Month 3rd, 1821.

——— I had a conference with the Emperor a short time since, and was never so much satisfied with any previous interview. He has passed through much conflict of mind within the last twelve months; the state of political affairs and many other trying circumstances combined, have served to reduce him both in body and mind. A knowledge of his peculiar situation renders him, in my estimation, an object of commiseration and sympathy. Few, I am persuaded, are really aware of the difficulties by which he is encompassed, or of what he has to contend with; and when I consider the educa-

tion he has had and training up altogether, I am more than ever surprised that he should have any relish for serious things. He had been absent about ten months at the Congress; and on my telling him he had been a long time away from his large family, he said, 'I have had a great deal to do. It is a very difficult thing to act for a nation, but I hope I have acted under God; and the measures I have taken I hope are approved by Him. I am encouraged to believe so, because not a drop of blood has been spilled. When the nations were in great distress and suffering during the late calamitous war, they then prayed to God: but they are like the Jews of old, they have now forgotten Him. There are societies of men in different places, who are disseminating bad principles under the cloak of bringing in Christianity: they are in many parts of Europe,—they are every where.' I told him I had often thought of him, and that a petition had been raised in my heart on his account. 'Yes;' he said, 'and I have often thought of you; there has not been one day, not one day, but I have thought of you and of Messrs. Allen and Grellett, and always felt myself united to you three in spirit.'

Previously to this conversation, we sat down in silence before the Lord; and in the course of our sitting, my mouth was opened to declare unto him the goodness of God, and his great mercy, variously displayed to the children of men; and to speak of the precious promises, which the humble heart only can sensibly partake of. After which, we continued our sitting until I had cleared my mind a second time; in this I had to recite the invitation of the dear Master;—"Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden," &c. After having sat some time in silence, feeling myself at liberty, I told him my mind was relieved; when he gave me his hand, and attempted to describe his feelings, but was unable to utter anything, except 'I have felt it,' laying his hand on his heart: I never saw him so brought down before. He stayed with us, I think, nearly three hours, and then left us in an affectionate manner, saying, 'I must leave you. I hope this is not the last time that I shall come: remember me in your prayers.' I attended him to his carriage, and as it drove off, he said, 'God bless you.'

Our large family Bible lay in one of the rooms; on seeing it he opened it, and readily turned to the 119th Psalm, which he said he had read that morning. He had a copy of the Scriptures in the carriage, which he always carries with him. My mind was so covered with sadness during the remainder of the day, and at intervals long afterwards, that my dear wife said, she thought I must have said too little or too much to the Emperor. I told her, no;—I felt satisfied as to that: but I could not help lamenting, that such a man should be in such a situation.

To E. Robson.*

Tenth Month 27th, 1822.

My dearest Eliza,

Notwithstanding I have hitherto been silent, the affecting events which have taken place since we last saw each other, have not been suffered to transpire unregarded; on the contrary, they have only served to heighten that love and affection which have long dwelt in my heart towards thee and thy dear brothers and sisters. Believe me, my dear niece, that through all, you have had my nearest sympathy; and that I have participated most feelingly and sincerely in all the painful afflictions which "the Father of mercies and God of all comfort," hath in His unsearchable wisdom been pleased to dispense unto you; although I have been dumb as to the expression of it by letter. Often has a secret petition been raised in my heart for your protection and preservation, to Him whose Almighty power can sustain our minds through every conflict;—who will not break the bruised reed, nor suffer it to be broken. When contemplating your situation, I am often comforted by a knowledge of the many near and dear relations and friends who surround you, who are affectionately careful and solicitous for your welfare every way; but my greatest consolation arises, from a firm belief that you are indeed the peculiar objects of Divine regard. Ah! my very dear Eliza, what a blessed privilege to be under the superintending care

* It may be worthy of remark, that E. R., to whom the letter is addressed, expired the very day on which it was written.

and oversight of Him who slumbereth not: such, though cast down, are not forsaken in the day of trouble;—resignation's healing balm, which soothes the keen anguish of an afflicted mind, in purest love is given:—not a tear, not a sigh, escapes His ever-watchful eye, in those who strive to bow in meek submission to His holy righteous will. How do I long that I could find words to convey the sweet consolation which pervades my mind when turned towards thee: it cannot be expressed. "Behold the tabernacle of God is with men,"—is the language that arises in my mind, while dwelling under the precious influence of this feeling; and I humbly pray that it may be richly verified, to thy inexpressible comfort and delight, and to the admiration, gratitude, and praise, not only of thyself, but of all thy dear connexions and friends. It is the broken, contrite spirit that the Lord regards;—it is the heart that wears the costly robe of sweet humility, in which the lowly Jesus makes His blessed abode. O the riches of His grace! it is peace, joy, and love;—that precious peace, which the world with all its perishing enjoyments, however splendid and specious in appearance, cannot give; and blessed be the name of the Lord the only Giver, neither can it take one particle away:—that joy, in which the ransomed and redeemed only can rejoice, "unspeakable and full of glory:"—that love which enlargeth the heart and casteth out all fear,—even the love of God, through Jesus Christ our Lord, to the children of men. "He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away."

To Sarah Smith, of Sheffield.

Eleventh Month 22nd, 1822.

I have been for many months desirous of writing to thee; and be assured that my silence has not arisen from any diminution of love or regard. On the contrary, the fight of affliction thou hast had to pass through, since we last exchanged letters, has rendered thee more than ever the companion of my thoughts, with increased affectionate

solicitude; and yet it is only of late that I have come to the determination of addressing thee.

Now, my dear friend, I hope I shall not awaken feelings of a painful nature, as from my own weakness and poverty I feel more than usually incapable of administering the smallest ray of comfort, or of lulling them again into quietness and repose. But while it is not in my power to strengthen, I trust I shall be preserved from weakening or lessening, in any degree, thy confidence in Him who hath been pleased to strip thee of, I believe, thy greatest earthly treasure. How mysterious to our poor finite comprehension are the ways of Infinite Wisdom, to prepare and purify us for an inheritance, incorruptible and undefiled, and which will never fade away! How difficult it is for us, in the hour of dismay and extremity, to distinguish, that the arm of everlasting mercy is still underneath for our support; but as humble resignation and submission to that Holy Will which cannot err, are patiently sought after, the poor tossed mind becomes mercifully strengthened to look unto Him who gave, and who hath been pleased to take away;—and to say in the depth of humility, Amen,—Blessed be the name of the Lord! This, I trust, has been thy sensible experience, my very dear friend, long before this time; and that patient fortitude hath conspicuously shone forth to thy sympathizing relations and friends: that they who have been eye-witnesses may also have been partakers with thee of that tranquil and peaceful resignation of mind, which sheds a lustre, consoling, comforting, and animating to all within its sphere. It is this that designates the true Christian,—rising with increased brightness through the gloom of affliction,—lowly and weak in self-estimation, and poor indeed,—disrobed of self and what self most delighted in;—but ah! how rich, in heavenly garb attired, and decorated with the costly gem of sweet humility, which has been won by keenest suffering, and which suffering alone can purchase!

To Friends of Balby Monthly Meeting.

First Month 23*rd*, 1823.

Dear Friends,

I herewith enclose our answers to the queries which are usually considered at the Spring Quarterly Meeting,

and at the same time am desired to acknowledge the receipt of your certificate on behalf of ———.

On looking towards my dear brethren and sisters, I am thankful in feeling a degree of that love, which alters not by separation, neither is subject to change amidst the vicissitudes of time; in which I once more salute you, with desires for your present and eternal well-being. Under an humbling sense produced by the recollection of those precious seasons, when I have been permitted to assemble with you, previously to the Spring Quarterly Meeting in each year, I am induced to bring to your remembrance the days that are over and past. Nearly five years have glided away, since I saw the well-gathered assembly on such an occasion; at that time there were many vacant seats, which had been occupied by faithful labourers in the Lord's vineyard both in word and doctrine, and by those who were in their day and generation fathers and mothers in our Israel. During this period, others also of blessed memory have been called away, who "rest from their labours, and their works do follow them." In thus calling to mind a succession of friends whom I knew and loved, who have sooner or later finished their earthly course, fought the good fight, and kept the faith, for whom a crown of righteousness is prepared; I feel an engagement of mind, that those who are left a little longer in this scene of conflict, may be thereby encouraged and strengthened to persevere in following Him, in whom they have believed; that they also, at the end of their race, may obtain the immortal prize. And Oh! my beloved friends, upon whom the weight of the precious cause of truth and righteousness must soon devolve, when the few remaining pillars of the present day are gathered to their everlasting rest, how earnestly do I desire that you may be aroused to preparation, by a deep sense of the important station that awaits you. Let me entreat you seriously to consider, how far the time and talents, so richly and so mercifully bestowed, are employed and devoted to the service of the Most High God; and whether the many vacant places would have remained unfilled up to the present day, if obedience had kept up with knowledge, which has been from time to time vouchsafed. To the just witness in every heart I appeal, and in tender love I refer you.

And dear brethren and sisters, I wish to press it not only upon heads of families, but upon all who are capable of reflection, to lay these things to heart; for it is a glorious cause in which all are or ought to be concerned, inasmuch as all are called to glory and virtue. Let these things sink deep in your minds,—let them have a place equal to their vast importance. How great is the responsibility, how awful the consideration, that by the influence of your example in faithfulness and upright walking, and by your religious care and oversight, the precious young people may be induced to choose the "Lord for their portion, and the God of Jacob for the lot of their inheritance." Of ourselves we can do nothing;—but dear friends, help is laid upon one that is mighty to save and to deliver: unto Him all power in heaven and on earth is given; even our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ,—the blessed medium of access to God! He hath graciously declared,—"Him that cometh unto me I will in no wise cast out." All things are possible with Him: counsel is His, and sound wisdom:—He is understanding:—He is strength. What then remains, but for us, in humble prostration of soul, to draw nigh unto Him; by yielding simple obedience to His Divine requisitions, this work of eternal consequence begins. It is not limited to a chosen few; it is extended unto all:—"What I say unto you, I say unto all, Watch." The watch, with constancy maintained, will lead to prayer. Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto, will lead the soul to God; to whom all power belongs. "Blessed will be those servants who are found so doing." Great will be their peace while here; glorious their reward hereafter. They will be numbered with those, that shall shine as the brightness of the firmament, and amongst them, who turning "many to righteousness," shall shine as the stars for ever and ever.

I am your affectionate friend and brother,

D. W.

To Richard Cockin, Doncaster.

Eighth Month 6th, 1823.

—— Laying aside all other causes, which time and paper will not permit my bringing forward, I must inform thee

that sickness has hung about our dwelling since the middle of last winter. The severity of the weather laid us all by for a time; but as spring opened, all the invalids came about again, with the exception of my dear wife and my Joshua, who lingered on until the fine weather fairly opened, and seemed likely to recover; but great heat coming suddenly upon us, their already weakened frames could not support it. Every means was tried which a skilful physician could devise, without any material benefit being visible: returning to England seemed the only alternative he could point out. I believe nothing could have induced my wife to leave us, but the hope of the change being beneficial to her son; however, she at length came to the resolution to make the attempt, and accompanied by my daughters, they sailed for London, on the 18th of last month.

—— I am grieved to find the character of our Emperor does not stand so high with many in England as it did; and fully believe he has been prompted by evil-disposed persons to do things that he does not approve of, and would not have done, but at their instigation. We know of no difference here, in respect to the government of the internal affairs of this country. I think his judgment has been biased by some of the other crowned heads, with whom he has of late associated: at the same time there is reason to believe, he has seen through some of their devices. I only wonder how he bears up, amidst the many difficulties that surround him; and the constant exercise of moderation, patience, and forbearance, he is in the daily practice of, is to me extraordinary. The manner in which he is imposed upon by many who enjoy his confidence, would scarcely be believed in its full extent. With my work, and as regards myself, I find no lack of assistance, when anything that requires his aid is brought to his knowledge. I have frequently seen him passing on the road, since he returned from Verona. A few weeks ago, I was looking at some oats pretty soon in the morning, in the neighbourhood of a pavilion to which he was going with the Dowager Empress to breakfast; and they passed close by me in a low carriage with a pair of horses. He looked very well; and I observed he pointed me out to his mother. I am at present much

occupied in the neighbourhood where he mostly resides in summer, about seventeen miles from Petersburg; and ten days ago, whilst laying out some ground in a wood, which is preparing for cultivation, a carriage stopped near the part where I was. My William was near, and called to me that it was the Emperor. On seeing him alight and spring over the ditch towards the place, I went to meet him. He gave me his hand, and immediately entered into conversation with his usual freedom. One of his Generals followed him; but it appeared to make no difference in his manner. He remained for some time, made many inquiries about my family; and having no doubt remarked our hay-crops, he said,—'You will have more hay than all the people in the neighbourhood.' I mentioned the indisposition of my family, and that my wife was gone to England: he seemed a little surprised, and directly asked if she would return. I said she intended it. He appeared greatly interested in my report of the abundant crops upon the ground. Last year there was quite a dearth of fodder in this neighbourhood; a large number of cattle were lost for want of food. After explaining to him what were my plans relative to the parcel of land on which we were standing, he shook me by the hand, and said, "I will let you do what you like.' I understand that the next day he made some inquiry as to the cause of the sickness among us, and having learnt that it was occasioned by the coldness of the house in which we live, he gave orders that it should be altered immediately. On the third day after the interview, an architect arrived, to ascertain what was wanted; and we are now well stocked with bricklayers, carpenters, and the like.

I believe I have long been partaker of the tender sympathy of my friends in England; but I think I never knew a time when I stood more in need of it, than the present. Exclusive of domestic enjoyments, I have long ceased to have any delights, the loss of which would give me an hour's pain or thought: in the bosom of my family was to be found all that could afford me gratification or comfort. With them about me, I had every thing I could wish for or desire, in this state of mutability. The compact is, however, unexpectedly and suddenly dissolved,

and one-half diminished as in a moment. I have, however, one consolation, which is, that they will not feel it as I do: they, if permitted to reach their native land in safety,—strengthened, I humbly hope, through heavenly goodness and mercy, by the sea-air, and their health in some degree restored, will be cheered and comforted by the countenances of many dear relations and friends.

I confess my prospects here wear a very different aspect; but I trust I have in some degree learned in all states to be content. There is, my dear friend, and without any inclination to boast,—I believe I may say, I know there is,—a soul-solacing presence to be felt in a retired and lonely mansion, as well as in a place where large assemblies crowd; which, unbounded and unlimited by time and space, extends to every clime, to every place, to every heart:—and O! saith my soul in humble prayer, may it be felt by us all!—that all our hearts may be so cleansed, so prepared and purified from every defilement, as to be in constant readiness to receive the heavenly guest. That the whole human race may be brought to the same blessed experience, is the earnest desire of thy tribulated friend at this moment of time; that all may have life, that all may be washed, that all may be sanctified, that all may be "justified, in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God."

I must now come to a conclusion, after saying, that although my dwelling is in low places, I am frequently favoured to feel humble resignation of mind; at the same time believing, that the hand of the Lord is in the present dispensation, I can freely commit my all to His divine disposal, who I am persuaded will not break the bruised reed.

To thy dear wife and family I beg to be remembered in love unfeigned, and assuring thee that thou art included in the same,

I remain thy affectionate friend,

D. W.

[In the following letter he speaks of the safe return of his wife and party from England.]

To John Hipsley, Hull.

Fifth Month 31*st*, 1824.

I have now the pleasure of informing thee, that we were much surprised by the arrival of the *Fanny*, after a passage of sixteen days. As we had had a succession of easterly gales, she was quite unlooked for on our part. A little before bed-time, on Fourth-day, we were roused by the sound of wheels; but had not the most distant idea who our guests could be. There were only a few moments to think about it, before the whole party were in the house; and our surprise and joy may be more readily conceived than described.

As I have once more got them safe at home, I may now tell thee somewhat of the trial of faith, patience, and feeling, under a lengthened-out sickness, which I have had to pass through for several months. It is nearly four months ago that I became seriously ill, and at one time there seemed little probability of my struggling through, until my wife could reach her home; but as I could not bear the thought of making her uneasy whilst in England, and without a possibility of getting to me or affording any relief, I took great pains to keep it from her, either in letters from us, or from any other person that I knew was writing. At times, when at the worst, I blamed myself for having withheld the information, as it seemed almost presumptuous to suppose I should recover; but at seasons I had hope: and I trust I can in some degree adopt the language of the Psalmist, and say,—"The Lord is my strength and my shield; my heart trusted in Him, and I am helped:" and great cause I have to ascribe all to His goodness and mercy, and to put my trust and confidence in Him.

I had intended visiting England this spring, attending the Yearly Meeting, and bringing home my family in the summer; but the Lord prevented me, and not man, as I had every permission that man could give me. This reconciles all, and raises consolation in my mind, and a hope that I am still an object of His divine compassion, although under a humiliating sense of my unworthiness.

[The great inundation by which the city of Peters-

burg was visited in the Eleventh Month, 1824, is thus described.]

To John Hipsley, Hull.

Eleventh Month 11th, 1824, *O. S.*

—— On the 7th inst., the inhabitants of Petersburg experienced the most awful visitation that has ever occurred within the memory of the oldest person living, by a deluge, which threatened for several hours the destruction of the city and suburbs. A dreadful tempest came on during the night of the 6th from the south-west, and continued to rage with unabated fury nearly the whole of the next day. Two days previously, an unusal roaring of the sea had been noticed about the head of the Gulf of Finland, and at Cronstadt. On the morning of the 7th, the sea began to rise, and shortly afterwards to push its waves into the heart of the city. The people at first supposed it would only be one of the floods which have frequently occurred, and manifested no particular alarm; but before noon, they became convinced of the necessity of flying for their lives. The road we live on exhibited a scene of terror and dismay not easy to describe: every one anxious to save himself and his cattle. As our situation is somewhat higher than the city itself, we had many applications for food for the cattle, and shelter, which of course we were glad to comply with. Our neighbourhood was protected from sharing in the general calamity by the bank of the Ligofsky canal, which is raised above the regular surface of the country; but from the upper part of the house we could see over this bank, which discovered to us the city, standing as it were in the open sea.

The water continued to rise until three, P.M., when the wind shifted to the north-west, and although its violence continued, it prevented the water from rising any higher. At that time the water was twelve feet deep in the main street on Vasily's Island. Buildings consisting of only one story were of course filled; and the frightened occupants obliged to take refuge upon their roofs. In the afternoon, we made some attempt to go towards the city; but found it unsafe to try much further than the bank of the canal just mentioned. The land under our care, between this and the city, was nearly

all under water, so that we could hear nothing that night of the distress which prevailed there. * *

Our land before hinted at, is covered over with timber, boats, dead horses, cows, barrels of fish, crosses from the grave-yards, parts of coffins, and other articles, and I regret to add, with many human bodies, drowned by this disastrous flood; one is a female with a child under each arm, which she was endeavouring to save.

It is now Third-day night: I have been both to-day and yesterday in the city, and have heard such accounts of accumulated suffering, as are impossible to be set forth. I fear the number of lives lost will amount to ten thousand, and the loss of cattle and property is estimated at 20,000,000 roubles, (£800,000 sterling.) Whole squadrons of cavalry horses were drowned in their stables, and many saved by being led up stairs. One Englishman, a horse dealer, has lost all his horses.

When the water began to rise above its usual height in floods, the Emperor went in person, and ordered the sentinels away from the different posts. When the palace became surrounded by water many feet deep, he appeared with the Empress on the balconies, encouraging the people to exertion, and offering rewards to those who would endeavour to save life, wherever he saw any particular danger: by this, many were saved, who would otherwise have been inevitably lost. A subscription has been begun to-day for the benefit of the sufferers, to which the Emperor has given 1,000,000 roubles (£40,000 sterling;) and he has ordered the military governor to take care that the poor people are furnished with food. Yesterday, it was difficult to procure bread, as the bakers' ovens were mostly deluged by the water; to-day, there is a supply. All the sugars at the Custom-house are melted, and all goods that will damage with water are spoiled. The shops in many places were full up to the ceilings: oats which have been under water in the stores, are selling at two and three roubles (from 20 to 30 pence) the chetvert of five English bushels. The inhabitants and houses of three villages near the Gulf, with their cattle, are said to be entirely swept away. The Emperor has been to-day to several places, where the greatest suffering has occurred, to devise relief for the people.

However affecting this visitation may appear, I cannot but view it with a hope, that it may yet prove a blessing in disguise, to those that remain: and I very much desire that it may have its proper and lasting effect upon all our minds; that so all may repent, and turn unto Him, with whom is mercy and plenteous redemption; lest a worse and more terrible warning should follow. There is, I think, reason to fear that another woe will succeed that which has now passed over, I mean the occurrence of pestilential disorders, which the dampness of the houses may bring on; particularly, if intense frost should succeed, before they are in some degree dry and aired: last-night it froze hard; at present there is less frost, but with the appearance of more snow.

In the midst of the general distress, we have been permitted to partake of peace and quietness, of which we seem altogether unworthy. I sometimes fear we are not making an adequate return for the numerous comforts and blessings we enjoy; and were it not to acknowledge with gratitude the loving-kindness and mercy which surrounded us, I should willingly omit saying anything about ourselves: all belonging to us seems to shrink into nothingness when we behold the surrounding scene of woe and misery.

CHAPTER VII.

VISITS ENGLAND, 1825 — DEATH OF THE EMPEROR ALEXANDER, AND OCCURRENCES CONSEQUENT THEREON, 1826—EXTENSIVE FIRES, &c., 1827—CORRESPONDENCE.

In the early part of 1825, Daniel Wheeler visited England. He took the overland route, in company with Thomas Shillitoe, who had been for some months on a religious visit to Petersburg and landed at Harwich after a fatiguing journey of thirty-six days. His stay did not much exceed three months: during this time, he attended the Dublin Yearly Meeting, to which he had felt his mind drawn before leaving home; also the Yearly Meeting held in London.

The following extracts are from letters written after his return to Russia.

To Richard Cockin, Doncaster.

Moscow Road, Ninth Month 26th, 1825.

My late visit amongst my dear friends in England, very frequently furnishes us, when the family is collected together, with a pleasant theme for conversation; and when absent from them and alone, it is often with me the subject of contemplation. But while it serves to revive affectionate feelings for those I love, a sting of regret remains behind, at having enjoyed their company for so short an interval, and being again so widely separated from them, as has been my allotment for the last seven years. But, I trust, I have no disposition to murmur or repine;—on the contrary, I am often favoured to feel that resignation of mind, which, as it is abode in, has for its companion a feeling of sweet peace, of more value and more to be desired than the wealth of nations.

No part of the journey leaves so much solid satisfaction when brought to remembrance, as my visit to Dublin. This was not a matter of choice, but undertaken and performed in the cross to my own natural will and inclination; and, although I am unworthy to be trusted

with a sling and a few small stones, yet was I permitted to see how my brethren fared, and to take their pledge,—a pledge of love, which I believe will be long treasured up in my heart, and cannot diminish; being impressed with a belief, that it sprung from an inexhaustible source, a fountain of eternal duration, constantly flowing through innumerable channels, but still full to the margin of mercy and truth. There are several dear Friends in that land, with whom I feel a precious unity; and whether they ever remember the stranger or not, he often thinks of them, with feelings which time and distance only serve to heighten.

From what I have said of Friends in Dublin, my dear friend must not suppose that those in England are forgotten, or that anything like a transfer of affection has taken place on my part. Such is the transcendent quality of true love, that whilst it embraces new objects, it does not lessen for those, on whom it has been long and deservedly fixed.

[In the next letter, he gives an account of the death of the Emperor Alexander in the south of Russia, and of the occurrences at the capital consequent upon that lamented event.]

To John Hipsley, Hull.

Twelfth Month 13*th*, 1825.

—— When the intelligence of the death of our much lamented and justly beloved Emperor was made public in the city, consternation soon spread among all ranks of the people. * * *

I was favoured with peaceful quiet and resignation on this mournful occasion, and felt but one desire—that the death of Alexander might have been a fair one; and we have the most indubitable proof that it was unattended with any of those horrible circumstances, which, in some instances, have terminated the existence of the crowned heads of this country. I have often put up a feeble petition, that the hand of violence might never be permitted to touch him; and although I cannot help deploring, with the many millions of Russia, the loss of such a man,—yet a secret joy triumphs over every selfish feeling, and raises in my heart a tribute of gratitude and praise to the great

Preserver of men, who hath been graciously pleased to remove him in so remarkable a manner, from this scene of conflict and trouble. We could scarcely have desired more than has been given: I believe it has been the lot of few monarchs to end their days, whilst in the meridian of power, in a retreat so quiet, and so distant from all the pageantry of a court: it may be said that he died in the bosom of his family.

—— It is very consoling to find, that his mind was so peaceful, as appears, when he was persuaded to take what is called the sacrament: it is probable that delirium came on afterwards, but towards the last he was perfectly sensible. On the morning of his death, the sun broke through the clouds, and shone into his room; when he remarked, 'how beautiful the weather is:'—and the manner in which he committed the Empress to the care of Prince Volchonsky, his faithful adjutant, although done without the assistance of words, plainly shows that he was collected, though deprived of speech.

From concurring circumstances of late date, my hope is greatly strengthened that he has exchanged an earthly crown for one immortal, that will never fade away. He had reigned about four months less than twenty-five years. The Russians say he was too mild, and too good for them. * *

This event will naturally bring about many changes. I have endeavoured to look round as to myself and family, but all is at present enveloped as in a cloud. Every thing here has been conducted quietly. The army have all sworn allegiance to Constantine.

First Month 1*st*, 1826.—Before finishing my letter, another proof of the uncertainty of all human affairs is handed to us. I shall insert the copy of a letter I received the day after the foregoing was written.

St. Petersburg, December 14*th*, 1825.

'Little did I think of giving you to-day such weighty news, as that of an accession to the throne of the Emperor Nicholas, who is proclaimed to-day; and we are going to take the accustomed oaths, as the Grand Duke Constantine has entirely renounced the crown. I have not read the manifesto; but those who have seen it say, that

amongst other things, the Emperor tells the nation, that he will reign as his brother did; and that his reign will be only a continuation of his brother's. The Ministe the Interior, whom I saw this moment, says that the Emperor has verbally assured them of the same. Let God's will be done on earth, as it is in heaven. Wishing you well, I am

'Most sincerely yours.'

This letter I received about two, P.M.:—before five o'clock, the scene was entirely changed, and rebellion most artfully contrived, had thrown off the mask. As the army about us had most willingly declared for Constantine, only ten days before, some hesitation in several regiments became visible. This moment seemed favourable for the wishes of some who were aiming at a general overthrow; and they artfully spread a report among the troops, that Constantine was only two hundred versts from hence, but was prevented from coming forward; and that the newly declared Emperor was only an usurper. This had the effect of drawing several large bodies of troops into the snare; and I believe many of these poor fellows considered they were only acting faithfully to the oath they had so recently taken: it was very evident they had no pre-concerted design against the government. However, an armed force collected in the neighbourhood of the Senate House, and were joined by a number not in military garb, and a mob of intoxicated rabble, who had been stirred up to act on the occasion. In vain did the new Emperor send to them, to endeavour to persuade them to peace and quietness. At last, the military governor, an old soldier and a popular character, went to harangue them; and might probably have prevailed, but the real plotters amongst them, fearing the soldiers would become reasonable, had the audacity to fire upon him. This poor Count Myloradovitch, who had been unhurt, it is said, in thirty-four engagements, was now mortally wounded. He rode off towards the Emperor, but soon fell upon his horse's neck: he was carried home in a sledge, and died in the night.

This circumstance led to a dreadful carnage. The Emperor was very unwilling to resort to force, and at

first a volley of blank cartridges was fired; but this only causing the rebels to advance, a fire of grape shot was opened upon them with terrible effect, followed by a charge of cavalry. As most of the rebels who were able fled towards the river, the cannon were pointed in that direction; and the Academy of Arts on the other side of the river was struck with the shot. The carnage in the neighbourhood of the Senate House was dreadful, but all was cleared away before morning, except the blood upon the snow, which bore testimony to the great slaughter of the preceding day. We cannot ascertain the number of poor creatures who were thus hurried into another world; it is believed, however, that several hundreds perished. The city barriers were immediately closed, and no person allowed to leave the city, in order to secure all those implicated in this diabolical plot: the fort is full of prisoners.

My feelings on this night were such, as no one need or would envy, except perhaps some of the wounded who were groaning in agony, exposed to the frost. The night was long and dark enough; but we were favoured to pass through it, without the slightest molestation, in quietness, and, I trust, in confidence.

To Richard Cockin, Doncaster.

Dated about Fifth Month 30th, 1826.

—— What a change a few months have produced in this country! The late reigning Empress has only survived her much lamented husband five months and fifteen days: she died at Beliof, between Taganrog and Kalouga, about 280 versts south of Moscow. Her death has been as private, as her life was retired and hidden from the world. She had arrived at Beliof much exhausted the preceding evening, and retired to rest pretty soon, and about eleven o'clock at night became seriously ill. Her physician was sent for, but from some unaccountable circumstance, could not be found. On her being informed of this, and that they were about to send off to some distance, where he was expected to be, she desired them to desist, saying 'it is of no consequence,' She then requested to be left alone; and nothing further transpired, until three o'clock in the morning, when her

confidential attendant went softly into her room, to see how she was, and found to her great astonishment, that nothing remained but the frail tabernacle; the countenance retained its usual composed and serene appearance, but the spirit had returned unto God who gave it. Her many virtues will long live in the memory of those who knew her worth; and although she has passed away as one almost unnoticed and unregarded, yet her memorial is on high, and will never perish. Her body is expected here about the middle of next month, and will be laid by the side of her late husband in the Fort. She had many enemies, but they were only those whose luxurious habits and vain inclinations were exposed and restrained by her humble, simple, and virtuous example. It may be said, she died generally beloved and regretted, and very deservedly so. Her decease took place on the 4th of Fifth Month, O. S.

To one of his Family.

Moscow Road, Ninth Month 13th, 1826, *O. S.*

My dear ———,

——— I have spent great part of this season on the bogs of Shoosharry, returning home only on Fourth and Seventh-day evenings, and leaving it again at noon on Fifth, and in the morning on Second-days. I hope that all the drains will be cut before the winter drives us from the work; but we look for an early winter after so unusually long and hot a summer. The damage done by fire in the course of the summer is incalculable. The woods have been on fire for fifty versts together; in the neighbourhood of Ijora many regiments of soldiers have been employed, in endeavouring to save the towns and villages: several of the latter have been destroyed by the devouring element. At times, we were alarmed for our own buildings:—in vain we tried to arrest the progress of the fire, when at a considerable distance from us; but this could not be done, as the heat and smoke prevented the people from working when near it:—so that we were obliged to content ourselves with forming a defence, in advance of the fire, at a sufficient distance from the buildings that the flames might not endanger them. This was done by removing the tree-roots and sods, in short, every

thing of a combustible nature, from the surface down to the clay, in the shape of a semicircle, about three-quarters of a mile in length, to the edge of which the fire actually came. Even with this precaution, it was necessary to station watchmen, as the sparks flew over the barrier and set the earth on fire in several places; and our safety depended on extinguishing these places immediately, for if they had once gained strength, it would have been impossible to check them, as every pool in the neighbourhood was dried up by the long continuance of heat and drought. For several weeks we were threatened by this formidable enemy; but were favoured to escape without accident.

—— It is very pleasant to us to hear that the coronation has been attended with great satisfaction, far more than was expected. The unexpected appearance of the Grand Duke Constantine at Moscow seems to have diffused quietness over the whole empire. The generality of the people had an idea, that it was without his full concurrence, that his younger brother was proclaimed Emperor. We have heard from very good authority, that the first interview between the two brothers was very affecting; the behaviour of the Emperor was truly amiable and conciliatory, whilst that of Constantine gave ample proof of a noble and generous mind.

As they rode together through the streets of Moscow on horseback, the population of the place were witnesses of the cordiality that subsisted between them; and shouts of joy resounded through the city. In the course of a day or two, a review of the troops took place. The army has been most of all dissatisfied, and were generally of the mind, that Constantine had been forced aside to make way for his brother; but when the two brothers made their appearance in front of the troops, these were fully satisfied, and their shouts of approbation continued an unreasonable length of time. It is now generally supposed, that things will go on smoothly, and that every spark of sedition will be extinguished; the Emperor will begin to feel himself more firmly seated on his throne, and will doubtless assume a more decided tone of character: it will soon be seen what he is; from his abilities, much may be expected that is good. Much blood was shed on his acces-

sion to the throne; and it is really wonderful how his life was spared, when surrounded by violent and desperate men. I most earnestly desire that he may lastingly remember his then humiliating situation, and may be disposed to keep near to that power, which so evidently and remarkably directed his steps, and delivered him from the hands of his enemies.

To Richard Cockin, Doncaster.

Twelfth Month 14th, 1826, *O. S.*

—— In vain would it be for me, to attempt to recount the multiplied favours and blessing, that have been showered down upon us, since I last wrote. Perhaps, some might be disposed to think many of these circumstances too trifling to be noticed, or if noticed at all, only as things which happen in the common course of events. But upon my mind they make a different impression; and I cannot but record them as so many additional instances of the mercy and protecting care of Him, without whose knowledge a single sparrow cannot fall to the ground.

—— I regret it is not in my power to gratify thee with any information as to our future prospects; but things remain to the present time in the most clouded uncertainty. My dear friends and my native land are often the subjects of my thoughts. Sometimes I cannot help cherishing a hope that I may once more be permitted to return with my beloved family, and pitch a tent for a short time among them; but I find it will not do to dwell much upon what I earnestly desire, as it has only a tendency to unsettle the mind, and disrobe it of that peaceful resignation, which I can thankfully acknowledge is often my favoured portion.

The nature of our employment, and the wide field of labour before our view, in which at times it appears as if we should be called to assist, create a feeling of dismay; but again circumstances occur, which for a season, darken any probability of this being the case: so that which ever way I look, it is but toiling in vain. "He that abideth of old," only knows what is in store for us; and unto Him I commit myself and my all: well knowing from long experience, that a way can be opened, when perhaps there may be less expectation than at other times.

To John Hipsley, Hull

First Month 29*th*, 1827.

—— The Emperor Nicholas is indefatigable in his exertions to support the interests of his people throughout the empire, by strictly insisting upon the most rigid adherence to justice in all causes; which has given great satisfaction. His leisure hours, at least those absolutely necessary for exercise, he makes subservient to the general good, and is daily going about to inspect the hospitals and other public institutions, in the most minute manner, which has already had a salutary effect.

I may be mistaken, but I think that he is almost the first crowned head that ever entered the doors of a prison, with the benevolent object of inquiring into, and improving its state: this he has lately done, and not in a superficial manner; having, in many instances, entered closely into the examination of particular cases with great interest, and caused many to rejoice in being set free. This work is carried on without any parade; he just steps into a sledge with a single horse, and no one knowing where he is going, of course there can be no preparation made to receive him; in this manner all are taken by surprise, and the real state of things fairly developed, whether rough or smooth. He has a great work before him; and stands in need of that wisdom, which is better than rubies, to direct and support him in such an arduous and responsible station.

To Sarah Smith, Sheffield.

Twelfth Month 15*th*, 1828.

—— Thou art probably aware, that we have changed our residence to a greater distance from the city, than where we lived for the last eight years. This has had the unavoidable effect of dividing our family, and depriving us of the constant society of each other, which is a privilege we have greatly enjoyed. From the extent of our work, it was necessary, in order to keep all the branches in proper motion, to station some one in a central position, and William being in all respects the most capable, remains at that post. Although thus circumstanced, and living in a most dreary situation, we are favoured with resignation and contentment of mind; which sweeten the cup of solitude, and make the frozen desert a peaceful

abode. The longest span of life is short; and to such as like myself cannot look forward to the addition of many years, it is of little moment where we are scattered: and if we bring into view the humiliating situation of the Lord of life and glory, who "had not where to lay his head," a quiet dwelling place in any part of the habitable earth is more than a poor sinful mortal is entitled to, and much more than he deserves.

I am now more than a month entered into my 58th year; and I think that thou, my dear friend, art as far, or perhaps farther advanced towards the end of the race. I often look round at my contemporaries, particularly those whom I have long known and loved; but am placed beyond the practicability of any thing like comparing notes with them, on a subject in which we are all so deeply interested, and on which nothing less is depending than the prize immortal. If a sensibility of weakness, and a consciousness of utter unworthiness, under a feeling of increasing bodily infirmity, can entitle any one to boast, then I think it is allowable for me; for truly I am a very poor creature every way. But when I contemplate the glorious gospel dispensation, and reflect that a thoughtless being like myself, nurtured in the very school of vice and folly, should ever have been brought, in any degree, under its benign and saving influence,—it is marvellous in my view, and none other than "the Lord's doing." It is easy for me to say, what can I render to Him? But the question is, what have I rendered to Him? Here is an appalling query indeed,—the consideration of which, makes me shrink into nothingness, and into fear of having fallen short of making an adequate return, not only of humble adoration, gratitude, and praise for such amazing mercy, but lest dedication and obedience have not kept pace with the knowledge that has been from time to time bestowed upon me. At times, a ray of comfort is permitted to glimmer on my drooping mind for a short duration; but soon it is again veiled by self-abasing clouds of suspense, which darken the whole atmosphere of hope.

But although I have thus to go mourning on my way, yet a testimony lives in my heart to the all-sufficiency of that Divine grace, by which "I am what I am,"—though nothing but a worm; and with my latest breath, I would

commend all mankind to seek after this pearl of endless treasure.

No prospect of liberation* yet appears; perhaps it is too much longed for; and the will of the creature must be slain, that the will of the Lord may be done, and His name glorified.

Farewell, my dear friend; may heavenly goodness encircle, and comfort, and strengthen thy heart.

To David Mallinson, Sheffield.

Shoosharry, Tenth Month 11th, 1829.

—— The removal of my beloved sister, Barbara Hoyland, has been very affecting, and the more so, because our situation precluded our hearing of the awful event, until several weeks after it took place. Mary Hustler has kindly transcribed and forwarded to me the expressions which dropped from her lips at different times during her last days, many of which are deeply instructive. Her trials and afflictions have been many; but there is strong consolation in believing, that they have worked for her "a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory;" and that through the mercy of God in Christ Jesus, her tribulated spirit now resteth in the joy of its Lord. What poor short-sighted creatures we are! I little thought, when parting with my dear sister in Liverpool, on my return from Ireland, that it was a last farewell: but I desire to bow in humble resignation to His Divine will, which is ever excellent; and reverently and thankfully to bless His holy name, who by the powerful operation of His all-sufficient grace made her what she was.

What a variety of changes we have both witnessed, since children together under the parental roof, from which we were severed at an early age, by the loss of both father and mother, and left in an orphan state to struggle in a wide and wicked world. Many years have now passed away, since we found a shelter in the bosom of our highly favoured Society; but still changes have been our portion, though of different kinds, yet all permitted in wondrous mercy, and ought to be sufficient abundantly to show, that here there is "no continuing

* From his engagement in Russia.

city." My beloved sister is now beyond the reach of conflict, where pain and sorrow cannot come; and as she drew near the boundary of time, she was mercifully supported by the everlasting arm of strength, that sure foundation and eternal rock, Christ Jesus, in whom she had believed. She is gone! but I am left a little longer, a living monument of the same matchless mercy: and although encompassed by human frailty, and conscious of manifold deficiencies, yet I am enabled to testify for the encouragement of others, that beyond the shadow of a doubt it is no "cunningly devised fable" which we have followed, but a glorious reality; of which I feel more and more anxious that all should come to the saving knowledge, and partake of the blessed and peaceful enjoyment thereof.

Since taking up my pen to address thee, I have felt particularly interested on behalf of the dear young people of thy family, with whom my heart seems interwoven, with an affectionate solicitude, which words fail to convey to its full extent; that they may unceasingly labour to know and experience for themselves individually, the secret working of that power in their hearts, which is Divine; and may be willing to dwell under its purifying influence, until all things are subdued and brought into subjection to His holy will, whose exclusive right it is to rule and reign in the hearts of the children of men:—"of the increase of His government and peace there shall be no end;" for the kingdom of Christ Jesus is an everlasting kingdom, and the covenant made with the house of Jacob an everlasting covenant, universal and ever new, in and through its blessed and holy Mediator. There can be no stronger proof of sincerity in those who desire to fear, love, and serve a good and gracious God, than their perseveringly endeavouring to wait upon Him, in a watchful humble state of mind; not only at set times and on particular occasions, but making it at all times the chief business of their lives. His unslumbering eye is ever open to regard the most feeble effort of the weakest child: every gracious promise will be fulfilled for His great name's sake;—they shall renew their strength,"—"they shall not be ashamed;"—the cry of wrestling nature will be heard on high, by Him "that speaketh in righteous-

ness, and is mighty to save," and "able to deliver." He will deliver from the horrible pit of sin, and from the things of time, which cling like the adhesive miry clay:—yea, He will set their feet upon an everlasting rock, against which the combined power of darkness in vain may beat:—He will establish their goings, and put the new song of praise into the mouth of all who diligently and patiently wait for Him. The heart is the field in which the hidden treasure lies; and such is its inestimable value, that nothing short of all that a man hath, can purchase it. All must be surrendered to obtain the heavenly pearl: the whole is required without reserve. And what is all that we possess, when compared with the stupendous act of suffering love, that purchased our redemption? it lies in a small compass, yet it is capable of frustrating the Divine intention, and therefore is of vast importance; and I believe the unsubjugated will of the creature comprehends the whole. Not a word or an action, which fills the catalogue of the deeds of the body, can be conceived and performed without the assent and will of the creature,—all have their origin in thought; and therefore the ever-blessed Master at once pointed out a remedy against every temptation to which we are liable, in the general injunction,—"What I say unto you, I say unto all, watch." Here then is the Christian's only tower of safety, and the path that leads to prayer. Oh! that I could induce all to this engagement of mind: the tendency of every thought would be discovered by the light which shineth in darkness; whatsoever is earthly and sensual, and even the tendency of the heart in the natural state, would be exposed;—"the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eye, and the pride of life," would be clearly distinguished to be "not of the Father, but of the world,—which "passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God, abideth for ever." Those who steadily and carefully maintain the watch, will be strengthened to suppress every intrusive thought, and will be more and more placed in a capacity to wait; for there cannot be a true waiting, without a ceasing from our own imaginations, that God may be all in all: in whose presence only there is life, and love, and peace, and joy,—the blessed reward of all those who fear, serve, and love Him, in his inward appearance.

I was not intending to say so much, when I began with this subject, but I think my pen could not be employed in a better cause, or for a better Master: at the same time believing, that it will be accepted in the same love, that prompted me to write it.

To one of his Children.

Twelfth Month 12*th*, 1829.

—— To hear of thy welfare in those things that are of eternal consequence, is the principal desire of my heart for thee; without this, worldly prosperity will avail nothing in the great day of account. But little is enough, when our desires are bounded by moderation; and I am fully persuaded that no good and necessary thing will be withheld from them that walk uprightly. As for myself, I can truly say, that when I began business, I had no artificial wants, and my real wants were very few. I never studied to keep up appearances, and be like other people; all around me knew that I had but small means, and I made no other pretensions. I endeavoured, I think, to the best of my ability to seek the Lord, and positively did not look beyond a sufficiency of food and raiment; and although an utter stranger to business in every shape, yet my way was made prosperous; though perhaps what I thought prosperity would be despised by most in the present day, and probably by many in that day also.

CHAPTER VIII.

VISITS ENGLAND WITH HIS WIFE IN 1830—RELIGIOUS ENGAGEMENTS THERE — 1831. CHOLERA AT PETERSBURG—EPISTLE TO FRIENDS OF YORK QUARTERLY MEETING, 1832.

This year (1830) the health of our dear mother having again failed considerably, she was recommended to pass the ensuing winter in England; and our father having concluded to accompany her, they came over together in the autumn. The interval of leisure thus afforded, was not suffered to pass unimproved. Besides the attendance of the various meetings that fell in his way, he wrote and published, during the winter, a pamphlet entitled *An affectionate Address to the Members of the Church of England;* which it is believed was widely circulated at the time.

In the First Month 1831, he applied for and obtained a certificate from his Monthly Meeting, enabling him to visit parts of Devon, Cornwall, and the Scilly Isles.

In the former part of this engagement, he was joined by Samuel and Maria Fox. They visited together most of the meetings in Devonshire, and he accompanied them in a visit to some of the families of Friends in Plymouth. In a letter to his children, dated 20th of Third Month, he says:—

In the evening, was at a public meeting, held in the Bethel at Devonport, at the request of Samuel and Maria Fox. It was well filled; and after the people were informed of the object of our meeting together, great solemnity prevailed over the assembly. Samuel Fox had to break the silence with the voice of prayer. I suppose almost the whole congregation consisted of persons connected with the sea-faring life, with their families. My heart was greatly enlarged towards them, as companions and shipmates in the voyage of life; having the Lord God, merciful and gracious, and abundant in goodness

and truth, for our commander; and an all-sufficient Saviour and holy Redeemer for a heavenly pilot: who would never leave His vessel, but would safely conduct us through all the dangers and difficulties of time, and would remain with us through the never-ending ages of eternity. Towards the close, I had to call the attention of the meeting to myself, as an example for their encouragement, that none need despair; for in me they might behold a living monument of the Lord's everlasting mercy, and the triumph of Divine grace over human nature in its most depraved state;—in one, who, like themselves, had been cradled on the ocean, whom the everlasting arm had oftimes been stretched out to save, when the briny wave had nearly prevailed against him. Maria Fox concluded the meeting in supplication. The people seemed in no hurry to leave the place, many coming to shake hands in a very friendly way. By what I have said, you will have some idea what sort of a meeting it was; and I think you cannot refrain from joining with me in the grateful tribute of admiration, gratitude and praise, to Him who sitteth upon the flood," who "sitteth King for ever;"—who only can give strength unto His people,—who will bless the provision of Zion, and satisfy her poor with bread,—and fill with that peace, which the topaz of Ethiopia cannot equal in value.

He was accompanied to the Scilly Islands by John Stephens of Penzance, to whom he expressed himself under great obligations for his kindness and attention. They were cordially received by many of the inhabitants; and the meetings appointed among them were generally well attended.

After returning to Penzance he concluded his visit to the meetings of Friends in Cornwall and Devonshire: and crossed from Bristol to Dublin in time for the Yearly Meeting in that city. In a letter to his children, dated Fifth Month 3rd, he writes:

——We have had a very solemn Yearly Meeting, which continued nearly the whole of last week. The dreadful situation of the people of Ireland seems to have created very general apprehension in the minds of Friends, and I think very justly: in some counties open rebellion is the order of the day, and some bare-faced murders have been

committed in broad daylight. These things, and the altogether appalling signs of the times, have combined to bring the minds of many into great humility and abasement of self. In addition to these outward circumstances, the general call from the ministry has been in effect, 'How long will ye see the standard, and hear the sound of the trumpet? How long will you hear, and see, and disregard the loving-kindness of the Lord?' It was rather remarkable, that the strangers present were all from places distant from each other; and yet all uniformly had to raise a similar language, and to warn the revolting, backsliding sons and daughters in our Society, of a day that is fast hastening upon them, that would shake every building not upon the true foundation—the eternal Rock of ages, Christ Jesus our Lord. I trust the call will sink deep into the minds of many, and bring into thoughtfulness, about their own soul's peace, such characters as the great Apostle describes, when he says,—"of whom I told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ."

After attending the Yearly Meeting in London, Daniel Wheeler returned to Petersburg in the Sixth Month. At the time of his arrival there the cholera was raging with great virulence. The following extracts from his letters refer to this awful visitation.

To Sarah Backhouse, York.

Plains of Shoosharry, near Petersburg, Eighth Month 31st, O. S., 1831.

From a variety of circumstances which occurred both before reaching the Sound, and after leaving it, our suspicions were awakened as to the state of things, in regard to the fatal disease at the place to which we were bending our course; but the weather threw us out of the track of the homeward-bound ships, and prevented our getting the least information till we entered the Gulf of Finland. From all the accounts we received from the vessels then spoken with, there seemed no doubt, but that the cholera was raging both at Cronstadt and Petersburg; and the nearer we approached to these places, the more alarming the reports became. * *

My heart warms with the remembrance of the sustain-

ing evidence, with which our minds were favoured in the midst of the scene of terror that awaited us. My poor wife was greatly supported, and only in one instance expressed any thing like discouragement, and that was at the thought of my having to expose myself amongst the people on shore. But it was not a time for any one to flinch, particularly when mercifully favoured, as was my happy portion, to banish all fear, and not experience a single desire to arise to be any where but where my lot was cast.

On landing, some difficulties arose from a new law respecting passengers' luggage: the captain proposed applying to the British Consul for advice. I felt averse to this; but nothing else suggesting, it was attempted. It was soon ascertained that no person was admitted into his office, and that letters, &c., were received with a pair of tongs, for fear of infection. It seemed as if nothing was to be achieved by any contrivance of our own; but the very barrier which at first appeared insurmountable, proved to be the channel through which relief and comfort were to flow. This new law occasioned my having to go to a particular department of the Custom House, when I was accosted by a stranger with a letter in his hand, who asked if it was for me. The measure was now filled; the tide which had flowed in such an appalling current, was at its height, and beginning to turn. The letter was in dear William's handwriting; and I had the joy of finding that my children had wholly escaped the ravages of this awful disease; which was considered to be at its height, just about the time of our arrival.

I hastened on board again with my letter, and will leave thee to judge of what followed, and to partake of the joy which once more we were permitted to share together, —I hope with humble gratitude. I was on shore again until late; but every thing moved tardily, and no wonder, when the judgments of the Almighty were at the very doors of most, in so striking a manner. In this small town one hundred and fifteen died that day. * * * We were at length favoured to reach our abode, and to find all well, to our mutual rejoicing,—such was the abundant and unmerited mercy bestowed upon us.

To Richard Cockin, Doncaster.

Shoosharry Establishment, Ninth Month 22nd, 1831, *O.S.*

—— I have heard through a channel that cannot be doubted, that on the day we landed, eight hundred died in Petersburg. The published accounts state the total loss throughout the empire at fifty-two thousand; and, we may be sure, that this is a very moderate calculation indeed. Through mercy, this calamity seems nearly overpast; and how should I rejoice if it was in my power to say, that the inhabitants have learned righteousness, whilst the "judgments of the Lord" have been so signally manifested in the earth.

It is really astonishing what a degree of ignorance prevails, or what cause can have operated to deceive the people, many of whom at this day do not believe that such a complaint has ever existed; but suppose the mortality has been occasioned by poison administered by persons in the employ of the Poles. This delusion has itself caused a waste of human life. It would of course help to exasperate the public mind against the Poles; but this was not all, for it caused the lower orders to rise, and in their blind zeal, it is said, people were actually destroyed on suspicion of being paid agents: the doctors were implicated in this suspicion, and I believe at least one was killed by the rabble. Some of these objects of suspicion were seized and searched, and compelled to swallow any article found upon them, supposed to be poison, in order to ascertain their guilt. We heard of one on whom a smelling bottle containing strong French salts was found; the test in this case, it is said, proved fatal. In another instance, the owner of a set of castors was compelled to swallow the contents; but by taking an emetic, he escaped material suffering. The rabble broke into some of the hospitals, and speedily liberated the patients: in one instance, they threw the doctor out of the window; he escaped being much hurt, and was actually carried up stairs and thrown out a second time, and fell a sacrifice to their fury. The confusion was at one time so great, that some people are said to have died of fear, and many fled from the neighbourhood. Others shut themselves up to escape this terrible malady, but in repeated

instances, those who took the greatest precautions, were the first carried off.

We cannot wonder at every effort being used on the part of the government, to endeavour to check the progress of the disease; but these efforts were not always well devised or executed. The police very improperly took up every man whom they suspected of having the complaint, and carried him off to an hospital, where, in spite of all he could say, he was immediately treated as a patient, and many such, perhaps from afterwards taking the complaint, never came out again alive. This treatment exasperated the people to such a degree, that they broke through all bounds, as they thought, in self-defence. One of our men was taken up, charged with having the disease; in vain he declared that he was in perfect health,—nothing would serve but his going to the hospital, where he was forthwith treated as a patient; but was released from his perilous situation by the multitude getting possession of the hospital, when he availed himself of the opportunity of escape, and returned to work. With a view to prevent the contagion from spreading, the dead were hastily put into coffins, and it is very possible that some were coffined before they were actually deceased,—of course unintentionally. However, some coffins were detected with living bodies in them; so that altogether the scene of confusion scarcely ever had its parallel.

Shortly after we arrived at Cronstadt, my attention was directed to a large open lighter, full of men and horses, crowded in all positions. These people were in the act of flying from the infection, hoping to reach the other side of the gulf, and get off to the villages up the country. I think I never before saw such a closely stowed cargo of men and beasts, in all the course of my pilgrimage.

To Friends of York Quarterly Meeting.

Near Petersburg, First Month 25th, 1832.

Under a renewed sense of the Lord's manifold and tender mercies, which, to His praise and to His glory be it spoken, have compassed us about "as with a shield," since we last saw each other; my soul feels bound thus to recognize the good hand that has led us, and to salute

L. of C.

my dear brethren and sisters, in a feeling of that love which cannot change: earnestly desiring that "grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, may be multiplied to them;" causing the hearts of the faithful to rejoice,—and joy, gladness, and thanksgiving to abound amongst them.

Although far separated from each other as to the outward, yet such is the glorious privilege of the least living member of the true church universal, that nothing can separate, or prevent us from standing fast in the one Holy Spirit, striving together in one mind, for the faith of the gospel;—"till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ." For assuredly, my beloved friends, a day of trial is approaching, yea, hastening upon the nations, when nothing short of an individual heartfelt knowledge of Him, in whom we profess to believe, will stand unshaken by the storm.

Great is the solicitude I feel on behalf of our highly favoured religious Society, that it may be preserved immovable upon this its ancient and sure foundation, Jesus Christ—"Christ in you the hope of glory;" which never did, and never will, fail those, who in simplicity believe, and faithfully build thereon, nothing doubting. By diligently maintaining the watch in that holy light, bestowed in redeeming love on every individual of the human race, the snares of the insidious adversary, although laid in the most insinuating manner, will be detected and broken; the specious guise of a false religion itself will be penetrated. This has assuredly slain its thousands, who, dazzled and distracted by creaturely activity and excitement, have thus been corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ. "Watch ye therefore, and pray always; that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man." Blessed and holy injunction,—never out of season, —never more needed!

We may feel lamentably conscious of unworthiness, weakness, and incapacity from our manifold backslidings, to come up, "to the help of the Lord against the mighty," or to unveil the subtle workings of the mystery of iniquity

to the sight of others. These feelings are painful; and how great is the need of circumspection under them, lest, in the impatience of our spirits, heightened as this too often is, by the ill-advised example and counsel of those about us, we should attempt to stay the ark with unsanctified and unauthorized hands; or lest we should countenance to our own condemnation willings and runnings, on the part of those with whom we may stand connected, which, however specious in themselves, nevertheless contribute most essentially and insidiously to promote the kingdom of antichrist, already, alas! extensive in the earth.

Frequently am I brought under appalling apprehensions for us, as a people, sought out and chosen of the Lord: for had we followed the footsteps of our honourable predecessors in religious profession, who bore the burden and heat of a day of deep suffering, in the faithful support, in their original brightness, of those principles which they transmitted to us,—the spiritual beauty of the gospel church might have shone forth even through us, with a splendour which the different professors of the Christian name, could neither have gainsayed nor resisted. And it is awfully impressed upon my mind, I might almost say, it is given me awfully to believe, that if the "world, and the things of the world," which "are not of the Father," had not stolen away our hearts from His love, the glad tidings of that gospel, which is indeed "the power of God unto salvation," would, long ere this, have been proclaimed in remote, in heathen portions of the habitable globe, by instruments raised up from amongst us, duly prepared and clothed with the true, baptizing authority of the Lord Jesus; whose "inheritance is the heathen, and the uttermost parts of the earth his possession." He alone can endue His messengers with "power from on high," in His name to open the eyes of the spiritually blind, to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God. Mark, then, the awful consequences of our short-comings as a people; and let us tremble, lest God should visit our iniquity upon us; and the awful language should be sounded in our ears:—"The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation or people bringing forth the fruits thereof."—"Watch ye,

therefore," and remember, "and pray always;" for "the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God;" what then "shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God!"

"Fear, and the pit, and the snare are upon thee, O! inhabitant of the earth!" from which nothing but a Saviour's all-powerful arm can extricate and deliver. All are involved in the momentous consequences; yet it is an individual work, and admits of no delay. Then, dear friends of every age and of every class, let us hasten to it in earnest: let us "humble ourselves under the mighty hand of God," even to the state of little children; and turn inward to his pure unflattering witness, which cannot deceive, or be deceived. Let us accomplish a diligent search, and patiently examine how far those indispensable conditions are submitted to on our part, without which none can follow the blessed Jesus. Where is that self-denial and the daily cross He enjoins? Are we denying ourselves those gratifications of time and sense, which nourish sin, and keep alive in us the evil propensities of fallen nature? Have we taken up that daily cross, and offered all to Him. "who died for us and rose again?" It is not giving up this or that particular thing that will suffice; a full surrender of the will must be made to Him, "whose right it is to reign." Let none plead for disobedience in what they may think little things, on the ground of their being so. If such they really are, they are the more easily parted with; and our tenacity in wishing to reserve them, assuredly indicates that they are of more importance in our practical estimation than we may be disposed to allow. Let no man deceive himself;—unqualified obedience is the necessary condition of discipleship. Without it we cannot be consistent followers of our Lord; and if not followers of Him, we cannot serve Him, be where He is, nor learn of Him that meekness and lowliness of heart, which draw down heavenly blessings and regard, and which he alone can bestow.

As the sorrowful declension which has so marred the beauty of our religious Society, may be traced to departing from this heavenly indwelling principle of light, life, and love; so our restoration to primitive purity can only

be effected by returning unto the Lord with full purpose of heart, in the depths of humility and self-abasement:—yea, my friends, nothing less than this will do. We must deny ourselves, take up our daily cross, and follow Him, who is "holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens;"—ever mighty to save, and to deliver; and who will deliver out of every distress the soul that in sincerity seeketh Him.

Come brother—come sister—come all my dear friends; let no earthly consideration whatever be suffered to hinder this important work: for "the night is far spent, the day is at hand; let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light;" that we may no longer bring forth fruit whereof we are ashamed, —for the end of those things is death; that we may "be strong in the Lord, and in the power of His might, to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. Let us "pray always, with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, watching thereunto, with all perseverance; striving together in one mind for the faith of the gospel, even for that faith which worketh by love, purifieth the heart, and giveth victory over the world. Thus shall we indeed be found with "our loins girded about, and our lights burning, and we ourselves like unto men who wait for their lord, that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately; even unto Him who said—"Behold I stand at the door and knock, if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me." Then "lift up your heads, O ye gates! even lift them up ye everlasting doors! and the King of glory shall come in. Who is this King of glory? The Lord of hosts, He is the King of glory."

In the love of the gospel, I remain your affectionate friend and brother,

DANIEL WHEELER.

CHAPTER IX.

PROSPECT OF DISTANT RELIGIOUS SERVICE—RESIGNS HIS APPOINTMENT IN RUSSIA—SAILS FOR ENGLAND, 1832—OBTAINS CERTIFICATES FOR RELIGIOUS SERVICE IN THE SOUTH SEA ISLANDS, ETC.,—DECEASE OF HIS WIFE—ILLNESS OF HIS CHILDREN—JOURNEY TO RUSSIA, IN 1833—RETURN TO ENGLAND—SAILS FOR THE SOUTH SEAS—DETENTION AT THE ISLE OF WIGHT.

[About this time, under a prospect of distant religious service, our dear father believed it right to resign his appointment under the Russian government,* and to repair to his native country. The commencement and progress of this movement are alluded to in the following extracts from his letters.]

To John Hipsley, Hull.

Seventh Month 5th, 1832, *O. S.*

—— I hinted to thee some time back, the probability of a change being about to take place, as to our prospects in this country; which is now so far developed, as to enable me to inform thee, with some little certainty, how things are going on.

* The land placed under Daniel Wheeler's care in 1818 consisted chiefly of certain parcels in the immediate vicinity of Petersburg, the cultivation of which by private enterprize appeared impracticable, on account of their barrenness, or their marshy nature. At the time of D. W.'s departure in 1832, about three thousand English acres were in full cultivation, on part of which fifteen farms had been established, varying in extent from thirty-five to one hundred-and-five acres each. About two thousand seven hundred acres more had been drained, the cultivation being either left to other hands, or was in progress, when D. W. resigned his appointment. Besides the improvement thus effected in the neighbourhood of the capital, the most satisfactory evidence of the utility of the undertaking had been afforded, by the extensive adoption of various implements and methods of culture, heretofore unknown in Russia; and by the consideration which agriculture and rural economy in general had obtained. The suggestion of letting out land to *free* tenants, had not met with all the success that could have been desired.

For many months past, it has clearly appeared to be my duty to relinquish my engagements in this land; and as way has from time to time opened, I have gradually moved forward under this apprehension; and have been mercifully, peacefully, and abundantly confirmed in this step, by the difficulties, which at first appeared too mountainous to be overcome, having shrunk into insignificant mole-hills, as the time approached to encounter them. Now every obstacle seems to be removed: I have, I think, proceeded throughout, as things were opened before me, consulting with my beloved family, as each succeeding step has been taken; and in every instance, what has been proposed to them, has found a place in their minds, and been assented to. To break up all at once an establishment so extensive as that in which I have been engaged, would be attended with serious loss and inconvenience; and when the unbounded confidence which has been reposed in us is taken into view, extra care and caution seem the more needful, that there should be no unhandsome conduct to complain of; and I trust that I have always been anxious to avoid everything in the smallest degree calculated to cast a shade upon our religious Society, the principles of which, I have good reason for believing, are held in considerable estimation at this day by many high in office, as well as by others who have had more frequent intercourse with us. After stating undisguisedly my true motive for wishing to retire, it was proposed that my eldest son should succeed me as head of this concern; and that in all respects everything else should remain on its original footing.

Although this outline seems to occupy but a small space on paper, it has, from first to last, taken about seven months to bring all the particulars to bear; but the Ukase (or imperial edict) is now actually signed.

I have frequently mentioned having arrived on the same day, when coming here from England, viz. the 3rd of Seventh Month, O. S.; and now it has come to pass, without the possibility of any contrivance, that on that very same day I am liberated from Russia. I have already had a parting and affecting interview with Prince Galitzin: he particularly stipulated that I should write to him, saying, 'What is good for your soul, is good for

mine.' I feel thankful in being able to say, that there is no perceptible alteration in him, after an acquaintance of fifteen years. He has ordered a certificate to be prepared for me in English, for the satisfaction of my friends, which he will sign on behalf of the Emperor.*

But although things seem to have been so far set in order, as to enable me to leave this country in a comfortable manner; yet the trial of faith, and patience, and of every affectionate feeling, has still to be passed through, as regards my dear wife and family here: for though the way is clearly seen and open for my going to England, yet I have not the slightest prospect of any settled residence there; but from the impressions which have been sealed upon my mind, by day and night for many months past, very different scenes are open before me. As I have from the first, made my wife acquainted with the uncertainty to which I am looking forward, she feels best satisfied to remain, for the present at least, in this country.

I have sometimes thought, as so great a willingness has been wrought in my mind to part with every earthly thing, that perhaps, when all was settled as to outward affairs, it might be only as a preparation for quitting this scene of conflict altogether: but I have been enabled to look forward to this result, with the same calmness and resignation, should it be the will of Him who hath done so great things for me, and shown me the path of life; whose excellency is over Israel, and who giveth strength and power to His people, to praise and "glorify" Him, even "in the fires."

[Soon after the date of the foregoing, he took leave of his family, and set sail for England:—the following letter is written when on the point of quitting the port of Cronstadt.]

To his Wife.

Cronstadt Mole, Seventh Month 20th, 1832, *O. S.*

My dearest Jane,

—— I cannot, of course, have much to communicate as to fresh events, the time is so short since thou and the

* Prince Alexander Galitzin; died at an advanced age in the autumn of 1844.

rest of my dear family have been removed from my sight: I have, however, abundant cause to magnify that never-failing arm of power, which has so marvellously supported us through a dispensation, not of an every-day sort; and which still continues to preserve in that lowly quiet of mind, which subjects the will of the creature to that of the Almighty Creator,—even to the binding of the sacrifice as to the horns of the altar, without reserving any thing which might, like the "bleating of the sheep, and the lowing of the oxen," tend to self-condemnation, or open a door for reproach and accusation, wherein the enemy could exult or rejoice.

I regretted to find thou hadst been writing so late the night I left home; although it was very consoling to me to receive thy note, which I did not read till this morning, as I was not aware the packet contained any thing for me. It has been indeed a trying circumstance for a long time past to me, whenever I have looked forward to taking my departure from thee, although I have endeavoured to keep it wholly to myself; but I am comforted in a belief that has been graciously begotten for sometime past in my heart, that no less reward will await thee and our dear children, in thus fully resigning me in meek submission to the Divine will, than will be my portion, who have to leave you all, if found faithful to the farther unfoldings of it. A fresh evidence of this has been sealed upon my mind this morning, in an encouraging manner; and I do greatly desire that we may all, by keeping close to our heavenly Teacher in humble watchfulness, be favoured to witness that peace, which "the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep," alone can bestow.

I am thine, very affectionately,

D. W.

To Sarah Smith, Sheffield.

Ninth Month 3rd, 1832.

Through that loving-kindness which is better than life, I am once more permitted to announce myself upon British ground, favoured with the rich blessing of health.

It is six weeks this night, since I left my beloved wife

at Shoosharry, and, accompanied by my children, went down to Cronstadt to embark for Hull. My dear wife was as well as usual; but remained at home, as her going to Cronstadt would have been beyond her strength, particularly at a moment when every feeling was stretched as far as human nature could well bear; it would have been adding anguish to the cup of affliction and distress about to be handed. "Hath God forgotten to be gracious?" Nay verily, my dear friend; His mercies, unbounded as his love, enabled us to drink it with all its dregs, bitter indeed to flesh and blood: but if He hath blessed it, it will—it shall be blessed. I am very thankful in being able to tell thee, that my beloved wife was supported throughout the whole conflict in a marvellous manner; and evinced to her dear family a calmness, resignation, and fortitude, not often equalled in like painful circumstances, and but seldom surpassed; giving me up without a murmur, though without a glimpse of when we shall meet again. Surely the incense is still burning, and I humbly trust the sacrifice will be accepted by Him, who more than thirty-two years ago brought us together, and who now in the excellency of his will, is pleased to separate us again from each other; and who alone can sanctify to us and our dear children, this and every other trial yet in store for us, to His own praise and glory.

To his Wife.

Sheffield, Ninth Month 22nd, 1832.

I informed the Select Meeting held at Doncaster on the 12th (nineteen persons being present,) of the object which has brought me to England. I had also to bear a short testimony to the worth of dear William Smith, who it appeared had been appointed a representative for the last Quarterly Meeting; but was prevented attending it by the sickness which preceded his death. His loss has been greatly lamented by people of various denominations, and I think it may be safely said, he was one in whom there was no guile. His end was truly consoling; although scarcely able to move hand or foot from extreme debility, his mouth was filled with praises to the Lord; so that the physician who was present was quite struck with the scene. He was interred, I think, about six hours after-

wards,—almost immediate burial being insisted on in cases of cholera.

Next day, the Monthly Meeting was held; at the close of which, members were requested to keep their seats. I was strengthened to spread before Friends the prospect which had been presented to the view of my mind, of visiting in the love of the gospel the inhabitants of some of the islands of the Pacific Ocean, New South Wales, and Van Diemen's Land. I stood up with the words, "the cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it;"—and eventually laid the whole affair fully before the meeting. A very solid and solemn interval succeeded. I warned the meeting not to let affectionate sympathy bias their minds, and recommended that all should endeavour to sink down to the precious gift in every heart, that so a right judgment might be come to; seeing it was a subject in which much was implicated, not only as regarded myself and the Society at large, but the Truth itself. At length, a general expression of concurrence and near sympathy broke forth, from the head to the uttermost skirts of the garment, as the ointment poured forth, which draws down the heavenly blessing. Many vocal petitions ascended on the occasion, as well I believe as universal mental ones. It was, indeed, a memorable day, and one in which I most earnestly desire you may all be permitted to share, though far distant, through the influence of that Almighty power, which is omnipotent and omnipresent. A commitee was appointed to prepare a certificate for me.

York, Ninth Month 28th, 1832.

My dear Children,

——— On Fourth day, the 26th, the Quarterly Meeting was held. After a solemn meeting for worship, it was proposed that the women Friends should keep their seats. After the clerk had opened the meeting with the usual minute, and called over the names of the representatives from each Monthly Meeting, this large assembly again dropped into silence, which remained uninterrupted, until broken by myself nearly in the following words:—'No wonder if a trembling mortal feels appalled at approaching conflict, when the dear Son of God himself

exclaimed, "Father save me from this hour:"—for although we may at times feel a willingness to go with our Lord and Master, as unto prison and unto death; yet such is the frailty and weakness of human nature, that when the trying hour cometh, we are ready to deny Him. But we have a great and glorious High Priest, whose most precious attribute is mercy; who will not break the bruised reed, nor suffer it to be broken; who is touched with a feeling—a compassionate sense of our infirmities,—is mighty to save and to deliver, and who will deliver out of every distress, all those that put their trust and confidence in Him.' And thus, eventually, was laid the whole weight of the concern upon the shoulders of the Quarterly Meeting.

The meeting now began to feel the weight of the responsibility cast upon it, and again settled down in great solemnity. A considerable number of Friends expressed their unity and concurrence; and my dear wife and family had a full share in the prayers and sympathy of their friends, to my great rejoicing and thankfulness. After a full hour occupied in this manner, it was concluded that a committee should be appointed to express the sense of the meeting in an endorsement of my certificate.

Eleventh Month, 1832.

The conflict of mind which I had to pass through, early in the day that I had to stand before the Morning Meeting, is utterly undeclarable by the tongue of any mortal; and I could not at the time account for it: but I was afterwards favoured to see that this dispensation was highly needful for me. I stood up with the words,—"I have a baptism to be baptised with, and how am I straitened until it be accomplished;" adding, 'but the God of Israel is He that giveth strength and power to his people,—blessed be God.' I then proceeded to state, that my mind had been long preparing, in order to loosen me from every earthly occupation, and to wean me from every social tie, of which I had been blessed with more than an ordinary share; and that shortly after my return from this country last year, to a land of desolation and sorrow, my heart was at times filled with the love of God in a re-

markable manner;—that in one of those delightful seasons, a prospect was opened before me, the magnitude of which made human nature shrink. But He who has redeemed my life from destruction, and crowned me with loving-kindness and tender mercies, was graciously pleased to beget in me a willingness to go wheresoever He was pleased to lead. My engagements were at the time such, as seemed to preclude the possibility of my being extricated from them for this work; but the pathway was clearly defined, in which as I moved step by step, the mountains became mere mole-hills, and I was at length enabled to lay my concern before my own Monthly and Quarterly Meetings, &c. &c.: and that although some relief had been obtained by casting a share of the weight upon the shoulders of my Friends, yet the burden still remained with me day by day, and at intervals in the night season; desiring that a right judgment might be come to, whether this thing was of the Lord or not.

After a long pause, it was thought that the Morning Meeting could not set me at liberty, without knowing what I expected to do in those distant parts. To this I replied, that no specific line of duty was pointed out to me, in this early stage of the business; but that what had passed in my mind led to a belief, that I should have to turn the people "from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God,"—and to teach them that they lived, and moved, and had their being in that God, whom they worshipped, it was probable, as at a distance:—that as to the missionaries I might meet with, I could embrace them with open arms, as fellow-men, countrymen, and labourers in the same great work, although, perhaps in a different stage of it.

The certificate will show how the matter issued. The meeting ended in a truly solemn manner. Our dear aged friend William Rickman, was constrained to declare, that "the Truth reigned over all." Many prayers were put up for you all, as well as for myself and others who may be engaged to the same work.

[Shortly after this time, the intelligence of the death of our dear mother was received, and proved the more overwhelming from the absence of all previous intimation of

her illness. Her malady was fever, and though apparently of the mildest kind it terminated fatally in nine days. When these tidings arrived, our dear father was at the house of J. J. Gurney, near Norwich; where, during some weeks of indisposition, he was cared for with a tenderness of which he ever retained a grateful recollection. The announcement of the decease of our beloved mother is thus described by himself in a letter to his children.]

First Month 11*th*, 1833.—Some days ago, when dear Mary Gurney came to my bed-side (a sweet spirited Friend,) I told her, that I quite enjoyed the rest I was permitted to partake of; that I had been looking towards home, and had been favoured with a peaceful feeling respecting you all; that I did believe all was right, and in the ordering of the Master, or something to that effect. When she replied,—'it is a rest of preparation.' I do not recollect that she added more at that time. On the 9th instant, several letters were brought into my room, when I said,—'No letter from Petersburg?' to which I got no answer. In the evening, as I lay on a couch, J. J. Gurney adverted to the health of my family, hinting that later accounts than my own had been received. I heard it without much suspicion,—little expecting what was in store, and that a cup filled with the wine of astonishment was about to be handed to me. By degrees something more was unfolded; until I requested to know the whole that awaited me. But who can picture my distress and anguish of soul, when the awful reality was discovered? But the everlasting arms of mine Almighty helper were underneath to bear me up, that the waves of affliction should not overwhelm beyond the decreed limits, nor infringe upon the margin of mercy and compassion. After a time I was enabled to say, 'it is a bitter cup: but I accept it at the hand of the Lord; for I am sure there is a blessing at the bottom of it.' The whole letter was then read; and to my unspeakable comfort, I was enabled to perceive, that my peaceful feelings about you all were abundantly confirmed by a consoling evidence, that everlasting love and mercy had conspicuously covered the judgment-seat, even to a hair's breadth:—that the beloved and precious partner in all my joys and sorrows

for more than thirty-two years had passed, not from life to death, but from death unto life eternal;—and that my darling Charles and Jenny are yet spared, I humbly trust and pray, (whether their time here may be longer or shorter,) so to believe in the Lord Jesus Christ, as to be saved with an everlasting salvation.—And may we all be enabled to say in the language of the apostle, "I am crucified with Christ; nevertheless I live, yet not I, but Christ liveth in me; and the life that I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God; who loved me and gave himself for me:" that in the winding up of time, we may all be permitted to meet again, with the purified spirit now fled—of her we dearly loved, with palms and harps in our hands,—those emblems of victory and praise;—joining a numberless multitude in the never-ceasing anthem of "Hallelujah unto the Lord God and the Lamb, who liveth and reigneth for ever;" who giveth the victory, and to whom belong the praise and the glory!

I shall anxiously expect another letter.—I have been mercifully strengthened to say,—"the Lord gave, and the Lord hath taken away, blessed be the name of the Lord." Not a wish dares to intrude upon the peaceful resignation of my mind. I only regret that I had not a personal share in the general distress and conflict of the occasion.

[A long period of suspense and anxiety followed this heavy bereavement. His youngest daughter was alarmingly ill at the time of her mother's decease; and his sons William and Charles were attacked shortly afterwards,—the one with pulmonary disease,—the other with the fever which had already stricken down the parent, and was making fatal ravages all around. Each case in turn seemed a hopeless one; but through mercy, all were permitted to recover; and this season of deep affliction was so sanctified as to prove the harbinger of a brighter day in the spiritual experience of those of them who had hitherto known little experimentally of the work of Divine grace in the soul. The following letter refers to these circumstances.]

To one of his Children.

Stamford Hill, Second Month 20th, 1833.

My dear S.

—— All the part that I have seemed capable of performing during the turnings and overturnings of the Lord's holy hand upon us, has been, as it were, to turn my face to the wall, and labour after humble resignation and patient submission of soul, and therein wait until he should be graciously pleased to say, "It is enough."

The interest that has been awakened amongst our friends in this country, has burst forth on all sides in letters of condolence and sympathy in our great bereavement, and in the accumulated affliction which has continued to press upon the wreck of my family: I believe that more heartfelt solicitude was never felt on an occasion of a parallel nature, when only individuals in humble life have been concerned; and I have no doubt that the prayers of many have been put up on our account, to the God of all comfort, for his Almighty help and deliverance: I humbly trust they have been permitted to ascend as sweet incense before the Lord Most High, whose ears are ever open to the prayers of His people: more especially of such as dwell continually in His temple, and behold His beauty in the holy place. And be assured that my feeble, though frequent petitions and aspirations, have been mingled amongst others for your preservation, and for the restoration of the dear invalids, in this day of visitation and sore conflict. From an accurate knowledge of circumstances as well as place, I believe I have been enabled to travail with and for you, and to wade in the depths of distress in degree, through the same conflict,—not only as to the bodily sufferings of dear Charles and Jenny, having myself had to pass through sickness and distress, under circumstances of hardship which I am totally unable to describe, and when recovery was equally doubtful; but I have also had to pass through the same agonizing conflict of mind, heightened to a much more dreadful degree, because charged with sins of deeper dye, than I fully believe have laid at their door. And though I can say with the apostle,—"this is a faithful saying and worthy of all acceptation, that Jesus Christ came into

the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief;" yet to the praise of the riches of His grace, I can also say,—"behold the Lamb of God, that taketh away the sins of the world,"—He that speaketh "in righteousness, mighty to save." And I do most earnestly desire, that my dear Charles and Jane may not suffer themselves to lose sight of the wondrous mercy that has been so plainly and marvellously extended, nor let the remembrance of it depart from their minds; but that they may faithfully wrestle to maintain the watch, and may become of quick understanding in the fear of the Lord,—that fear which keepeth the heart clean, and endureth for ever. I do exceedingly crave, that if comfortable health is permitted to return, they will endeavour to keep low in their spirits, and dwell near the root of life, with Him who declared himself to be, "meek and lowly in heart." And O! that they may not suffer doubtings to arise, as regards that power which has thus in matchless love and mercy said unto them "live;" or be disposed to question, or to say, is this "He that should come, or look we for another,"—like the disciples of John formerly. For surely their blind eyes have received sight, their lame ideas, notions, and comprehensions are changed; and the feet of their minds strengthened, and prepared to walk in a new and living path. Have they not witnessed the leprosy of sin to be searched into, and brought into view, in order to be cleansed by that which alone "searcheth all things?" Have not their deaf ears been unstopped, so that even the still small voice could be heard in the soul, and is found to be powerful, a mighty and irresistible voice, causing a guilty conscience to tremble; as described by the kingly prophet, when he said, "the lightnings lightened the world, the earth trembled and shook,"—when that "light which lighteth every man that cometh into the world," so shines in our hearts, as to discover the earthly nature, and make it tremble,—bringing all our sins in order before us, in terrible and to our awakened understandings fearful array. When personally on earth, after He had said to John's disciples, "the blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and to the poor the gospel is preached;"—He added, "and blessed is he

whosoever shall not be offended in me." So that I feel more than I can embody in words, that with those on whom such miracles have been wrought, who have been raised up as from the dead in sin and trespasses, as well as rescued from the grave, and who when brought low, humbled, broken, contrited, and made poor in spirit, have had the gospel preached to them, demonstrating in a manner incontrovertible, that it is "the power of God unto salvation,"—that nothing may be permitted to turn them aside from the blessing promised to those, who are not offended at this heavenly visitant. For this I pray; and that they may be strengthened, saith my soul, to give up all to follow Him in the regeneration faithfully: for it is only those that endure unto the end that shall be saved, and it is only those that give up all, who can endure all things for his sake. Whatever interferes with His Holy Spirit, whose right it is to rule and reign in our hearts, must be given up, be it what it may. "He that loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy of me; and he that loveth son or daughter more than me, is not worthy of me." Whatever is suffered to occupy our attention, tending in any degree to draw aside from watchfulness, prayer, and waiting upon Him, beyond what is allowable and needful in our passing through this pilgrim state, either in thought, word, or deed,—robs us of a sense of his inestimable presence, and of a share of the soul-enriching peace which flows from Him, and lessens our love towards Him, to whom the whole heart belongs; who "will not give His glory to another," nor His praise to graven or any other images, which we may suffer to be set up in our minds, however innocent and insignificant we may think such to be.

And though it may please Him in inscrutable wisdom for his own great purposes, to withdraw at times the sensible evidence of his life-giving Spirit, so that we may have to deplore with Mary, that "they have taken away my Lord;" yet as we remain stedfastly endeavouring to wait, and watch, and pray towards His temple, He will in his own time most assuredly return to us, as the morning breaking through and dispersing the heaviest clouds that may have gathered, to the strengthening of our faith in Him, and the increasing of our love: proving himself the

ever-blessed and ever-living Comforter, the Spirit of truth, and leading out of all error into all truth; whom the world cannot receive because it knoweth Him not.

I am not surprised to hear that my dear William has been dipped again and again, into a state of feeling something like that of baptism, on account of the sufferings of others;—for unless this was the case, how should we be capable of entering into their joys and sorrows? And now that the whole weight of responsibility and care of the family devolves upon his shoulders, it is no marvel with me, that this increased burden should be felt. I think this has a very instructive and significant meaning; and although in degree inferior, is notwithstanding the same in kind, as that felt and witnessed by the several members of the gospel church, where all suffer, rejoice and sympathize with and for each other. I believe that the head of a family or tribe, when endeavouring to act under the guidance of Him, who was touched with a feeling and compassionate sense of our manifold weakness and infirmities, may be favoured to administer, according to the ability given, to the wants and necessities of those abou him, entering into their feelings, and sharing in whatever conflicts may be alloted to them.

I wish to make a grateful return to all those kind friends in Petersburg, who have lent their aid in any shape in the day of your distress. I am indeed one of those who owe much unto their Lord, both in these respects, and in things more nearly connected with eternal consequences; and having nothing to pay with, I do humbly trust, that as he that administereth a cup of cold water only to a disciple, in the name of a disciple, shall in no wise lose his reward; so also that all who have administered to the necessities of these little ones that believe on Him, will witness the Divine blessing to rest upon them; inasmuch as they, however unconsciously, "have done it unto me," was the declaration of our Lord himself.

As to myself, I have truly little to communicate, for since it has pleased our heavenly Father to magnify his power in the midst of our long unbroken and highly favoured circle, but little has transpired with me. I told

the committee under whose care I move along, at their last meeting, that in consideration of the state of my family, I should be best satisfied to lie upon my oars at present, until these calamities are overpast; of which I think approval was expressed. I have attended the meetings in and about this metropolis, in all of which I have had to proclaim the spirituality of the dear Redeemer's kingdom, and to direct the people to the Holy Spirit in their own hearts, of a crucified, risen, and glorified Lord. It is indeed a day of lamentation, mourning, and woe,—for the expectation of the people is almost altogether outward, from man, although vital Christianity was never more talked of.

[Several circumstances having combined to delay the projected voyage to the South Seas till the succeeding autumn; our beloved father felt himself at liberty to employ a part of the interval thus occasioned, in visiting his family at Shoosharry. After remaining with them a few weeks and witnessing an improvement in the health of the invalids, he returned to the neighbourhood of London, to prosecute the preparations for his voyage.

It appeared a question of some intricacy, how such an undertaking, requiring many voyages from island to island, could best be accomplished, and a Committee of the Meeting for Sufferings was appointed to take the subject into consideration, and to make such arrangements as might appear requisite for the object in view. Having devoted much time and attention to the investigation, after consulting several persons likely to give accurate information, and after very mature deliberation, the Committee came at length to the conclusion, as recommended by those whose local knowledge enabled them to form a correct judgment, to purchase a small vessel for the purpose, not only as the most suitable, but probably in the end, the least expensive mode of conveyance.

During the following summer, an opportunity occurred of purchasing, on reasonable terms, the *Henry Freeling*, lately a post-office packet, of 101 tons register. A number of Friends generously came forward, not only to pay for the vessel, but at a considerable expense to prepare her for the voyage. This offer the Committee gratefully accepted.

His son Charles, having believed it right to offer himself as a companion to his father, and having been accepted in that capacity by the Meeting for Sufferings, joined him in London in the autumn. The necessary arrangements having been completed, they sailed from the river Thames, on the 13th of Eleventh Month, 1833, and were proceeding down the English Channel, when, on the 21st, they were overtaken by a heavy storm, which induced them to seek for shelter near the Isle of Wight. The following extract is from a letter written at this time.]

To Hannah Brearey.

Henry Freeling, 22nd of First Month, 1834.

——— Still at the Mother-bank. I look round at others, but feel myself a close prisoner; and forlorn indeed would be my condition, were it not for a most merciful and heavenly Keeper, whose unslumbering eye beholds the most solitary dwelling of his poorest creatures, and regarding all their wants, He openeth his bounteous hand and "satisfieth the desire of every living thing." I have written very few letters of late, for my mind has been otherwise engaged, and often not a little depressed: but as regards our delay here, although trying to the will of the creature, I am comforted by a consoling evidence of having done all that I could to forward the work, to which I believe myself called; and therefore I can rest peacefully amidst the restless waters, which incessantly burst and foam within a few inches of my pillow. * * *

My dear Charles is as well as can be expected, but looks thin, and although he says little, it is evident he feels the time long; but he bears up with a good degree of Christian patience. My heart often yearns over him, having some knowledge of the bitterness he feels, and gladly would I share in his conflict to spare him; but I am sometimes reminded of those expressions—'Heaven tempers the wind to the shorn lamb;' and it may be added,—'Shorn indeed, and to the quick.'

On Fifth-days, we regularly sit down together in my cabin, to wait upon the Lord; and though frequently feeling something like what is described as the solitary "sparrow on the house-top,"—yet we know that even

these poor outcasts are cared for; and are sensible that strength is renewed though perhaps, but in small degree.

[During the detention of the vessel, it appeared that advantage would arise from a change being made in the person who had the charge of her; and whilst the Committee were looking out for a more suitable one to supply his place, Daniel Wheeler thus writes, under date of 15th of Second Month, 1834.]

In treating with a person to take the command of our vessel, there are many stipulations which ought to be made and insisted upon, besides nautical skill and other qualifications. In the first place, it should be understood by the person in treaty for the station, that we are a Temperance vessel;—secondly, that the crew are regularly assembled in the cabin twice on every First-day, for devotional purposes; and also that the Scriptures are read every morning and evening in the cabin on other days, when both the captain and mate are expected to (and now do) attend; thirdly, that as much as practicable, all unnecessary work is dispensed with, as regards the sailors, on the First-day of the week, to afford them a portion of time for themselves. These things ought, I think, to be thoroughly understood in the outset, so that nothing unpleasant may afterwards occur, when perhaps it would be too late to make them obligatory and bring about their establishment.

[Owing to a succession of contrary winds and boisterous weather, very unusual for such a length of time, their vessel, with many others, was detained until the 15th of the Third Month, 1834, when they set sail. On the 14th, Daniel Wheeler writes,]

It is more than three months since I had my foot on the shore; but if I had not persisted in remaining on board, I should not have been in possession of the true character of our seamen, nor of every minutia of the state of our vessel. We have put her in the best trim which we are capable of doing, and must rely on One who is Almighty to help; and if He is but with us, we

shall have nothing to fear. Good indeed, [he adds,] has it been for me to be here; and true it is also, that sufferings and tribulations have only been permitted in boundless mercy to draw me nearer and nearer to the bosom of my Lord, the only but never-failing source of consolation in every time of trial and distress: however dark the hour of conflict, the entrance of his Word is light and life. [He further observes,] the *present* great object of my life, the service before me, revives at seasons with increasing and encouraging brightness to my view.

[The same day, being that previous to their sailing, he addressed a farewell letter to the Committee of the Meeting for Sufferings, a part of which is subjoined.]

Henry Freeling, Motherbank, Third Month 14th, 1834.

Upon reference, I find that it is now considerably more than three months since I began a letter for the information of my dear friends, when anticipating that ere long we should be permitted to direct our course across the trackless ocean to the southern hemisphere; but I had not completed more than half a sheet of paper, when the progress of my pen was arrested, by circumstances which have prevented any further addition being made until this day, when the way seems to open for resuming the subject—our departure being at hand.

Among the many multiplied mercies and blessings which unceasingly flow from the bounteous and compassionate hand of Him who "crowneth the year with his goodness," and "satisfieth the desire of every living thing," I feel bound to acknowledge with humble thankfulness and admiration, our long detention on these shores. Notwithstanding there have been many gloomy days, and days of darkness, "as the morning spread upon the mountains," and many long and dreary winter nights to pass through, when the raging storm has again and again whitened with foam the surface of the agitated deep around us; and not only the strife of elements to witness without, but a conflicting and spiritual strife within, "tossed with tempest and not comforted;" yet how unspeakably great the faithfulness of our good and gracious Lord God! "His compassions fail not," but

have been, and still continue to be, "new every morning," as the returning day; for in moments of the greatest conflict and trial there has been something permitted, like the "bow in the cloud," for the poor mind to look at, to animate, and cheer, and to strengthen with hardness to endure and to stand firm.

But although moon after moon hath waned, and faith and patience have been beset as on the right hand and on the left, and the afflictions of the gospel have at times been permitted to abound; yet to the glory, and honour, and praise of Him, whose name ever excellent and adorable, shall be great among the nations, from the rising of the sun to the going down of the same,—the consolations of the gospel have also abounded, in a degree of the fulness of that heavenly blessing which makes truly rich, and whereunto no sorrow is added; when faith hath been mercifully strengthened, and patience renewed under the tribulations of the day. And notwithstanding an untrodden path has been my portion, yet after all, though weakness and fear are my constant companions by the way, safety and peace have been hitherto found. I would, therefore, encourage all my beloved friends to keep near to their heavenly Teacher and Leader; who, if faithfully followed, will not only conduct their steppings to a hair's breadth, but will preserve and keep the mind in calmness and serenity, securely as in a pavilion, from the strife of tongues.

In addition to the marvellous loving-kindness I have thus endeavoured to pourtray, many other mercies and blessings have been showered upon our heads, during the apparently long and unaccountable detention of our little bark upon our own coasts; these I have often had to number with grateful sensations, when the light has shone brightly, and manifested clearly to my finite understanding how much we should have missed, if our progress had not thus been arrested. So that with myself, instead of this delay having been productive of regret, or the cause of letting in fear or doubt, to stagger or depress my tribulated mind,—I do, my dear friends, hail it with gratitude and thankfulness, as the gracious and compassionate dealing of my Lord and Master; not only as a time of Divine favour and condescension, but as an

earnest of his love and mercy, for our encouragement, instruction, and future benefit, graciously vouchsafed,—a time of preparation for the important work before us, and of weaning from every dependence and guidance which are not of Him, to strengthen our confidence in His power to help and deliver out of every distress; who not only commands the storm, but at whose rebuke the mountain billows cease to undulate, and lo! "there is a great calm."

Within the last two or three days, the prospect of liberation has begun to dawn with clearness; but I trust, that if even a further detention should be meted out to us; either here or in some other port, the same resignation to the Divine Will will be vouchsafed: for although I have for more than two years past felt anxious to move forward in a work, which has yet to begin when the decay of nature is visible, and the shadows of the evening proclaim, as they lengthen around me, the steady decline of life's setting sun; yet I have been frequently comforted by a renewed evidence, that we have not yet been here one day too long.

It will, I feel assured, afford my dear friends much satisfaction to know, that the crew of the vessel, notwithstanding the frequent though unavoidable communication with the neighbouring shore for so great a length of time, have given no cause for uneasiness by improper conduct, and that they have at all times behaved, with scarcely an exception, in an orderly and agreeable manner; the captain now provided for us seems to be judiciously selected, and the man who, beyond all expectation, is admirably adapted to aid and assist, by example and experience, in the accomplishment of the important object before us: so that I hope what has passed, and what may yet be in store for us, will be found and acknowledged to be among the "all things that work together for good." I must not omit adding, that the solemn covering frequently witnessed in mercy to prevail and preside over us, when sitting together before the Lord, is worthy to be commemorated with humble gratitude, as the strongest and most indubitable evidence for our encouragement, that at seasons "He is with us of a truth."

As it is now a period of the year when ships seldom

sail to those parts to which we are destined,—whether we proceed by the Cape of Good Hope, which is most probable, or by Cape Horn, in either case a wintry season awaits us; but my trust is in the Lord, not doubting but that we shall have the privilege of the prayers of the faithful for our preservation: and though conscious of our own weakness and utter unworthiness, and often under a feeling of being less than the least of all my dear brethren and sisters that are alive in the unchangeable Truth; yet I think I can say that these things trouble me not, nor move me, neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministry which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify of the gospel of that grace, "which bringeth salvation, and hath appeared unto all men," teaching all; that so from the uttermost parts of the earth songs of praise may be heard, and the grateful tribute of "thanks be to God for his unspeakable gift," may resound to his glory: for it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that showeth mercy; it is "not by might nor by power, but by my Spirit, saith the Lord of Hosts."

And now, whilst my heart is bearing towards the isles afar off, the same constraining love which wrought the willingness to leave all for my gracious Lord's sake and His gospel's, extends its binding influence to all my dear brethren and sisters, of every age and of every class, wherever situated, and however circumstanced; desiring in tender and affectionate solicitude, that they may be found stedfastly following the footsteps of those honourable and worthy predecessors in the same religious profession with ourselves, who have long since rested from their labours, and whose memorial is on high; who bore the burden and heat of a deep suffering, in the faithful discharge of their duty, for the support of those principles in their original purity and brightness, which have been transmitted to us.

——— And now, my dear brethren and sisters, "may the God of peace, who brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant, keep all your hearts and minds;" and "make you perfect in every good work

to do His will, working in you that which is well-pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ; to whom be glory for ever and ever."

In the love of the everlasting gospel, accept this expression of farewell, from your affectionate friend and brother, DANIEL WHEELER.

15th of Third Month, at Sea, and clear of the Needle Rocks, all well.

[During their long stay at the Mother-bank, Daniel Wheeler says in his journal.]—It has been our usual practice, except when prevented by particular and sufficient causes, to assemble the crew in the cabin twice on every First-day of the week with the captain and mate, to read to them a portion of the Holy Scriptures, and to sit together before the Lord in solemn silence. The first time of our assembling in this manner, it was my lot to break in upon the silent solemnity which prevailed in a remarkable manner over us, and to call their attention to the magnitude of the voyage in contemplation; feeling no hesitation in believing, that every individual present was desirous that it might be prosperous; and the desire of my heart was, that it might be so in reality, not only as regarded the safety of the ship and of ourselves, but that it might prove a voyage towards the kingdom of heaven, into which nothing that is unclean or impure, "nothing that worketh abomination, or that maketh a lie, can ever enter." In order that this might be the case, we must do every thing in the fear of the Lord; and the way to prove we feared Him, was to keep a diligent watch over our thoughts, words, and actions, &c.

Although this was a novel scene to all of them, they behaved with great solidity, and becoming attention; and the peaceful covering so evidently manifest to spread and remain over us, was truly precious and worthy of commemoration. Although the weather was extremely rough and boisterous at the time, and the sea occasionally bursting over the deck, all was quiet and undisturbed below. On inquiry when we broke up, it was found that several of the men were not provided with copies of the Scriptures. They were of course, in due time, all furnished.

CHAPTER X.

DEPARTURE FROM THE BRITISH CHANNEL—RIO JANEIRO —TEMPESTUOUS VOYAGE.

[THEY had a very favourable voyage of nearly two months to Rio Janeiro. The limits of the present work do not allow of many details being given; but the following passages have been selected from the journal:—]

Third Month 23*rd.*—From the boisterous state of the weather, although First-day had again revolved, we were prevented from collecting the crew for devotional purposes; and could only read some portions of Scripture with the captain and mate. By this time our little vessel had been pretty roughly handled and tried, and had given full proof of her capability. The captain acknowledged she had done wonders, and had greatly surpassed the idea he had formed of her, and the crew to a man expressed their satisfaction; and I saw myself no cause to alter the favourable opinion that I had constantly entertained from the first sight of her. We are all aware of the advantage which would have resulted, had she been large enough to have carried a greater supply of fresh water and coals, without being so deeply buried in the water, which continually exposes us to the drench of the sea, even in what may be termed favourable weather; and in rough, we are frequently debarred from all exercise upon deck in fresh air, to avoid the risk of being injured by the wash of the sea. I feel, however, grateful and thankful in my present allotment, and for the accommodation thus rendered by my dear friends; humbly trusting that we shall be sustained through all to declare the mighty acts of the Lord, and to show forth His praise in the presence of a people who have not heard His fame, nor seen His glory, neither conceived the majesty of His kingdom within, of "righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost;" which stands mercifully revealed in the hearts of those, who

are concerned above all things to seek *first* this heavenly kingdom, and to believe therein, to the saving of the soul.

On the 24th there was an evident change in the temperature of the atmosphere; the sun shone brightly, and its warmth gladdened our hearts, as we sat on a small space near the stern of the vessel, which had been preserved pretty free from the spray of the sea: the wind, although still favourable, had lessened; the white-topped billows had considerably diminished, and our deck was this day more free from water rushing from side to side, than had been the case for more than a week past. Some turtle were seen floating near the ship, and things altogether around us began to wear a brightening aspect; but what tended most to enliven and make all things smile, was the marvellous condescension of my dear Lord and Master, who in the greatness of his love, was graciously pleased, for the first time since I had offered up my all to follow Him in this untrodden path of apprehended duty, to open my spiritual understanding, and permit me to behold, to a certain extent, the nature of the service upon which I should have to enter, in some places where my lot may be cast. I now plainly saw that before leaving England, I was not fit to be entrusted thus far with the secrets of my Master. I believe I could not have refrained from imparting them in degree to some of those whom I dearly love; but happily I am now beyond the reach of such a temptation. Perhaps I was not then sufficiently reduced into a state of preparation suitable for the reception of so much of the Divine Will being revealed, nor sufficiently humbled into a state of abasedness of self. Greatly do I desire for myself and all my dear friends, that we may be brought more and more into such a state as to be fit and able to bear further portions of the many things which our great and heavenly Teacher, in his wondrous and never-erring council, has to say to such as fear, and love, and follow him in the great work of regeneration:—"I have many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now:" and if we were but sufficiently willing to hearken to his voice, He would still, I am persuaded, not only have many things to say unto us as individuals, but unto the church also, by that "Holy Spirit which searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God." Then may all

our hearts be so cleansed and purified through the efficacy of his grace, as to be prepared to receive the promised and ever-abiding Comforter, who "will take of the things of Christ, and show them unto us," yea, "He will show us things to come."

30*th.*—The weather beautiful, and wind favourable. Assembled the ship's company both morning and evening in the cabin. Whilst sitting together in silence in the forenoon, I felt an engagement of mind to magnify the loving-kindness of our good and gracious helper, and to turn their attention as witnesses to the unmerited mercy and favour bestowed upon us, by the Lord's having so evidently and eminently prospered our way; desiring that gratitude and thankfulness might be felt by every individual; and declaring, unhesitatingly, that if we fear and love Him, He will bless and prosper us altogether. It was also with me to remind them, that although from circumstances of one kind or other, we might not be able to collect together in this way, yet nothing should prevent us from fearing and loving the Lord; that in the darkest night our thoughts were not hidden from Him: quoting that expression of the Psalmist, when under a constraining sense of the omnipresence of the Deity, "Whither shall I go from thy spirit?" &c. May the Lord be pleased to lay his Fatherly hand upon them!

Fifth Month 10*th.*—At sunset a brig was seen upon our lee-quarter, steering the same course as ourselves, perhaps three or four miles distant from us; she was soon covered up for the night, and no more thought of. Being upon the deck, (a usual practice with me the fore-part of the night,) between nine and ten o'clock, the carpenter suddenly exclaimed, 'Why here's the brig!' Upon looking, I saw the vessel at a considerable distance from us; but soon perceived by the stars, that she was approaching with uncommon rapidity in a most suspicious direction, as if intending to cross our fore-foot, and cut us off. We watched her very narrowly, expecting every minute she would open a fire upon us. She continued to haul directly across our head at a very short distance from us; but we steadily kept our course, without the slightest variation, or manifesting any symptoms of hurry or fear, or noticing her in any way. I felt our situation to be at the moment very critical, knowing that these latitudes,

and particularly this neighbourhood, are exceedingly infested with piratical vessels, which find shelter in the Brazilian harbours as traders, where they fit out occasionally for Africa with merchandize, and return with whole cargoes of oppressed Africans for sale, landing them on private parts of the Brazil coast; at other times, they act as pirates, when it suits their convenience, or are in want of stores. This was indeed a trial of faith of no common kind; but my mind was staid upon the Lord, feeling a good degree of resignation to his holy will, whatever might be permitted to befall us. After watching the vessel with anxiety for some time, she passed away, without making the least apparent stop. On considering the matter, we concluded, that when she saw us at sunset, we were taken for a Dutch galiot, that might fall an easy prey to her; but when she came up to us in the dark, near enough to examine with telescopes the real shape of our vessel, we were found of such a suspicious build of a nondescript kind, not seen before in these seas, as led to the supposition that we were intended as a decoy; and though very tame looking without, yet perhaps fiery hot within, if meddled with. The Lord only was our deliverer, for she was restrained from laying a hand upon our little bark; and to Him alone our preservation is with gratitude and thankfulness ascribed. We saw no more of her, and after midnight I partook of some refreshing sleep.

[They reached Rio Janeiro on the 13th of Fifth Month; and not having been provided with a bill of health, the vessel was detained in quarantine for five days.]

24*th of Fifth Month.*—To-day several hours have been spent on shore by Charles and myself, for the purpose of expediting the shipment of the needful supplies; in the course of which we had much satisfaction in unexpectedly becoming acquainted with two serious persons, at the house of one of the few in this place who are desiring to do the thing that is right. Although we were amply provided with introductory letters, &c., to the ports of importance throughout the whole voyage, yet at last we were in some measure compelled to enter a port for

which, with all our contrivance, we do not possess a single document. After considering the subject, I told my son Charles, that I thought our coming here would not be without answering some good end, though at the time there might be nothing in view, nor had any thing occurred to give rise to such a supposition; but on our meeting with the two individuals above-mentioned, an opening for some service presented to my mind, and from the conversation which took place while we were together, it seemed pretty clear to me that we should see each other again. Before we parted, I was invited to attend a meeting, which is held by the well-disposed English of this town every First-day evening at seven o'clock, which by them is termed a prayer-meeting. I told them, after acknowledging their kindness, that I could not give an answer at the moment, that I must wait to see what to-morrow would bring forth; and that if the way opened for me to accept the invitation, I would take care to be in time. Although it was very evident to me that it was no light thing for a member of our religious Society to attend such a meeting, and faithfully support the different peculiar testimonies given us as a people to bear, and which to some might appear like opposition to or slighting the forms and ceremonies which they have been trained, perhaps from early youth, to the daily practice of, yet it did not seem a time for me to shrink or hold back on that account: leaving the matter altogether unfixed, we returned to our vessel for the night.

25*th*.—Both forenoon and afternoon the crew were assembled in the usual manner: at both seasons a quiet feeling seemed to prevail. In the course of the day, the prospect of attending the meeting on shore, as a burden upon my shoulders, increased as the day wore away: and believing that I should not be clear without giving up to it, accompanied by Charles, I set forward, and reaching the shore just as it became dark, repaired immediately to the house where the meeting was to be held. I thought there would be a propriety in speaking to some of the principal persons privately before the meeting commenced; so taking them aside, I told them, that although we might have the same great and important object in view, yet it was probable that we might not all see

exactly alike, and therefore I should prefer their going on with their meeting as usual; and if, after it was over, we might be allowed to come in and sit down amongst them, it would perhaps be the most agreeable on both sides; at the same time, I candidly stated, that we could not engage to kneel when they did, neither was it our practice to sing: and that we were desirous to offend neither Jew, nor Gentile, nor the Church. After some further conversation, it was concluded that they should proceed as usual, and that we should sit by, and act as was most easy to ourselves. Accordingly, at the time appointed, the company repaired to another room prepared for the occasion, where some others were seated in readiness; and amongst these, were several young black people that understood English. It was previously arranged, that when the meeting was quite over, the certificate furnished me by my dear friends of the Morning Meeting in London, should be read, in order to account to all present for the appearance of strangers, and to open the way for any communication on my part that might arise.

We retained our seats the whole time, and my mind being under considerable weight of exercise, it was a relief to be left, as it were, in the quiet. The meeting being concluded, the Morning Meeting's certificate was read; and after commenting awhile on its contents, we were favoured to drop into solemn silence, which continued until interrupted by my having to state, that it had never been contemplated before leaving England that we should have to touch at a place where bigotry, superstition, and slavery stalk unmasked with open face, particularly as it had not come within the range of the prospect before us. I acknowledged having mentioned to my son some days ago, that I thought our coming here must be for some object unknown to us at that time; but since we had been sitting together, I found that the Lord had a seed, even in this place, that fear Him and think upon his name; and unto these in an especial manner, my heart was enlarged in the love of the everlasting gospel, that love which would gather all mankind into the heavenly garner of rest and peace. I had not proceeded much farther in the expression of a desire that their "faith might not stand in the wisdom of man, but in the power of God,"

before I had to turn their attention to the solemnity so evidently spreading over us, as the crown and diadem of every rightly gathered religious assembly; a feeling not at our command, nor in the power of man to produce, and which could only be felt when the Great Head of the church fulfils his gracious promise,—"where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them." After this the way seemed fully opened, and a door of entrance also for the doctrines of the gospel in plainness and freedom. I had particularly to speak of the nature of true spiritual worship, and waiting upon the Lord,—the necessity of knowing for ourselves the great work of regeneration to be going on,—the true faith of the gospel as it is in Jesus the Author and Finisher thereof, which worketh by love, purifieth the heart, and giveth victory over death, hell, and the grave; —stating that I had nothing new to offer,—that "other foundation can no man lay, than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ:"—reviving the terms prescribed by Himself to those who would become his disciples and followers:—"the poor in spirit," were reminded that to them the blessing appertains, and the kingdom belongs: —the woful sentence to the unprofitable servant, was contrasted with that of the faithful occupier of his Lord's talents;—the beauty, purity, and spirituality of the true gospel church, and the necessity and practicability of becoming members thereof, while here on earth, was held up to view. Considerable brokenness appeared in some individuals; and I believe it may be said, that Truth rose into dominion, and reigned over all. For my own part I never recollect being more sensible of continued weakness and fear from the beginning to the end; the creature was laid low, and I trust was only desirous that all praise might be ascribed to Him to whom it belongs for ever. This was indeed a precious opportunity, and although not obtained without ploughing a furrow six or seven thousand miles in length, across the unstable surface of the ocean, yet the love, joy, and peace that remain, are a rich and ample reward. We reached our little bark in perfect safety, with hearts full of comfort, pretty soon after ten o'clock at night, while a torrent of rain was falling; in the midst of which the water was so remarkably luminous,

that every stroke of the oars seemed to dash the fire about us, and the track of the boat was like frosted silver. The boat was manned with natives of Africa, now held in cruel bondage in this place; they are, however, treated by us as fellow-men and brethren, and truly my heart abounds with love not easily to be described towards these poor creatures.

We were informed on respectable authority, that two-thirds of the population of the neighbourhood of "St." Sebastian consist of coloured people, and that nothing could keep them in such a state of cruel and abject slavery, but their having been taken from different tribes in Africa, amongst whom a most inveterate enmity has constantly existed; and care has industriously been taken to keep perpetually alive such a spirit of revenge against each other, as cannot be destroyed even by slavery itself. This is spoken of as a politic measure, lest they should unite and set themselves free: dreadful indeed would the day be to the majority of their white masters, should such a thing come to pass, unless controlled by a higher power. The slave-trade, though nominally abolished, is still carried on to a dreadful extent, in an underhand manner. Many ships go away loaded from hence to Africa, and return with large cargoes of these unhappy victims, which they land on distant parts of the coast, and then come into the harbour, with perhaps a few elephants' teeth, as if from an unsuccessful voyage. This is well understood, and winked at. We were informed, that five hundred newly imported negroes might be purchased in the neighbourhood at any time. Although our tarriance at Rio de Janeiro was little more than a fortnight; yet many of the poor negroes who had been connected with us by employment or otherwise, had become much attached to us; and some hours after having left the coast, it was fully ascertained that only a very slight occurrence had prevented three of these people from being secreted on board our vessel.

[They left the harbour of Rio Janeiro on the 29th of Fifth Month; and passed by the Cape of Good Hope to Van Diemen's Land.]

Sixth Month 2nd.—Since leaving the land, the winds have been so strongly opposed to our going round Cape Horn, as nearly to put that course out of sight: to-day we are so far off the coast of South America as to be exposed to the swell of the great South Sea, which is no longer kept from us by a point of land which forms the projecting Cape; this swell is prodigious, and plainly shows the turbulent state of the weather in that quarter; it seems like a final settlement and removal of any thing like a doubt in my mind, as to our being in the right track at present. After midnight the weather became very rough, and the wind inclining more and more southerly, rendered our position in sailing very critical. Before four o'clock, A. M., two heavy seas broke in upon us, one of which stove in a part of the bulwark on the starboard side; happily none of the watch on deck were washed overboard. From this time things got rapidly worse, and the only alternative now left was to bring the vessel to, with her head to the wind and sea, under suitable storm-canvass to maintain that position. In addition to the great risk attending at all times any circumstance connected with 'lying to,' it was a position in which we had not yet tried the *Henry Freeling*. It was not indeed an every-day occurrence for a small vessel, which we have had hitherto no opportunity of proving under more gentle circumstances, to be brought round against a sea, which had nothing to break the range of its sweeping influence between her and the south pole. Captain Keen manifested great coolness and ability on the occasion: and soon after day-break all things were ready to accomplish our intended purpose; to effect which, an interval was waited for, when the blast should lull a little: and whilst much depended upon a timely re-action of the sails, so as to prevent the vessel from forcing herself with too great violence into the opposing waves, as her head came round towards them; at the same time it was indispensably needful to keep a sufficient quantity of canvass set, to guard against being overtaken and overwhelmed by the mountain waves, which in an awful manner were now threatening us behind. A few minutes relieved us from suspense and anxiety,—and although heavy laden, with our newly recruited stock of water, some of which en-

cumbered the deck,—yet we had the comfort to see the vessel rise in a lively manner to the surface of the loftiest billows, before any material quantity of their contents had time to burst over her. As the wind blew directly from an immensity of ice, a change so sudden from the great heat we had so recently witnessed, to such a cold penetrating blast, was sensibly felt by all on board.

10*th*.—Towards evening it again became stormy with much rain; the sea breaking over us with great violence, scarcely any part, even below deck, could be preserved free from wet, and all our ingenuity was called forth to preserve our beds moderately dry. At times the weight of water seemed too much for our little bark to bear, from which she could scarcely extricate herself, before another deluge burst in upon her deck. A state of desertion was my lot throughout the day, and although at seasons I was ready to say, "Lord, carest thou not that we perish?" yet I was not permitted in the darkest moment to cast away my confidence; although for many hours it seemed needful for us to stand as with our lives in our hands, not knowing how soon they might be called for. At midnight the scene was truly awful, the wind blew in a furious manner, and the sea raged with increased violence, with heavy falls of rain. The mercury in the marine barometer, which had been falling all the day, became lower, and the little vessel seemed to twist and bend beneath her heavy burden. At this moment of extremity, behold a shift of wind to the south-west, which instead of taking aback suddenly the little canvass we were scudding under, (which might have produced consequences above all others the most to be dreaded) came regularly round; and the captain, availing himself of this moment, directed that the vessel should be 'hove to.' Captain Keen came to me shortly after this circumstance had taken place, to acknowledge how providentially this change had been ordered, being sensible of the favour thus graciously bestowed upon us.

Sixth Month 13*th*.—This date has not failed to awaken feelings of painful reflection in reference to days which have long since passed away, it being thirty-three years since it pleased the God of all my mercies to bestow a crown upon the head of a poor unworthy creature, even

the rich blessing of a truly virtuous wife, at the close of a meeting at Doncaster. Full well at this remote period do I remember the solemn and delightful season with which we were favoured, from the beginning to the end of the meeting. Dear Thomas Colley appeared largely in testimony on the occasion, to the tendering of many present. It was indeed an earnest of the heavenly Master's love; which never ceased to follow us through all the vicissitudes of time, during a life not a little chequered, for a term of more than thirty-two years and a-half, when He was pleased to deprive me of my greatest earthly treasure, and to take back that which He gave; but it was His own, I verily believe, even His, the same who enabled me to say, in the moment of my greatest distress, "blessed be the name of the Lord." In looking over the different relatives and friends present on the above occasion, there is at this period scarcely one of those individuals, at that time about our own age, who now survives; and I find that many of them much younger than ourselves, have been summoned from works to rewards: thus, whilst many of my contemporaries have finished their earthly career, I am still spared a little longer, a living monument of the Lord's everlasting mercy,—for the purpose, I humbly trust, of declaring to others what He hath done for my soul, and to show forth the praises of Him, who hath translated me out of darkness into his marvellous light. And although the sacrifice I am making may appear great, and be rendered more formidable by the late hour in the evening at which it has to be offered; yet in my estimation it is small indeed, and light as the dust of the balance, when the love and mercy, long-suffering and compassion, of my good and gracious Lord God, are brought into remembrance; who hath redeemed my life from destruction, and crowned me with loving-kindness and tender mercies,—to myself incomprehensible, and I am persuaded only known in the same degree, to those whose sin is blotted out as a cloud, and their transgressions as a thick cloud, by repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ, who came into the world to save sinners, of whom each of us, in the depth of self-abasement, can say, "I am chief."

17*th.*—A considerable press of sail was carried in the

hope of making the island of Tristan d'Acunha, and two others lying at no great distance from it. Next morning, the 18th, the weather was rough and threatening, with fog and rain. The captain considered it the more needful to obtain a sight of the islands; and relinquishing the design of passing to the northward of them, we bore up after day-break, in a south-easterly direction, to avail ourselves of the strong but favourable wind. As the day advanced, the wind and sea increased, and the fog was so dense close down to the horizon, that there seemed but little prospect of discovering the land, at a sufficient distance to prevent our running directly upon it. As the afternoon wore away, the danger hourly increased: but at this juncture, the Everlasting Arm of strength, in wonted mercy and compassion, was signally displayed for our preservation, and in such a manner as wholly to exclude the slightest pretence of mortal man's having the least share in it. The mist cleared suddenly away; and though but for a short interval, yet it was sufficient to discover a lofty rocky island, about half a mile distant, standing nearly perpendicularly out of the sea, far above the mast-head of the *Henry Freeling*. We soon perceived that this was the island called Inaccessible, and appropriately so, as from its vast height and steep approach, no landing apparently on the side next to us could possibly have been effected. This seemed at once to relieve our anxiety, and the captain now considered all danger as past, and that we should safely run between this island and another called Nightingale Island, although not able to see it on account of the fog, these islands being ten miles asunder. Thus cheered, we pursued our course with great velocity, as the wind had increased in violence soon after the high rocky island was first seen. But in another hour, our prospect was suddenly clouded by the appearance of more rugged rocky land on the same side of us. This circumstance, for a time, staggered all our hopes, as it could not be accounted for; and of course we knew not how soon some unknown lurking reef might wreck our fragile vessel, which was scourged on by a hurricane-blast with greater speed, it is probable, than at any previous time. In this situation, the night was gathering blackness and darkness in the midst of a heavy

tempest. The captain, though evidently unprepared for this mysterious circumstance, conducted every thing with calmness and composure, and concluded to haul two or three points to the southward, lest a shift of wind in the night should drive us back upon these desolate islands.

19*th.*—Before sunset we got sight of the island of Tristan d'Acunha. It is fifteen hundred miles from any other land, except the two small islands before-mentioned, and is said to be upwards of eight thousand feet above the level of the sea; though we are now fifty-seven miles distant, it is still plainly discernible, even to my imperfect sight.

20*th.*—It was observed that the mercury in the barometer was this morning again on the decline, and by four o'clock, P.M., had fallen to 29·53. The wind freshened throughout the day, and at night blew with such tremendous violence, accompanied with heavy rain and some lightning, as compelled us to seek safety by 'lying to;' but, however trying to be thus disabled from making use of a fair wind when it blows, I believe we are truly thankful in having such a source of relief from the terrors of the storm afforded to us, poor solitary wanderers on the mighty deep. It is three weeks to-day since we left Rio, and up to this time we have not seen another ship.

21*st.*—Still 'lying to,' in heavy gales from the south-west, with frequent squalls still more heavy, with rain and forked lightning: to use the expression of the carpenter who had charge of the morning watch, 'the lightning had been flying about like ribbons.' The weather was extremely cold and penetrating. Owing to the water searching through every little crevice from the working of the frame of the vessel, my berth has become so damp, as to compel me to have recourse to any part of the main cabin, where most free from dropping water.

Sixth Month 22*nd.*—'Lying to,' as yesterday; the storm still raging with unabated violence, squalls, heavy rain, and lightning through the night. The sea having risen to a fearful height, frequently inundated the deck of the vessel; and from the continual working of her whole frame, our bed-places have been unfit to sleep in, the water having found its way through numerous chinks. This morning early, a heavy sea broke into us, bringing a

larger quantity of water upon the deck than at any time before. To myself a very remarkable and striking event took place this morning. Shortly after the vessel had shipped a heavy body of water, I went up the hatchway to look round for a short interval; at that moment the seas were running in mountainous succession, and I observed that some of the loftiest of the waves were very nearly prevailing against our little vessel; it seemed as if she could not much longer escape being overwhelmed by them altogether. I made no remark to any one, but soon after we tried to get some breakfast: while so occupied, one of the men called down to inform us that there was a sight worth looking at on deck; it was a large collection of a species of whale, close by the ship. I thought I should like to see them; there were perhaps more than two hundred of these animals close to us, each about twelve feet long. When I went upon deck after breakfast they were still close to our bows; and the man at the helm said that they served as a breakwater for us: their being so was afterwards mentioned by some other person. At last my eyes were open to discover the protection they were affording to our little struggling vessel: they occupied a considerable portion of the surface of the sea, in the exact direction between the vessel and the wind and waves, reaching so near to us, that some of them might have been struck with a harpoon; they remained constantly swimming in gentle and steady order, as if to maintain the position of a regular phalanx, and I suggested that nothing should be done to frighten them away. It was openly remarked by some, that not one sea had broken on board us, while they occupied their useful post; and when they at last retired, it was perceived that the waves did not rage with the same violence as before they came to our relief. I give this wonderful circumstance just as it occurred; and if any should be disposed to view it as a thing of chance, *I* do not; for I believe it to be one of the great and marvellous works of the Lord God Almighty. These friends in need, and friends indeed, filled up a sufficiently wide space upon two of the large swells of the ocean, completely to obstruct the approach of each succeeding wave opposed to the vessel; so that if the third wave from us was coming in lofty foam towards us, by

the time it had rolled over and become the second wave, its foaming, threatening aspect was destroyed entirely, reaching us at last in the form of a dead and harmless swell. They are very oily fish, but seldom larger than to yield about two barrels of oil; they are commonly called black fish.

Seventh Month 7th—'Lying to;' the storm has continued all night, and the sea makes very heavy upon us. The mercury in the marine barometer sunk to 29·30, then rose a little, and again sunk lower in the tube. As the night advanced, the storm increased with awful violence. The strength of the wind was incredible, and the lightning appalling, with a fall of rain and sleet; the sea broke in upon our little ship in an alarming manner. The poor men were lashed upon the deck with ropes, to prevent their being washed away; benumbed with cold, and at times floating with the vast load of water upon the deck—their sufferings are not easily described.

In the darkest part of the night, a distinct luminous appearance, or glow of light, remained at our mast-head; a phenomenon only seen in dreadful weather, when the atmosphere is highly charged with electric fluid. The sailors call it a *corposant.** I think such an appearance is mentioned in John Churchman's Journal, or that of some other worthy. The countenances of our men were considerably whitened this morning, by the great quantity of salt, which having been deposited by the constant washing of the sea, had dried upon their faces.

8th.—Early this morning the storm abated, and at eight A.M. we bore away before it to the eastward. In the course of the storm yesterday evening, unusual darkness gathered round us, when suddenly the wind which blew with great violence, increased to a complete hurricane, and roared in a terrific manner, and for a while closely threatened our little vessel. The force of the wind was so great, that the waves for the time almost ceased to undulate, and the surface of the ocean became levelled and whitened with foam. At this juncture I was comforted in beholding the calmness and resignation with

* (Originally written Corpus Sancti.) See John Woolman's Journal, Dublin Edition, 1794, p. 212.

which my dear Charles was favoured. At one time he remarked, 'What a painful situation those people must be in, who have not a good reason for being exposed to similar distress, when they find themselves overtaken by it.' I told him it was formidable enough, even to those who felt themselves in the line of apprehended duty.

9th.—The wind moderate, but the swell of the sea caused by the late tempest continues to impede our progress; the motion however of the vessel is become greatly diminished: Charles remarked, "then are they glad, because they be quiet;" which truly was our case.

14th.—At ten A.M. it was so tempestuous, that we again hugged the howling blast, by 'heaving to:' as the vessel came round with her head to the wind, one heavy wave broke on board, but happily none of the crew were lost. In the afternoon, when it was thought that the storm had arrived at its greatest strength, this hope was suddenly extinguished by the mercury falling in a short space of time down to 29·50. The captain said, 'We have done all we can,—trust in Providence only remains.' Heavy rain succeeded; but instead of the bursting forth of another hurricane, which the incessant thunder and lightning led us to expect, it was observed that the roar of the wind was lessening; it changed from north-east to north-west, but shifted so gradually in the right direction for the vessel, that the change was scarcely felt, and the sea fell in full proportion as the wind abated.

Two or three days previous to this tempest, I felt much depressed on account of my Charles, he having drooped more than usual, from the effects of the cold weather; the great length of time we had already been the sport of the winds and waves since leaving Rio de Janeiro, could not but excite a painful and discouraging fear lest his strength should prove unequal to the remaining part of the voyage, as we had only passed over about one thousand miles in distance, since beginning to traverse the margin of the Indian Ocean; and we are still greatly annoyed by the strong currents and heavy gales which prevail from the direction of Madagascar, and are probably attracted down the Mozambique Channel, which separates that island from the coast of Natal, on the south-east shore of Africa. But as the late storm approached, I felt, through unmerited favour, increasing

peacefulness and tranquillity, which nothing during its whole continuance was permitted to disturb; and in the most awful moment of uncertainty and impending danger, fear had no place to enter; this was utterly banished by the love of the ever-blessed Master that flowed in my heart, and in the true dignity of its heavenly power cast it out; and the language which at intervals continued to prevail and occupy the inner man with a soothing and encouraging sweetness was that of the Psalmist,—"Delight thyself in the Lord, and he shall give thee the desires of thy heart." Thus indeed was strength truly administered, according to the glorious working of His power, unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness, to endure and to give thanks to the Lord Most High. I should shrink from making any remark on the state of my own mind, whilst in the extremity out of which we have been so remarkably delivered, did I not feel called upon by a sense of gratitude to our compassionate Lord; at the same time a hope gleams through my heart, that it will tend to strengthen the faith of some hesitating and doubting fellow-travellers who may eventually peruse these lines, to "follow on to know the Lord" for themselves; and thus partake of His love, mercy, and life-giving presence, and be encouraged to forsake all and follow Him, "nothing doubting," wherever He may be pleased to lead: for the declaration,—"Lo I am with you alway," will assuredly be verified in their experience, and all earthly things will be estimated but as loss and dross, in comparison with the excellence of the knowledge of Christ Jesus.

22*nd*.—Whilst lying-to in heavy weather the forepart of last night, (the fourth time within eight days,) I felt much exhausted for want of rest, and not a little discouraged by surrounding circumstances. The almost incessant labouring of the vessel, and the heavy strokes of the sea, which have so often assailed her battered sides, could not fail to occasion extra pumping when it blew hard: although upon the whole, she had suffered little since her deck had been freed from dead weights; and yet every returning day seemed to bring a fresh tempest with it, which kept the sea unceasingly agitated. All these circumstances could not fail to occasion renewed thoughtfulness, more especially as we have still more than

one hundred degrees of east longitude to run down, before reaching our intended port, and are so frequently compelled to 'lie to,' for our safety, lest the sea should overwhelm us altogether. Thus I was letting in fear and doubts, and listening to the tempter's insinuations, notwithstanding the multitude of mercies which have been showered upon us for our deliverance. Such is the frailty of human nature, that when we see the waves of adversity boisterous about us, we begin to sink, by letting in fear at the prospect, although fully sanctioned at setting out by the Lord himself: even the brightest gleam of sunshine soon loses its gladdening influence on our minds, unless again and again renewed by the ever-blessed Master, who having been touched with a feeling of our manifold infirmities, pities the weakness of poor mortal dust. After passing through considerable mental conflict, in contrition I went upon the deck, supposing from the great motion of the vessel, that the storm had continued all the night, and that we were still 'lying to;' when, to my surprise, I found a bright and beautiful morning, the weather apparently entirely changed, the wind fair, and the vessel gradually pursuing her route; but the great and diverse swells of the sea still occasioned her to labour hard, nearly as much as during the storm in the fore part of the night. I could not help feeling ashamed and mortified in abasement of self, in finding I had been thus duped by the grand adversary, who, ever on the alert and unwearied, had found the 'watch' neglected in a darkened gloomy hour of trial and perplexity; and thus he improved the opportunity to his own advantage, leaving me covered with self-reproach as in dust and ashes.

27*th*—It is cause of humble admiration and gratitude to observe within the last few days, an improvement in the health of my Charles; considering the cold and damp to which he has been so long exposed, without having felt the glow of a fire the whole winter, and the small portion of exercise that can possibly be obtained, beyond what the motion of the vessel supplies, he is certainly sustained in a very remarkable manner. I have of late been much comforted by a circumstance brought to my recollection respecting him, I feel no hesitation in believing, by the good remembrancer,—although many years have passed away since it occurred; but a lively image of the whole event is

now strikingly brought home to my mind. When he was about four years old, it was concluded that the time was come for him to begin to attend meetings; and I well remember sitting under the gallery in Sheffield Meeting, about twenty-one years ago, when he was conducted by one of his brothers to a seat at the top of the meeting, for the first time. I had been in my seat a short time previously, and on seeing him led up the side aisle, it sprang up in my heart to offer him that day unto the Lord. Although at the time a pretty strong impression was engraven on my mind which yielded a peaceful review, to the best of my knowledge it has since been as much obliterated, as a thing that never took place, from that period until a few days ago, when it was recalled fresh and fragrant to my understanding.

28*th*.—The height of the waves compelled us again to 'lie to,' under storm canvass, for thirty hours. This gale increased to a violent degree, but differed in most respects from all we had previously been called to witness. In all the preceding cases there had been a change of a favourable nature to cheer us through the dreary tempest; but now every alteration appeared to be against us, serving only to render our situation more and more alarming. It did seem as if we were now cast off, and left to the fury of the wind and waves; and notwithstanding we had with our own eyes seen as it were Jordan driven back, and the waters of the Red Sea stand as an heap, for our deliverance; yet now the glorious presence was withdrawn, and so completely hidden, that no trace could be perceived to administer one glimmering ray of hope in the midst of our complicated distress. On looking at our forlorn situation, and the overwhelming appearance of the storm, the fury of which had been only aggravated by every change which had so far taken place, it now seemed too late for any thing to occur that could operate in our favour, as the sea was running in confused heaps different ways in a frightful manner, caused by the wind having shifted to different points, and from each point blowing furiously. About three o'clock in the afternoon, the mercury fell lower and lower, when we were overtaken with a squall of wind, truly appalling and terrific, which in a short time afterwards was succeeded by a second still more violent; but through the medium of these two

dreadful blasts, which at first threatened nothing but destruction, our deliverance was effected. Such was the fury of these two typhoons, that they actually, in a short space of time, changed the wild and disfigured surface of the troubled ocean from unruly mountains to a rugged level, by their boisterous breath, leaving nothing but a sea white as milk with foam. From this time the storm subsided, and at midnight we were again enabled to bear away for Van Diemen's Land, distant about four thousand seven hundred miles.

31*st*.—'Lying to,' with an increasing tempest around us. Charles and myself sat down together, it being Fifth-day; though "troubled on every side, yet not distressed; perplexed, but not in despair; persecuted" again and again, but verily "not forsaken; cast down but not destroyed;"—however much like two poor outcasts tossing on the bosom of the restless waters, far from friends and native home, but under a peaceful feeling of resignation and poverty of spirit. The barometer was low yesterday, but had begun to rise a little: in a short time, however, it began again to sink, and dropped down to 28·50, being an inch lower than when we experienced the hurricane in the neighbourhood of the Cape of Good Hope. This circumstance spread a gloom over us; having witnessed such dreadful weather about three weeks before, when the mercury was at 29·50, and knowing the correctness of the barometer in former cases, our apprehensions were increasingly awakened; and under a sense that another close trial was not far distant, we endeavoured to wait patiently the event, though in painful suspense, with, I believe, a full surrender of ourselves to the will of Almighty God;—remembering my poor, scattered orphan family and dear relations and friends everywhere,—in earnestness and brokenness before Him, who knows the anguish of a tribulated soul. Towards evening the wind and sea increased in such a dreadful manner, that the horrors of the scene cannot be faithfully described. It blew a perfect hurricane; and although we had only sufficient storm canvass set to keep the vessel's head to the sea, yet she seemed in danger of being torn to pieces with the intense pressure, against which she had to struggle for some hours together. The captain was much alarmed,

and said, 'If she gets through this, she will get through any thing.' The agitated waters broke in upon us on every side, like cascades, frequently loading the deck with their weight: the whole frame of the vessel trembled and shook with the strain in an unusual manner. This hurricane at length became a steady gale of wind, but very heavy.

Eighth Month 8th.—It is now more than ten weeks since we sailed from Rio de Janeiro; we are still more than three thousand miles from our desired port, and yet the winds have mostly blown from favourable quarters, but often with such violence as to render them unavailing, on account of the tremendous seas they have occasioned. A larger vessel would have profited by many of the gales, which have compelled us to 'lie to' until they have moderated; when, perhaps, a change of wind to a less favourable quarter has succeeded, our progress has been much retarded by the old swell yet remaining. What little we do gain seems like fetching water from the well beside the gate of Bethlehem, at the risk of natural life; yet I am fully persuaded that it has been "good for us to be here."

10th.—The two last days the weather has been very rugged, but it became more gentle in the course of last night, and some heavy showers of rain have greatly assisted in stilling the swellings of the restless waters; which allowed our ship's company to sit down together in a good degree of comfort, it being First-day.

16th.—During the tempest of yesterday, it was very evident that several on board were much discouraged at its awful strength. It was acknowledged by the captain, mate, and others, that they had never beheld such a dreadful sea at any time before; and yet the little *Freeling* was preserved through it all with comparatively slight injury. Such indeed have been the renewed extendings of abounding mercy, as ought to be sufficient to cause even those of little faith to be ashamed, and to cease any longer to doubt: but, alas! the rod once withdrawn, is soon forgotten; as is the loving-kindness of the Lord, when the danger is passed away: like Israel of old, we sing His praise, but soon forget His works.

CHAPTER XI.

VAN DIEMEN'S LAND — JAMES BACKHOUSE AND G. W. WALKER—SYDNEY—NORFOLK ISLAND—TAHITI.

Towards morning on the 9th of Ninth Month, the strength of the wind was so greatly diminished, that by eleven o'clock, A.M., we made sail, and stretched to the northward again. Soon after noon the small islands of Pedro Blanco and the Eddystone were plainly ascertained; afterwards the main land appeared, and we steered at once for Tasman's Head, entering Storm Bay just at nightfall. After beating about for the next forty-eight hours with contrary winds and great fatigue to the men, we entered the Derwent before dark on the 10th instant, and were at last favoured to anchor safely off Hobart Town at eleven, P.M., nearly opposite Mulgrave battery; and eventually moored with two anchors, close to the garden of the Lieutenant-Governor Arthur. Next morning I ascertained, that our dear friends James Backhouse and George Washington Walker were still in these parts and well.

[In a letter from Hobart Town Daniel Wheeler thus writes:] My friends will bear with me whilst recapitulating the gracious dealings of our heavenly Father, as set forth in the extracts from my Journal. Though many storms and tempests have been enumerated, yet not one half of what it has been our portion to witness, has been told. It may suffice for me to say, that we have been compelled to seek refuge more than twenty times from the fury of the hostile elements by 'lying to,' with the ship's head to the wind and waves: and this has been resorted to only in cases of extreme danger.

[In the same letter, he alludes to one of the sailors, who, it appears, had been remarkably visited, and brought under feelings of deep condemnation, and who opened his mind to him in a letter:—of this man he remarks;] a lapse of two months had occurred from the time of his

first impression, before he divulged the secret in that letter. I had perceived in his eye, the anguish of his wounded spirit, but knew not the cause until he wrote to me. He had several times been in danger of being washed overboard, and once nearly fell from one of the yards when aloft; but no outward danger was sufficient wholly to bring down his stubborn heart. But the power within was too strong for him, he could not resist it; thus verifying the assertion of the Apostle, "greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world." I think this circumstance cannot fail to animate the hearts of all our dear friends, particularly such as have been instrumental in any degree, towards promoting the great work in which we are engaged, and cause them to feel a lively participation in that heavenly joy, which welcomes the repenting and returning sinner to his Father's house. *

[In a letter from Hobart Town, bearing date the 21st of Tenth Month, 1834, the following passages occur.] Soon after my last letters were finally closed, our dear friends James Backhouse and George Washington Walker, returned to Hobart Town: as we had previous information of the time they were expected to arrive, we were at their lodgings in readiness to receive them. They were not strangers to our being here, as the arrival of the *Henry Freeling* had been publicly notified in the newspapers, in connexion with my name, as a member of the Society of Friends. Our joy at meeting so remote from England, I believe was mutual, and can be more easily conceived than described; and it has been since not a little heightened by our having been favoured and strengthened to labour unitedly together, for the promotion of the same great and glorious cause, in the different meetings which have been held at this place since our arrival, as also in opportunities of a more private nature.

With a little exception, our sailors have exceeded my most sanguine expectations as to behaviour and conduct in general; and I think no men could have suffered more hardships from the weather, than they have endured. For a time we gave them some wine, but whether from

* The individual here referred to was William Bush, respecting whom a memoir has been published by Friends' Tract Association.

its becoming flat and vapid by washing about in the cask, when a quantity of it had been taken out, or with the change from cold to heat, and then to cold again, some of them declined drinking it, on account of its not suiting them; so that they had nothing but water for months together. It is a little remarkable, that, although they have been sometimes wet, and in wet clothes, not for a day or two, but for a week together,—when their teeth have chattered with cold, with no warm food,—the sea having put the fires out, even below the deck; and the water filtering through the deck on their beds below, and not a dry garment to change;—yet not a single instance of the cramp has occurred amongst them, nor the slightest appearance of the scurvy, even in those who have beforetime been afflicted with it, and still bear the marks about them: and with the solitary instance of one man, who was forced to quit the deck for two hours during his watch, from being taken unwell, every man and boy have stood throughout the whole voyage in a remarkable manner. They have been plentifully supplied with fresh provisions and vegetables since we arrived, and with some malt liquor also; but their character for sobriety and temperance, and general good behaviour, has warranted every reasonable indulgence likely to conduce to their health and welfare.

My dear friends will perhaps remember, that the Society Islands have always been the primary object before my mind; and this originally gave rise to our making the attempt to reach them by the way of Cape Horn as the nearest route. And although Van Diemen's Land and New South Wales are also included in the certificates granted me, yet the Society Isles are still the object bright before me, as the first point of destination to be aimed at. It appears that our dear friends, James Backhouse and George Washington Walker, are now about closing their engagements in Van Diemen's Land, and will be ready to proceed hence at the same time as ourselves; we therefore propose conveying them to Port Jackson, where it is my intention to call, for the purpose of recruiting our stock of coals, oil, &c.

[Soon after the foregoing was written, Daniel Wheeler was taken so seriously ill, with a complaint affecting the lungs, that his recovery seemed doubtful: he remarks:]

For a time it almost seemed as if I had come to Van Diemen's Land to lay down my head there; but in this prospect, resignation to whatever should be the will of my heavenly Father, was the stay and comfort of my mind; bearing it up above the bondage of fear, even to a degree of rejoicing in humble trust and confidence in the inconceivable love of Him, who "came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance;" permitting them to know and sensibly to feel the riches of that universal, heavenly grace, which triumphs over all the depravity of human nature, where its operations are submitted to: begetting a faith that can remove every mountain of sin and opposition, and can give the victory over death, hell, and the grave, to all who believe in its powerful and saving efficacy: who "live not unto themselves, but unto Him who died for them and rose again; and "because He lives, they live also," through the mercy of God, in their crucified and glorified Redeemer. The season was particularly late and cold; deep snow was lying upon the mountains in sight; and cold rains almost daily falling in torrents, rendered the streets and roads in the town nearly impassable, excepting a few of the principal thoroughfares that are macadamized. No regularly formed footpaths are yet established in any part of the colony; so that getting about on foot was almost impracticable for invalids, even in an advanced stage of convalescence.

[After making several visits to take leave of their friends, previous to their departure, in company with James Backhouse and George Washington Walker, they weighed anchor in the evening of the 11th of Twelfth Month; having previously had a parting opportunity in the family of the Lieutenant-Governor, George Arthur, who uniformly treated them with kindness and hospitality. They had however, no sooner left the quiet moorings of the Derwent river, than they had to encounter the buffetings of the stormy main. This was more or less the case, during the whole passage from the Derwent to Port Jackson. In the night of the 19th, they were in considerable danger of being driven amongst the rocks by some unknown current; but were favoured to discover and escape the danger in time, although the night was dark, and much rain falling. Daniel Wheeler adds,

although the danger which threatened, was evident and imminent, yet our little company were preserved in quietness, and divested of fear. At eleven o'clock, next day, the 20th, they saw the light-house and signal-staff on the South Head, which forms one side of the entrance of Port Jackson. A timely signal having been made, they got a pilot on board on nearing the reef, and immediately worked up the bay towards the harbour. At two o'clock P.M., they were favoured safely to anchor in Sydney Cove, at a convenient distance from the shore. They met with a cordial reception, not only from persons to whom they had letters of recommendation, but from many others also; marks of respect, kindness, and hospitality were also shown them by the Governor and local authorities. Meetings for worship, on First and Fifth days, were regularly held on board the vessel during their stay, which several persons usually attended.

The deplorable situation of some of the aboriginal inhabitants is thus described.]

Twelfth Month 23*rd.*—After dinner, we landed on an uninhabited part of the coast, on the north side of the harbour, to obtain sufficient exercise; and accidentally met with an aboriginal family, consisting of two females, one of them far advanced in years, and three children, the offspring of the younger woman. There were two men not far off, who belonged to them, but they kept aloof. These women appeared to be in a poor state of health, and exceedingly shrunk: they could talk a little English, and on our making them some trifling presents, and saying that some of us would see them again, if they could be there to-morrow, one of them said, 'You, welcome; come.' It was affecting to behold the degraded condition of these natives of the soil, which condition is greater than can well be conceived, and such as to render every attempt to assist them fruitless: if money be handed to them, it is immediately exchanged for rum; or if clothes, they are forthwith sold or exchanged for whatever will procure strong drink: such is the curse entailed upon them since their acquaintance with the British; who are doubtless chargeable, not only on this score, but for much of the demoralization of these harmless people.

24*th.*—Whilst dining on shore to-day, we had both windows and doors open; such is the heat prevailing on this side of the globe, on what is commonly called Christmas eve.

(Extract from Journal continued.)

30*th.*—At noon we received a visit from Samuel C. Marsden, who has been connected with this colony, in and out, more than forty years, as a Church missionary. He has been six times in New Zealand, and speaks highly in favour of its enterprising inhabitants, with whom he has so frequently resided in peace and safety, and amongst whom, he would have no fear whatever of dwelling again, if occasion required it. His great experience in these parts, the plainness and simplicity of his manners, and the abundant store of authentic information he possesses, made his company not only edifying but animating.*

First Month 7th, 1835.—Having at times for the last two or three days, felt my mind drawn towards holding a public meeting with the inhabitants of Sydney, and dear James Backhouse unexpectedly inquiring whether I had thought anything of such a meeting, I felt a willingness to unite with him, in the freedom of the gospel, to appoint one, and to take the necessary steps to procure a suitable place to hold it in. (The old Court-house was obtained, and the meeting was held in the evening of the 11th.) Notwithstanding another meeting was to be held under the same roof at seven o'clock, appointed by a Baptist preacher, yet we had the satisfaction to witness a crowded attendance at ours, of nearly five hundred persons; and many that could not be seated, went away altogether, but a large number stood the whole time; perhaps from the novelty of its being the first meeting of Friends for public worship held at Sydney, and we hope, on the part of many from a desire to be benefited, the room was presently filled: several present were persons who held public stations in the town and neighbourhood. It was upon the whole, from beginning to end, a solid opportunity: James Backhouse and myself were largely opened

* This devoted servant of Christ is since deceased; he died on the 12th of the Fifth Month, 1838.

in testimony amongst them: James Backhouse appeared a second time, and concluded the meeting in prayer. From the quietness and solemnity which reigned throughout the whole time of the meeting, it might have been supposed that the congregation consisted wholly of persons accustomed to stillness and silence, instead of an audience, of which scarcely an individual had ever before been present at a Friends' meeting, or was even aware of the manner in which they are usually conducted: but the glory was and is the Lord's.

21*st*.—I have found the advantage of placing our sailors upon rather a different and more respectable footing than those of other ships; and the result has been, so far, that we have had comparatively no trouble with them. It is so common a thing for the shipping to lose their men here, that a few days ago, the question was put to me by General Bourke, the Governor, 'Have you lost any of your men?' and it is satisfactory to know, that some of the strangers who have attended our meetings on board, have in more than one instance remarked, (as if of rare occurrence,) that our sailors look more like healthy, fresh-faced farmers, than men come off a long voyage. The generality of those we see daily, have a thin and worn-down appearance, particularly when they belong to ships that supply them daily with ardent spirits; our sailors have each a quart of beer per day, of weak quality, being brewed as is customary here with only sugar and hops, both of which are very cheap. I found it advisable to keep up a desire in the crew, to make themselves acquainted with the art of navigation; and this could not be done without their being furnished with materials for its accomplishment, such as quadrants, slates, pens, paper, &c.; and though the expense of such things ultimately devolves upon themselves, yet, at the moment of purchase, the advance of money has been unavoidable on my part.

23*rd*.—Captain Saunders, who commanded the *Science*, when she brought out our friends James Backhouse and George Washington Walker, came on board. He related to us the extraordinary escape from shipwreck he had experienced off Cape Horn, on his return from that voyage; when the *Science* by one stroke of a heavy sea was dismasted, and

turned nearly bottom uppermost. The mate and part of the crew were washed overboard at the same time, and never seen again. Captain Saunders and his companions continued on board the vessel in this situation for six days and nights, when the floating hull was observed, and taken for a whale, by one of the South Sea whalers, which ultimately was the means of rescuing them from being wrecked on a barren and inhospitable coast, from which they were only about two days' drift when discovered. The everlasting Arm was signally displayed on this occasion, as they were so near the coast, as to be quite out of the usual tract of every description of vessel; and yet one was actually brought near enough to descry the hull, and save the helpless crew, though at considerable risk to themselves.

[They sailed from Sydney on the 13th of Second Month, accompanied by James Backhouse and G. W. Walker, whom they conveyed to Norfolk Island on a visit to the Penal Settlement there.]

Third Month 4th.—At day-light, we got sight of land, and gliding rapidly towards it, Mount Pitt on Norfolk Island and Philip Island, were both plainly in sight soon after breakfast. When near enough to the Penal Settlement station, we made the private signal, according to written instructions received from the government at Sydney. Soon after this, a boat was discovered coming from the shore, in the direction of our vessel, which at length arrived with a military officer; who brought us a hearty welcome from the commandant, Major Anderson, accompanied by an invitation to his house. On ascertaining that although the landing was dangerous, it was yet practicable in a suitable boat, James Backhouse and George Washington Walker concluded to make an attempt to return with this officer. We were thus hastily and unexpectedly torn from each other, at a short notice; and although time was only afforded to take an abrupt farewell, yet we all keenly felt the moment of separation, but I trust with feelings that will lastingly remain, through the frequent renewal of Divine love.

10th.—Since leaving Norfolk Island, but more parti-

cularly within the last three or four days, it has been to me at times a trying, proving season. The loss of the company of our dear friends, with whom we had been closely and sweetly connected for more than five months, either by sea or land,—the steady opposition of the winds, since we separated,—the great distance we have yet to go,—the advanced state of the season, towards the autumn in these regions,—and yet above all, the absence of Him in whom my soul delighteth,—combined to weigh down and oppress my poor, tossed mind, beyond the usual degree. But in the depths, although unable to draw nigh, I endeavoured to look towards the holy temple: I remembered the Lord, and my prayer was, I trust, permitted to come in unto Him; and He remembered a poor unworthy creature, and in his own way and time was graciously pleased to speak comfort, and to seal instruction. The affecting instance of the dear Son of God himself, was brought to my remembrance, "who was made sin for us, who knew no sin," and died, "the just for the unjust, that He might bring us to God;" when, in the very act of child-like and lamb-like obedience, and meek submission to His holy Father's will, from the extreme depth and weight of suffering upon Him for the sins of poor, lost, guilty man, He poured forth the agonizing query "My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?" and I am renewedly persuaded that these present trials, and proving baptisms, are all in unutterable and inconceivable love and mercy, dispensed for the preservation of that precious life which is hid with Christ in God.

This morning, 29th of Fourth Month, about half-past one o'clock, the mountains of the long-looked-for Tahiti were discovered through the gloom upon our lee-bow. It will be eleven weeks to-morrow since we left Sydney, and with the exception of the equinoctial gale, we have during the voyage, for the most part, been favoured with fine weather, but with an unheard-of proportion (for these seas) of contrary winds during nearly the whole time, completely setting at nought all former experience.

30*th.*—At noon passed through Matavai bay. A canoe with four of the natives came off to us, bringing oranges, guavas, and other kinds of fruit. We were all pleased with the openness and simplicity of these people. At two

o'clock P.M., we took the pilot on board, and immediately entered the channel within the reefs; but after getting through the most dangerous part, it fell calm, which obliged us to drop an anchor for the night, directly opposite the house of George Bicknell, so close to the shore, that a mooring hawser was made fast to one of his cocoa-nut trees. By this time our deck was covered with the natives. Just as we were ready to go on shore to take tea at George Bicknell's, to whom, as deputy Consul, the mail brought from New South Wales had been delivered, the young king (or perhaps it is more correct to say, the husband of the queen) came on board, with his younger brother and uncle, and several others; they behaved with great openness and cheerfulness, and seemed highly pleased to see us. Our captain was personally known to them already. They soon looked round the vessel, apparently delighted; left us a basket of oranges, and said they would come again to-morrow. To my great rejoicing, the pilot soon after coming on board, informed us of the entire disuse of ardent spirits in Tahiti; saying 'rum is no good here.' The total prohibition of spirituous liquors has been so strongly enforced, that they have taken them out of private houses without exception, and thrown them away; and the natives have carried it to the length of smelling the breath of people, to ascertain whether they had been used, and if found to be the case, a severe fine was imposed; so that a person well known to lead a thoroughly sober life was not allowed to have such a thing in his possession, but was liable at any time to undergo a search.

Fifth Month 1*st.*—In the forenoon, George Pritchard, the resident missionary, came on board; for whom we were bearers of many letters and parcels, which proved very acceptable: in the afternoon we visited his habitation, and were kindly received by his wife and family. George Pritchard very kindly inquired whether I wished to be at the worship of the Tahitians, next First day; but I informed him that I believed it would be best for me to be with my own crew on that day.

Having endeavoured to keep my mind exercised to ascertain the will of my Lord and Master, it was with me to tell George Pritchard that the first step which I had

to take, was to request a conference with the whole of the missionaries in this district; asking him if they had any stated times for meeting together by themselves: he said they had, but a special meeting could be convened for the occasion. On considering a little, he found that their next quarterly meeting in regular course was to be held the second week in the present month. At present, I see no further than to attend this conference, and there produce the certificates furnished by my dear friends in England; humbly trusting, that the path of my future proceeding will be graciously manifested in due time, and strength and perception mercifully afforded to enable me to walk faithfully in it. I had been unwell on the 12th instant, but having passed a more favourable night, on the morning of the 13th instant, I felt no hesitation about proceeding to Papáoa, as the day was fair overhead.

Having understood that on the present occasion, the principal chiefs from all parts of the island would be there, and a large muster of the inhabitants residing in this district, it occurred to my mind that it would be a favourable medium, through which my arrival might be publicly announced to all the distant districts, if at a suitable time my certificates were read. From the wind having sprung up a fresh breeze against us, we were rather late in reaching our destination; and Henry Nott, the senior missionary, had taken his seat in the meeting before we got to it. We followed George Pritchard through a large number of people already assembled, until we got up to Henry Nott; who, on being consulted, immediately consented that it should be done, when their service was over. They commenced by George Pritchard giving out a hymn, then part of the epistle to the Ephesians was read, after which George Pritchard kneeled down and prayed; another hymn was then sung, and was followed by the sermon, delivered by Charles Wilson, from a text out of the same epistle; when this was finished, another hymn was given out, at his request, and he afterwards finished with prayer. Some business then came on relating to the affairs of the Missionary Society, when the queen of the island took her seat as its president. We merely sat as silent spectators through the whole of this, which from beginning to end was

conducted in the Tahitian language. As only George Pritchard sat between myself and the queen, I observed that she was employed in reading my certificates, which had been previously laid upon the table. The whole of my certificates were then audibly read in the Tahitian language by George Pritchard; who took great pains to give ample explanation whenever needful. The marked attention and solidity of countenance manifested by the Tahitians, was both striking and comforting; and the solemnity which spread over this large assembly had previously covered my mind as with a mantle, contriting my spirit under a sense that the great Master himself was there. After the reading of the certificates was gone through, profound silence reigned. I asked if I might say a few words, which was at once permitted, and George Pritchard agreed to interpret for me. I requested him simply to repeat what I said, and I have reason to believe this was faithfully done; and was to the best of my recollection after this manner: 'I have no wish to trespass upon the time of this meeting. I was desirous that these documents might be read, which would account for a stranger being present, and inform all that I came not here in my own will, but in the will of my Lord and Master, whose I am, and whom I desire to serve to my latest breath; and would also let you know, that I came with the full unity and consent of that branch of the Christian Church in England, of which I am a member. And now, grace, mercy, and peace from God, the Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, be multiplied upon all the inhabitants of this land; and may the God of peace, who brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant, keep our hearts and minds,' &c.

After I sat down, a solemn silence again prevailed, until one of the natives, a supreme judge, broke it by addressing me by name, which he had caught from the certificates; and declaring on behalf of himself and the islanders, that the manner of my coming among them was very satisfactory, because what had been read and spoken, was in accordance with the gospel, which they had been taught, and were acquainted with. He also at considerable length touched upon the great distance I had come

over the deep waters to see them, and to do them good; that in return, their hearts, and arms, and habitations, were open to receive me; duly appreciating the disinterestedness of the motive that had induced the step; having no trade, nor other object in view. He hoped I should visit all their schools, and stroke the heads of the children; that he should now deliver them all into my hands. I told George Pritchard to say, that the dear children would always have a strong hold, and a strong claim upon my heart. Much more transpired that was truly consoling and comforting; and the missionaries who spoke on the occasion, I believe, most fully and cordially co-operated in endeavouring to explain my views to the people in terms of strong approbation.

When it was all over, Henry Nott kneeled down, and concluded the meeting with prayer in the Tahitian. The natives then generally rose from their seats, and began to flock round us, and to shake hands with Charles and myself in a very hearty manner, and without regard to order, age, or sex, from the humblest peasant to the bronze-coloured queen, her two aunts, and the numerous chiefs, who, I think, are the stoutest, most giant-like men I ever saw assembled together. About 800 persons were collected at this meeting; but the house was so large that it seemed impossible to make any accurate estimate; for my own part, I should have supposed the number not less than a thousand. The judge before spoken of, in one of his speeches, (for he spoke three times,) hinted that they perceived I was not exactly of the same description of Christians that had hitherto come amongst them, or I belonged to a different body. This, however, did not seem to stand in the way. Some days previously to this meeting being held, the young king and several chiefs came on board to breakfast, six in number. After breakfast, our usual reading in the Holy Scriptures was introduced, during which they behaved with great attention and propriety; sitting as still, in the time of silence, both then and at the pause before breakfast, as if accustomed to it. When they were about going away, a telescope and a piece of handkerchiefs were presented to the king, and a shawl to each of the others; with which they seemed highly pleased. Through the medium of an

Englishman, who had been sent for on the occasion, the king was told, that I had something in reserve for Pomare, the queen, expecting she also would pay us a visit. They behaved with much openness and affability, and told us in plain terms that they liked us, because we were like themselves, and did not make ourselves very high to them.

I had a conference with the missionaries of the Papáoa district, who, although only four in number, are capable of rendering me much assistance in forwarding my views, and interpreting to the people. I was fully aware the missionaries were under an impression that I was come out to inspect the state of the missions, and particularly that of the schools; private letters had reached them some months ago to that effect from London; but they were informed that now the missionary meeting was over, I was waiting as at the posts of wisdom's gate, not knowing to what I might next have to turn my hand: this explanation at once placed me in a fresh point of view. An expression of desire to do all in their power to co-operate in the work, in any manner I could point out, was, I think, avowed by each individual; and we parted in brotherly love.

CHAPTER XII.

TAHITI.

Fifth Month 15*th.*—My mind having for some days past been brought into thoughtful solicitude for the best welfare of the crews of the vessels now lying at anchor about us, I mentioned it to my Charles soon after rising this morning; and seeing no way of being clear of the blood of these poor neglected people, but by appointing a public meeting, to be held next First-day, it was concluded to make the necessary arrangements for so doing. There was no doubt that the deck of one of the whaling vessels might have been procured for the purpose; but on considering the subject, it seemed best to have the deck of the *Henry Freeling* made use of.

17*th.* *(First-day.)*—By the accommodation of some planks kindly provided by the *Emerald*, our decks were extensively seated, and the planks were well covered with canvass, spare flags, &c.

At half-past ten o'clock, a bethel-flag, with which we have been furnished, was hoisted, as a thing understood by all sailors, and a little in their own way: this allowed half-an-hour for the boats to collect from each ship, in order that the time appointed (eleven o'clock,) might be kept to, and the quiet of the meeting preserved from late comers on board. Although the invitation, with the exception of George Pritchard's family, had not been extended by us beyond the shipping in the bay, several persons attended from the shore. The meeting at length settled down into stillness beyond our expectation. I thought there would scarcely be a single individual then present, except our own crew, that had ever before been at a meeting held exclusively after the manner of Friends. In this, however, I found I had been mistaken, as the mate of the *Lancaster* came on board the next day, and acknowledged he was a member of our Society, though, as

he stated, he had not kept close to it. He told us that he little expected to see a Friends' meeting held amongst these islands; but seemed glad of having an opportunity to attend one.

However long the time of silence might be thought, there was no restlessness sufficient to disturb the quiet of the meeting. Unexpectedly to myself, I felt an engagement of mind to state to the meeting, that the religious Society of which I was a member, had, from its earliest rise, been called upon to bear a faithful testimony to the excellency of silent worship and waiting upon God: that it was a noble testimony to the all-sufficiency and teaching of that grace which had appeared unto all men,—teaching all, and bringing salvation to all;—"for the grace of God that bringeth salvation, hath appeared unto all men, &c., looking for that blessed hope and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour, Jesus Christ," &c., to the end of the text. "For God is a Spirit: and they that worship him, must worship him in spirit and in truth:" and we are told in holy writ, by the Son, that "the Father seeketh such to worship him." I was then carried forth on the nature of true, silent, and spiritual worship, to a considerable length: and had to state, that my head would not have laid easy upon the pillow at a future day, if the attempt had not been made to collect the seamen of the fleet:—that sailors were a class of men more than most others separated from their homes and regular places of worship, particularly on these long voyages upon the mighty deep, for months and months together; but that the ample provision made by the glorious gospel for the restoration and redemption of mankind, boundless as its love, extended unto all: for He that said, "Let there be light, and there was light;" even "God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Jesus Christ." I had largely to proclaim some of the principal doctrines of the gospel, and was helped through, to my humble and thankful admiration. It was indeed a glorious, and I trust to some, a blessed meeting. I had, I think, more than once, to call their attention to the heavenly power that reigned over us

with precious solemnity, as a crown and diadem: and before the meeting closed, I had to acknowledge the same with prayer and thanksgiving, to the glory and the praise of my God.

20*th.*—The American ship *Emerald*, being about to sail for Manilla and the Phillipine Islands, and Captain Eaglestone having kindly offered, on application being made, to forward our views, in circulating the Scriptures in the Spanish language, he being on a trading voyage, and of extensive acquaintance, this morning eighteen Bibles, eighteen Testaments, eighteen *Letter* by J. J. Gurney *on Christianity*, with five copies of Wilberforce's *Practical View*, were got ready and delivered to that ship. We have met with great civility and willingness to lend a helping hand in many of the American captains: at the same time, we are frequently sensible of a mixture which cannot be reconciled. The foregoing remark has no allusion to the inconsistent conduct of the crews of many of the American vessels, which we have fallen in with here, that are called 'temperance ships.' At first I could not but view these with satisfaction, and with a degree of thankfulness, as likely to contribute by their example to the welfare of the islanders. But, alas! I now find, with horror and surprise, that the word 'temperance' applies only to the ships, and not to their crews, none probably of which are members of a Temperance Society; they are merely bound by articles, that the voyage shall be performed without any spirits being on board, except as medicine, and their sobriety only exists because they connot get the liquor; when on shore, and unbound by these articles, they are lamentably, in many instances, notorious for drinking to excess; and their immoral conduct at this place, makes me shudder for the awful and woful consequences, both as regards themselves, and the daughters of Tahiti. Although great exertion is made and promoted by the missionaries here to stop this overwhelming torrent of iniquity, yet all their measures are abortive, and can never be successful, unless co-operated with on the part of the masters of the shipping. Notwithstanding the disuse of spirituous liquors is rigidly enforced at Tahiti, and no person is allowed to have the article in his house; yet this bane of the human race is

still to be purchased on shore, and the supply is kept up by the American ships; it is clandestinely landed amongst the supposed empty casks which are sent on shore for water, (an instance of this kind took place a few days ago,) and by other methods. A considerable quantity was brought in last week by an American schooner from Valparaiso, and safely landed; but has since been discovered, the casks destroyed, and their contents totally lost. By what is said, I do not mean to imply that this gross immorality is confined solely to the crews of the American vessels, because those of the English are perhaps equally implicated, but with this difference, they do not assume the character of 'temperance ships.'

How dreadful and appalling the consideration, that the intercourse of distant nations should have entailed upon these poor untutored islanders a curse unprecedented in the annals of history; it is said that one-fourth of the whole population is miserably affected with disease brought amongst them, and kept up by the licentious crews of the shipping. Will not, shall not the Lord visit for these things?

23*rd*.—The king came on board to breakfast this morning by himself, but departed as soon as our reading was over. 'As attending the Tahitian worship has been frequently the companion of my thoughts for several days past, it seemed best for me to be in readiness by having the way opened for the ensuing First-day, (to-morrow,) should this be my portion. After communicating this to my son Charles, we concluded to go on shore, and mention the subject to George Pritchard. On seeing the latter, I told him that my mind had been drawn to attend the Tahitian worship to-morrow morning. He asked, if I meant to perform service there, or to sit as a spectator. 'To sit as a spectator,' I replied, 'but if required to speak, to have permission to do so.' He then said, 'You must not expect to find things in the same order as if you were at home;' and added, 'If you could come on shore about half-past eight o'clock in the morning, there would be time to look at the schools before the meeting begins: the meeting for worship begins at nine o'clock, but a prayer-meeting commences at sun-rise.' I cannot but

admire, with reverential gratitude and thankfulness, how in every instance of this kind that has yet occurred, mountains have become mole-hills, as a willingness has been wrought to approach them; and if it were not fixing a very high stamp upon ourselves, I should say, surely the blessed Master, in like manner as when he sent forth His disciples two and two formerly to every place where He intended to come, is already not only come, but has condescended to go before, and prepare the way for us poor creatures in a remarkable manner, in the hearts of others with whom we have to do.

On First-day morning, the 24th of Fifth Month, we proceeded to George Pritchard's house about the appointed time. We were much too early for the school, owing to there being no regular time kept amongst the people; and some having to come from considerable distances, are the more likely to be out of season when they arrive. The principal teacher, who is a deacon in the church, made his appearance; soon after which we followed to the school-house. A considerable number of children were collected: the boys sitting at one end of a long building, and the girls at the other; the teacher standing on one side, about midway between them. He gave out questions to the boys and girls alternately, which were answered in the same way by a few of the elder children in a singing tone simultaneously, the rest seeming to take but little interest in what was going on. We were told, that when the queen resided here, the number of children was much greater than at present; but as she now lives at Papáoa, such children as formerly attended here now go to the school at that place.

It was considerably more than half an hour after the fixed time, before we entered (what is called) the church, where a large number of persons were collected and collecting. The whole congregation were squatted on the floor, the building being in an unfinished state, and no seats as yet provided: they appeared to occupy the whole of the floor, which is very extensive. While they were proceeding in their usual manner, I endeavoured to draw near to the fountain of Israel, whose God is, and ever will be, He who giveth strength and power to his people. My heart was softened in an unusual manner, and the

creature was brought down into a state of nothingness: tears flowed beyond a capability of restraint, as "in the day of the great slaughter, when the towers fall," (the towers of pride, high-mindedness, and self-exaltation,) and the will of the creature subjected to the will of the great Creator; as shadowed forth by the prophet, when pointing to the spiritual conflict, and the accomplishment of the great work of regeneration in the heart of man, at that day when the Lord alone is exalted.* My mind was in a calm, and I was prepared to stand up when the proper moment arrived. At length the singing ended, and a universal stillness prevailed over the meeting, probably increased by expectation, which had for some time been stamped upon the countenances of the whole assembly.

"God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints,"—were the first words uttered by me; which being interpreted, were followed by,—'it is not an every day circumstance for a stranger thus to speak amongst you, probably what you never before witnessed; but it is according to the true order of the gospel that the prophets should speak two or three, that all might learn and all might be comforted,'—with more of the text; repeating again, for "God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints; proceeding with,—'I have nothing new to offer: the way to the kingdom is the same now as in the beginning; there is no variableness or shadow of turning with that God, with whom we have to do. The things of time may vacilliate and change; but the Rock of Ages remains unimpaired: it changeth not,—"the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, the Lord knoweth them that are his." This foundation is Christ Jesus: and no other foundation can any man lay than is laid. Every man's work will be made manifest, the day shall declare it, the fire of the Lord will try it: that only will stand which is built on Christ Jesus the righteous, that tried corner stone, elect of God, and precious indeed to them that believe,—though to the Jews a stumbling block, and to the Greeks foolishness; but to them who

* Isaiah xxx. 25.

are called, and who obey, "Christ, the power of God, and the wisdom of God." For this cause "God gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish but have everlasting life:"—with more on this important point. 'In looking over this large assembly, the love of God has filled my heart as I have sat amongst you:—may the Lord in heaven bless you, is the language that has arisen therein. It is this love that induced me to come amongst you; it is this love that would gather all into the heavenly garner of rest and peace. Endless in duration is the mercy of the Lord; free and unbounded is His love. His love has been long extended to these islands, and covered them as with a mantle. This island has had advantages beyond many others. I reminded them that many years had now elapsed since the sound of the gospel was first heard in their land: they had long had many parts of the Holy Scriptures in circulation, which from their earliest pages point to the Saviour. It was promised soon after the fall of man, that the seed of the woman should bruise the serpent's head. Moses declared to the people in his day,—"A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things;" and "the soul which will not hear that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people;" which led to the query, what return had been made for all this, and wherein had they been benefited by these great privileges. They had run well for a season: what had hindered them? What had prevented them, that they should have turned again as unto the weak and beggarly elements? If they had obeyed the gospel, this would not have been the case: they would by this time have been a pure people for their God. That unless there was a thorough alteration and change, the blessing intended for them would be withdrawn; and the rod would be administered for their iniquity. Continuing, —"Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die;" for your works are not perfect in the sight of God. "Remember, therefore, how thou hast received and heard; and hold fast, and repent." There is a great work to be done; for where is your hope when the present generation are summoned from works to rewards, if the younger children are not trained in suc-

cession? I had to call upon the parents to step forward before it was too late; they had all a part to take in it. Tahitian mothers had a large share devolving upon them; much depended upon their influence and example in endeavouring to train up their children in habits of civilized life, by letting them learn to read; (which at present is much neglected, and disliked both by parents and children;) that so they might partake in the advantages which are to be derived from the Holy Scriptures: reminding them, that "they that be wise, shall shine as the brightness of the firmanent; and they that turn many to righteousness, as the stars for ever and ever:" exhorting them, not to be overcome with evil, but to overcome evil with that which is good; that the promises are many, great, and precious, which are recorded in Holy Writ, to them that overcome, &c. Though, perhaps, more might be expressed than above noted, and with some variation as to the words; yet I believe that what is here inserted is the substance and principal part of what was uttered.

Having finished, I took my seat. Soon after this, George Pritchard concluded the meeting. When the whole congregation rose, the elderly people came forward to shake hands; but being pretty near one of the doors, we were soon carried outside by the current of people turning that way. There were upwards of a thousand people inside of the building, and a considerable number outside also: the doors and windows being all open, those without could hear about as well as those within.

Fifth Month 30*th*.—As attending the public places of worship here, can only be done to purpose on First-days, as it is only then that large bodies of the people are assembled; and as it is probable that I may have to see the whole population of the island before I can proceed any further; I have felt a little anxious to avail myself of these opportunities, so as not to protract the length of time we may have to remain here. In the afternoon my mind became more uneasy, and it seemed best to go on shore, and make inquiry as to the meetings to he held to-morrow; but I soon ascertained, that George Pritchard had been unexpectedly summoned to a distant district, and that notice had been generally given of this arrangement. I now found that I could not cut and con-

trive for myself, in my own will, way, and time; but that the Lord's time must be waited for.

31*st.* *(First-day.)*—In the forenoon, the decks being too damp, the crew were collected in the cabin, where we were joined by several strangers from the shore, including the family of the female who was on board yesterday, and some others. After having read the latter part of the epistle to the Hebrews, and a portion of the Psalms, we settled down into silent waiting, not aware that I should have any thing to offer. We continued to sit in this manner, deepening in solemnity; when I perceived that matter was gathering upon my mind, which from, as it were, a mere blank, was now filling under a quickening influence, until utterance was yielded to.—"That which may be known of God is manifest in man; for God hath shewed it unto him," as we are told in the epistle to the Romans; "God hath not left himself without a witness," in the heart of every son and daughter of the human race, however circumstanced, or wherever placed, sufficient if attended to, and co-operated with on our part, to enable us to work out our salvation with fear and trembling.—"He hath shewed thee, O man, what is good, and what doth the Lord require of thee, but to do justly, to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God." Thus was I led on step by step, until strengthened to shew, I trust, that there was no occasion to look to this minister or that minister, for we all had the great Minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle which the Lord hath pitched and not man,—the only true Teacher of His people; who continues to teach as never man taught. Declaring,—that this was "the grace of God that bringeth salvation," which hath appeared unto all men, teaching us, &c.;—that it was the poor in spirit, on whom the blessing was pronounced. In this manner, having turned the attention of the company to their heavenly Teacher, to an extent never contemplated when my mouth was first opened, we again settled down into solemn silence; and my peace flowed, under a consoling belief, that my remaining on board was in the ordering of the blessed Master. I have not met with a circumstance since leaving England, more truly cheering to my mind, than to find, that the Lord hath, even in this place, some of the seven

thousand, that have not bowed the knee to the image of Baal. I pray that I may yet meet with many more like this dear woman: before they went on shore, I had some interesting conversation with her.

Sixth Month 6th.—At George Pritchard's we met with John Davies, the missionary from Papara, who has been engaged here about thirty-five years; he is an intelligent elderly man. From his long residence he has acquired the greatest fund of information respecting these islands and their inhabitants, of any person we have yet met with; which he imparted in a manner to us highly interesting, and the more so, as its authenticity may be relied on. In speaking of the idols formerly in great repute here and in the neighbouring isles, he said, that when expostulating with the people, and endeavouring to convince them of the worthlessness of these wooden deities, which can neither see nor speak, nor stand, nor go; the most sensible amongst the natives would say, that they did not worship them as God; but that they served only to remind them of God, who is invisible, but in some manner connected with those images,—how they knew not. He considered that the received opinion of these islands having been originally peopled from South America, was altogether without foundation; indeed their having been peopled from Asia can be proved by striking facts. When traversing to the westward, the same language is invariably to be found on the islands, though, perhaps, in a variety of dialects: and this may be traced to Sumatra, Borneo, Malacca, &c.: and the same tradition as regards a deity may also be traced throughout them, more or less in degree, and varying in some particulars: but on going to the eastward, the language is less and less to be recognized, and eventually disappears altogether. The intelligent natives seem to be awakened to a confused idea of a general deluge having taken place at some time or other, from their having discovered, that upon the tops of the highest mountains in this island and others, the same marine substances are met with, as they are accustomed to find at the bottom of the sea. It has been the opinion of some, that the whole of these islands formed at one time a vast continent; but that by an unaccountable convulsion of the earth, this continent became

water, except the tops of the loftiest mountains, which constitute the islands as they stand at this day.

16*th*.—Last night had some conversation with George Pritchard about accompanying me to Bunaauia this afternoon. It was proposed that we should lodge at the house of David Darling, the missionary at that station, in order to attend the Tahitian worship at sun-rise to-morrow morning. Soon after dark we reached his hospitable mansion, and were received with great kindness by his wife and family; himself being from home among the Marquesan Islands, whither he had gone to assist in establishing a missionary. Being rather unwell in the evening, and having passed an almost sleepless night, I felt in poor condition when it was time to get ready to attend the sun-rise meeting of the Tahitians, on the morning of the 17th instant. A large number of the people collected together, and when the usual service of their own was gone through, I stood up, and George Pritchard interpreted for me, as at other times. The people were generally very attentive, and a solemn covering was permitted to prevail over us.

The printing-office is established at this place: we looked into it; but as the principal conductor of this work, David Darling, was absent, the press was standing still. The organization of the language, so as to admit the translation of the Holy Scriptures into the native tongue, is a work, the importance of which cannot be duly estimated nor conceived, as to the happy result, under the Divine blessing, that is in store for generations yet unborn; any more than the extent can be defined to which they may be permitted to circulate and diffuse revealed truth in the language of holy inspiration. This work, now considered near its completion, has been the labour of many years, in a climate wasting to the constitution of every European, being oppressively relaxing from the heat. Henry Nott has been a very laborious servant in this cause, without any regard to the many hardships and privations which the earliest settlers had particularly to encounter, and in which he deeply shared; his constitution is now sinking from long residence, and the effects of close sedentary application: who can doubt for a moment the devotedness of such a man?

20*th*.—George Pritchard came on board in the forenoon, and assisted in arranging a plan for accomplishing our visit to the remaining and most distant districts upon the island of Tahiti. It was concluded best for us to set off this afternoon towards Tiarei. Just before dark we landed upon the shore of Point Venus, the place from whence the celebrated navigator Captain James Cook, observed the transit of the planet Venus on the disk of the sun. Opposite that part of the coast of Tahiti, which we had next to traverse, there is no sheltering coral-reef for its protection; so that the remainder of our journey was exposed to the whole beat of the Pacific Ocean, and can only be performed when the weather is moderate.

Having with us Samuel Wilson, we were readily conducted to the habitation of his father Charles Wilson, the resident missionary at this station, and were kindly entertained by the family. As the passage round Point Venus is very intricate, and the water particularly shoal, the boat was taken round to the other side, while we were partaking of some refreshment: we lost no time in preparing again to embark. By ten o'clock P.M., it was declared that we were abreast of Tiarei; but the night was so dark, that the narrow entrance through the reef to it could not be distinguished even by the eagle-eyed Tahitians. The boat's mast was struck, and one of the natives stationed in the front with Samuel Wilson, to look out; and her head being turned shorewards, we edged gently down towards the foaming breakers, which were bursting on the rocky strand with thundering noise. As the rowing had now altogether ceased, the boat drifted only at the rate at which the swell of the sea hove her along. Having silently proceeded for some time in this way, and from the increasing roar of the restless waters, evidently drawing nearer and nearer to the margin of the crags, on a sudden there were symptoms of alarm, which could not be mistaken, on the part of the boat's crew; who now perceived that we had missed the only entrance that afforded a passage to the shore, and from our present position, a large lump of rock was in the way to the mouth of the channel, which the boat could not possibly escape. Our poor Tahitians immediately jumped into the sea, and did all they could to save the boat from being

dashed to pieces; but they could not prevent her from striking. She however only struck once, and lay quiet, the wave having so far receded, that she did not float enough to beat, and the next roller that came in, carried her completely over the obstruction. As the boat could not get close in, one of the men very soon had me upon his back, to prevent my getting wet: Samuel Wilson and my son Charles were landed in the same way. The journey altogether had been more speedy, and in many respects more favourable than is often witnessed, until we came to the last pinch, when the never-failing arm of Almighty power was again displayed in the needful time for our relief. We soon reached the mission-house where William Henry resides, to whom we were all personally known; by whom and his wife we were kindly accommodated for the night.

Tiarei, 21*st*.—Previously to the commencement of the Tahitian worship at nine o'clock in the morning, our time was pretty fully occupied with the family devotion and taking breakfast; after which we repaired to the meeting-house, it being agreed if I should have any thing to speak to the people, that Samuel Wilson was to stand as interpreter. The difference in appearance and in the general deportment of the people, at this distance from the contaminating effects of the shipping, was discernible throughout the greater part of the congregation, which was large. Being comforted by the sensible presence of the great Master, my mind was strengthened in an unusual manner. * * I sat down poor and empty; yet satisfied with favour, and full with the blessing of the Lord. Instead of the congregation beginning to separate immediately in a hasty manner, as we have sometimes witnessed, even the dear children kept their seats, with the whole of the company; a delightful pause ensued, which was short, but crowned with that solemnity not at our command; during which I humbly trust the thanksgiving of many redounded to the glory of God. Silence was at last broken by one of the chiefs expressing, on behalf of the assembly and himself, their thankfulness and satisfaction, and how welcome my visit had been to them; because, he said, 'You have preached to us the everlasting gospel, and have shown to us the propitiatory sacrifice

for the sins of mankind, Christ Jesus;' with something further, which when interpreted, I was fearful attached too much to the creature; and I requested Samuel Wilson to tell them not to look to the creature, but to their Creator.

On our return, the difficulty of passing through the reef was trifling and insignificant; the light of day had dispelled all our fears and its terrors: we could now see what we were about to encounter. In a few minutes we were clear of the breakers, and spreading our sail, directed our course towards Point Venus; where we arrived in something less than two hours. We were soon ready to go to meeting, but a very different scene awaited us, for instead of another feast of heavenly dainties, the Bridegroom was taken away, and a fast was proclaimed;—"then shall they fast in those days." It was a time altogether the most discouraging that had yet befallen us. The continual talking and light behaviour of a large portion of the people were truly painful, although several attempts were made to restore order amongst them; and the sound of some sharp strokes of the long sticks, by the agents employed to keep order, was distinctly heard amongst the younger people. I requested Samuel Wilson to say, that although I had brought nothing with me, a little matter had arisen which I did not wish to take away. The attention of the people being somewhat arrested, I proceeded with—"Be not deceived; God is not mocked; for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap." I then had to turn their attention to the sure and only foundation, Christ Jesus; and to the necessity of their believing in his inward and spiritual appearance in their hearts:—that without faith it is impossible to please God; pointing to the holy author and blessed finisher thereof, from whom alone it is to be derived. With some further additions, I sat down; and the meeting soon after closed. We called at the house to bid the family farewell, and immediately put off for the Bay of Papeéte.

[Arrangements having been made for visiting other out-stations on the island, they proceeded on the 24th instant as far as Papara.]

25*th.*—Rising by the break of day, and partaking of an early breakfast, we departed, as soon as the family devotion was over, for Tairapu, the south-eastern extremity of the island. By the way we landed at Mairi Péhe, and visited Samuel Henry and family. Here the whole process of making sugar was going forward, from pressing the juice out of the cane by rollers, and all the different stages that it passes through, until reduced to the granulated state fit for use. The sun was nigh setting when we reached the missionary station to which we were destined; but the beauty and various scenery of this part of the island served to enliven the last hour of a long day's exposure to the sun, and to quiet in some degree the sensations of hunger and weariness, by which we had long been assailed. The stupendous mountains, however steep and rugged, were clothed in the richest and fullest manner, with every kind of fruit and forest-tree which flourish in these tropical climates, where perpetual summer reigns; their luxuriance only now and then interrupted by falls of water hurrying down the steep declivities in beautiful cascades to the vales beneath: but the noise of these numerous cataracts is at once overpowered and lost in the roar of the mighty Pacific, whose waves incessantly thunder in endless succession upon the shores and reefs of Tahiti. The rattle of our oars on the ocean's glassy surface as we approached near the shore, soon drew forth the natives, with the missionary John Muggeridge Orsmond, who were ready to welcome and assist the strangers at their landing.

26*th.*—We went to look at the children who had assembled for school at sun-rising, with a considerable number of adults of both sexes. Everything here looked clean and comfortable, as if under diligent care and superintendence, as did the different buildings, the whole being in a respectable state of repair. Being aware that the children would be gratified by notice being taken of them, I shook hands with every individual, both young and old, that was collected. Whilst here, the people present exceedingly urged our staying with them over the next sabbath-day; but as my engagements were such as could not be altered, and would prevent my consistently complying with their request, I asked J. M. Orsmond to

interpret my answer: and to tell them, that as the whole congregation was to meet me in the afternoon, I trusted that the Divine presence would be with us, and if so, we should be satisfied with favour, and filled with the heavenly blessing of the Lord. In returning from the school, we had to pass through a long train of provisions, which the natives had provided in readiness to present to us, and which, through the medium of J. M. Orsmond, we were informed were intended for our food and refreshment. Although this provision was as unnecessary as it was undesired, I felt sensible of the kindness and goodwill of the people towards us, with which, at my request, they were made acquainted. The quantity of food thus furnished was enormous, sufficient probably to have sunk our boat, if it could have been taken into her. Besides large quantities of the mountain plantain, and a variety of other vegetables and fruits, there were several fowls; and I observed among them a black pig tethered. The native boat's crew, which had brought us from Papeéte, fared sumptuously for two days on the occasion; and I believe the major part was consumed or carried off by them, as is customary and expected at such times.

At four o'clock, P.M., the people assembled in the meeting-house; where I had full opportunity to clear my mind towards them. The district on this peninsula being quite distinct from those on the other, it was needful that my certificates should be read, as none of the people could have previously heard them. They were read accordingly, with ample explanation, by J. M. Orsmond, before I stood on my feet. The people were turned to the light of Christ Jesus in their own hearts. They were told that their being members of an outward and visible church, would not avail them in the great and awful day of account: that they must be members of the true gospel church; and unless this was attained whilst here, it would be too late, for it cannot be done hereafter: there is no work nor device in the grave, &c. Showing them how the primitive believers, through the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel, attained to it in their day; and that it is equally attainable at this day, through the purifying operations of the Holy Spirit. I urged and encouraged them to persevere in this great

and important work, earnestly desiring that they might not rest satisfied with an empty profession; but that they might come into possession of the inestimable pearl, the pearl of great price, the truth as it is in Jesus. It was indeed a solid and solemn opportunity, and one of those which I afterwards learned left the people hungering, I trust, for heavenly bread; whilst to myself it was productive of that soul-enriching peace, which can only be purchased by sharing in the blessed Master's cup of sufferings, of which I had drank, and under which I had been heavily bowed down during the afternoon, before going to the meeting, and there also. And now how can I sufficiently acknowledge and declare the condescending mercy and loving-kindness of my gracious Lord God, who in a particular manner was pleased to warm the hearts of those dear people with his life-giving presence; which made it an occasion truly memorable and caused many of them to rejoice and abound with thanksgiving to his praise and to his glory. The same evening the deacons of the church, Tetohi and Puna by name, came to J. M. Orsmond's house, and being seated with us, one of them produced a letter, written on behalf of the congregation at Tea-hu-poo; which, being directed to myself, I opened; it was found to contain the address that follows, as literally translated by Samuel Wilson.

'*Tea-hu-poo, 26th of June*, 1835.

'DEAR FRIENDS,

'The ministers, with the Brethren and Sisters in London.

'Peace be unto you, in the true God Jehovah, and in Jesus Christ his Son, who came into the world to save sinful men:—we indeed are sinful men. Here is Daniel Wheeler amongst us; and he has made known unto us all the good words of Jesus Christ. And comfort has grown in our hearts; and great pleasure has been to us from his words, concerning the words of Jesus the Messiah.

'It was indeed very great pleasure in his saying to us, Jesus is the pearl of great price: it is a pearl good within and good without. And many have been the good words that he has spoken to us. Now indeed we know assuredly he has true love to the brethren and sisters in all places where the things of Jesus are held. In that love he has come amongst us: and indeed our love is grown towards him and his son, in their making known on their

way the things of Jesus, and in their visit of love to all the brethren, and in inviting all to enter in to Jesus the Messiah.

'Signed on behalf of the Church,

'PUNA.'

The two men who came with this letter, (Tetohi and Puna) remained with us until near midnight; and I think it may be said, that by the breaking of bread our spiritual eyes were opened to perceive, that the great Master was there in marvellous condescension and mercy to bless the opportunity. I was reminded of the passover, and was constrained to declare amongst them,—'This is the true supper—this is the sacrament indeed, as you call it:' it could not be denied, for the Lord's power was over all. One of those present observed more than once, 'This is what is so much wanting amongst us—spiritual religion: this is what is so much wanting.'

27*th.*—Rose early, and after breakfast took leave of the family, and embarked forthwith for Papara. We reached Mairi Péhe, (about forty miles,) before two o'clock, P.M.; Samuel Henry rode on horseback to the Mairi, whilst we pushed on in the boat, intending to meet together on the spot. This Mairi was, during the days of idolatry, considered the most sacred place upon the island: it is spoken of by Captain James Cook, who visited it when in its full splendour. At present it appears to be nothing more than a stupendous heap of stones, almost hidden with bushes and trees; here formerly human sacrifices were plentifully offered. Parting with Samuel Henry, we continued our course to Papara, and passed through the opening of the reef with a strong current, before the sun went down. At this place the boys were amusing themselves in the surf, by lying at full length on their backs upon boards, and letting the rolling, curling breakers, whirl them precipitately down the liquid slope to the gulf below. Some of the boys best acquainted with this slippery sport, by watching the proper moment to launch forth, were hurled with great velocity to considerable distances, without being dislodged from their boards; while the unskilful would be impetuously rolled over by the curling wave, and for a time altogether hidden in the foam below. We were received with kindness by the ancient missionary John Davies, at whose house we passed the night.

28*th. (First-day.)*—At nine o'clock, A. M., the Tahitian worship commenced. John Davies had previously told me, that if I should have any thing to speak to the people, he would interpret for me. When the customary service was gone through, and he came down from his pulpit, I rose and stood near him. [When the attention of the people was attracted, and stillness prevailed, D. W. communicated what was upon his mind; he adds,]—notwithstanding there was reason to apprehend that many would be able to collect but a small part of what was said, on account of the feeble state of the interpreter, yet it was so evident that the Divine presence and power reigned over all, that I had to appeal to the people as witnesses to the solemnizing influence with which we were favoured. I trust the Lord alone was exalted this day and magnified; and the people turned to their true teacher, Christ Jesus; whose name shall be great in every nation, from the rising of the sun to the going down of the same. What might be the feelings of others on this occasion, I am not aware; it was to myself a highly favoured, precious season, the sense and remembrance of which is relieving, and still abiding: and although some days have now passed away since this event took place, it yet raises in my heart a tribute of thanksgiving, and a song of praise to my great, and bountiful, and ever merciful Creator and Preserver.

[They returned from Papara the same evening.]

[Literal translation, by Samuel Wilson of Point Venus, of a letter, received this day, from the Queen, in which she remits the port dues on the *Henry Freeling*.]

'*Tahiti*, 30*th of June*, 1835.

'I do away with the money for the anchoring of the vessel. This is the reason why I do away with it, because thine is a visit of love, and not a trading voyage. If it was a trading voyage, it would not be done away with: I would still demand the money for the anchoring: but because thine is a visit of love, I have not therefore demanded the money. (Signed) 'POMARE V.'

'Health to thee and thy son in your (two) voyaging.'

'Na Daniella Wira.'

CHAPTER XIII.

TAHITI CONTINUED—EIMEO.

[It having been arranged for them to visit the out-station of Tautira, they left the *Henry Freeling* on the evening of Seventh Month 2nd, accompanied by their kind interpreter, Samuel Wilson. The wind being against them, two days were occupied in reaching their destination. On the 4th they visited the principal part of the village; and, in the afternoon, the congregation were assembled to receive them; when D. W.'s certificates were read, and an opportunity afforded him of explaining the motives which had induced him to come amongst them.]

Seventh Month 5th. (First Day.)—It is a little remarkable, that to-day should be the opening of a newly erected meeting-house, of large dimensions, only finished yesterday. This building is erected upon the site of an ancient Marai, a place where preposterous scenes of idolatry and superstition had for ages been exhibited. At half-past eight o'clock the children of the school assembled to be catechized, and at nine o'clock the regular congregation gathered. The meeting was well attended; and Samuel Wilson performed the duties, which at other times devolve upon the resident missionary at each station. Towards the close of their meeting, I was strengthened to stand up, and to recite the query of our blessed Lord, —"Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?" which led on to the gracious answer given by Himself, after looking round upon his disciples; "Behold my mother and my brethren! for whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother."

The people near the place where I stood were very attentive, and full opportunity was afforded for me to clear my mind; and the everlasting blessed Truth was set over all. It had been previously fixed for us to depart

for Hitea as soon as this meeting was ended, in order to reach that place in time for the afternoon gathering there; yet it did not seem as if I had fully done with Tautira. The morning had been rainy, with thunder, and the general appearance of the weather now became more threatening than before: the wind had shifted, and it was blowing strong from the point to which we wanted to go. This, with the information that the natives never travel themselves in rainy weather, nor expect strangers to do so, determined me without hesitation to remain with the people of Tautira, and I had satisfaction in believing, that I should be in the right place; the tempestuous state of the weather, as the afternoon advanced, served to confirm the propriety of the measure adopted.

In the afternoon meeting, on standing up, I had to tell the people, that however contrary to my expectation, I was fully persuaded that my sitting amongst them again, was not only in the will of the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, but in his everlasting love to their immortal souls; in which my heart was greatly enlarged. Many solemn and incontrovertible truths were brought to my remembrance to speak before them, under a fresh and renewed influence of heavenly strength graciously vouchsafed; whereby I was enabled to sound an alarm, and to point out the repenting sinner's sure and never-failing friend and refuge, Christ Jesus, the Lord of life and glory: I humbly hope that the great and adorable name of the only true God and our Saviour was exalted.

On the 6th, after a break-of-day breakfast of baked pork, the mountain plaintain, and cocoa-nut milk, we took leave, and departed for Hitea, with a favourable prospect. We had not rowed much more than an hour, when the trade-wind sprung up in our favour, and drove us along the coast so quickly, that by ten o'clock, A. M., we were abreast of the out-station about to be visited.

[In the evening a large number of the native christians gathered round them, when much interesting conversation on religious subjects occurred. Their attention was particularly directed to the spirituality of the gospel dispensation; to the distinction between the word which was in the beginning and the Bible; and to the work of

the Holy Spirit in the heart of man; and on being asked whether they had not been sensible of its convictions, before they had heard the voice of a missionary, they answered with unequivocal simplicity and sincerity—Yes, *that* they had long ago. D. W. thus concludes his account of the interview:]

Such a solemnity now spread over us, as could not be mistaken, even had "the doors" been "shut;" for "peace be unto you," though not outwardly proclaimed, was known and felt to be amongst us, by some present. Under this precious, heavenly canopy, I told them,—now they might know for what I had come among them, in the love of the everlasting gospel;—that they might be witnesses for themselves of the blessings it conveys, and the glorious privilege to which it entitles, if faithfully embraced. Some of them could not forbear expressing their inward state, and their fear, from the uncertainty they were in, as to the future well-being of their immortal souls. It was indeed a season never to be forgotten; for it seemed as if some of their hearts were laid open by the Almighty Searcher, and a willingness wrought to confess their sins, and to call on the name of the Lord through the powerful efficacy of redeeming love shed abroad therein, and working in them to will and to do of the Lord's good pleasure:—to the praise of the riches of his grace be it faithfully recorded, in characters which can never be defaced whilst memory holds her place.

At a late hour, we adjourned until sunrise next morning, the 7th, when the people generally assembled in a commodious meeting-house. As this was a meeting held in regular course, the accustomed duties were performed by Samuel Wilson, who acted instead of their native teacher. My certificates were then read, which seemed to prepare the minds of the people for the solemn season, with which we were afterwards favoured. I had a fine open time amongst them, during which the path to the kingdom was set before them, wherein a wayfaring man, though a fool, cannot err: and the state of mind which must be attained to by all, before true spiritual worship can be performed, and accepted by Him, who is worshipped only in spirit and in truth,—was, I trust,

declared in plainness. I had largely to treat on the all-sufficiency of the light, the grace, which hath appeared to all men, bringing salvation to all; teaching all men, "that denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, they should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world;" and commending "them unto God and the word of his grace, which is able to build us up, and to give us an inheritance" amongst those that are already sanctified by faith that is in Christ Jesus. I sat down with a thankful and peaceful mind. Before we separated, one of the people stood up, and thanked me, in the name of the queen and of the church. I requested Samuel Wilson to say, that no thanks were due to me: I had done no more than that which was my duty to do, and was only an unprofitable servant. After taking some refreshment, we proceeded to Tiarei. Our stay here was limited, for fear of losing the wind, yet we did not like to pass by the mission-house altogether, whose inhabitants we might never see again. We had from hence a rapid passage, and were favoured to find all well and comfortable on board the *Henry Freeling*.

13*th*.—Employed on board most of the day. Omitted mentioning that last week a canoe from Tea-hu-poo, and another from Tautira, reached the ship: in both these canoes were persons with whom we had social and religious intercourse at the places where they reside. Their coming afforded an opportunity to send clothing and slates for some of the most diligent children at the district schools in those parts; and nails suitable for general purposes, to the different congregations. As the dear people composing them had abundantly more than administered to my wants when amongst them, it was a relief to be enabled to return their kindness, and convince them that in my coming, I sought not theirs, but them. I do feel anxious, and I hope it is an allowable solicitude, that none may have it in their power to say, that we have in any degree been chargeable to them; and thus far I think there are none at whose houses we have been entertained, that have not in one way or other been remunerated.

There are so many aggravated circumstances which contribute to lessen the desire of the people for religion,

that the present aspect of things here is truly discouraging; none of these seem to operate more powerfully to produce dislike and disgust, than the arbitrary laws that have been made to compel the people to attend the places of worship and the schools; the neglect of which has no less a penalty attached to it, than the forfeiture of their lands. So long as these things are suffered to exist, and the native authorities permit or wink at the landing of spirituous liquors from the English traders, from the colonies of New South Wales, and from America, (which are much more numerous than the former,) hopeless indeed will be every attempt to civilize, much more to christianize the natives of these islands; they are disadvantages which must ever impede the free course of the gospel.

15*th.*—This afternoon went up to Papara in one of our own boats, to take leave of Henry Nott. We found him alone, and in a very weak and feeble state. He has long been unable to attend the place of worship regularly, though near his own dwelling. On our return we called to take leave of the queen: we found her sitting on the step of the back-door, with several of her chiefs squatted round about her, one of whom had been reading to the others, until interrupted by our approach; the king was sitting on a wall, eating part of a cocoa-nut. For want of an interpreter, I was unable to acknowledge the indulgence of the queen, in remitting the port-charges on our vessel.

18*th.*—Yesterday, with the exception of taking our usual exercise on shore about sun-down, we were busily employed on board, amongst other things, in selecting copies of the Scriptures in the English, French, Spanish and Portuguese languages; also a large number of religious tracts, and some standard works and writings of Friends for one of the missionaries about to set out on a mission to the Samoas or Navigator's Islands. May the fear of man not be permitted to operate on his mind, so as to prevent his acting up to what he knows to be right; but may the fear of God more abundantly dwell in him, and prevail in him abidingly; and may the rich aboundings of His love in Christ Jesus be the comfort and strength of his heart, and his portion for ever.

18*th.*—My mind has at times, both yesterday and to-

day, been occupied with the prospect of holding another meeting with the white inhabitants residing in this neighbourhood together with the crews of the vessels in the bay, and any other persons that understand English. On considering this subject, it seemed best to hold this meeting on board the *Henry Freeling*. It was late in the afternoon, before I ventured to disclose my prospect to my son Charles and Captain Keen, lest instead of being found following my heavenly guide, I should be detected in having, through mistaken zeal, got before him, and missed the way.

19*th* (*First-day*.)—At half-past ten o'clock, our boats, and one from the American ship, were employed to convey the people on board from different parts of the shore, and soon after eleven, the meeting was comfortably settled. The Lord has been pleased to favour us with many blessed meetings; but this for solemnity and stillness excelled.—"Blessed be the Lord God, the God of Israel, who only doeth wondrous things; and blessed be His glorious name for ever: and let the whole earth be filled with his glory. Amen and Amen."

21*st*.—Received a packet of letters from London, which had been left at the island of Eimeo by the *Ulitea*, on her way from Sydney to Raiatea. Our joy may be more easily conceived than described, on finding an uninterrupted series of favourable accounts from home, as well as, in the general, from others whom we also dearly love: they did not fail to raise in my heart a tribute of thankfulness and gratitude to the great Preserver of men, our Almighty and merciful Benefactor.

24*th*.—This forenoon the *Harmony* sailed for the Sandwich Islands. It would have been better for the people of Tahiti, if she had never entered the bay, having been a fruitful source of wickedness, from having landed a considerable quantity of rum: although spirits are strictly prohibited by the present laws of that island. If all persons who contribute to the destruction of their fellow-creatures, by this or any other evil practice, were publicly stigmatized as the agents of Satan, and at all times shunned by virtuous characters, as unworthy of being noticed while persisting therein, it might, I think, be a means of compelling some of them to desist and to be

ashamed of their conduct, and deter them from further adding sin to sin, in causing others to sin by their means.

27*th.*—Yesterday morning, we repaired on board the *Charles Carroll*, in time to attend a meeting which had been appointed. About fifty persons were assembled on the occasion, and the Lord was graciously pleased to give us a precious season together, and to magnify His ever great and adorable name. With those that attended from the shore, were the missionary and his wife from Rarotonga, Eliza, the wife of George Pritchard, and William Henry, of Tiarei.

After the meeting had sat a considerable time in silence, it was with me to make a few remarks, to wean the expectation of the people from words, and to prepare them for a longer time of silence, if that should be permitted. I had to tell them, that if I were to read to them, or to speak to them in my own strength, it would only be an act between one man and others; but that worship, for which very solemn purpose we were met together, could only be performed between man and his Almighty Creator, who is a Spirit, and must be worshipped in spirit and in truth, with our spirits, through the Spirit of his dear Son. A precious covering of solemnity now spread over us, under the feeling of which we continued until the time was fully come for clearing my mind amongst them, and declaring the mercy, loving-kindness, compassion, and faithfulness of my God; who willeth not the death of a sinner, but rather that all should return, repent, and live for ever. The means were amply provided by His sending His only-begotten Son into the world, that whosoever believeth on him should not perish, but have everlasting life; who came not to kill or destroy,—He came, that we might have life; and that we might have it more abundantly,—declaring himself to be "the Way, and the Truth, and the Life:" He continues to be so to all such as not only believe in His outward appearance on earth, and in His sufferings, death and resurrection, but in his inward and spiritual appearance also in their hearts; and in the operation of his Holy Spirit there,—even that of burning and fuel of fire, to the consuming of the chaffy and transgressing nature therein; and if waited for, submitted unto, and abode under, this would prepare us for an

inheritance incorruptible and undefiled, in the kingdom of Christ Jesus, that shall never have an end. I had largely to treat on the subject of Divine worship, and to point out the difference between that under the Mosaic dispensation, and that under the gospel: that, with the Jews under the former, was outward, ceremonial, and superficial; but under the latter, it was altogether inward, in the inner temple of the heart,—simple, but spiritual and substantial, in spirit and in truth. I had to declare the beauty, purity, and spirituality of the true gospel church, of which none are members, but the ransomed and redeemed of the Lord; who have passed through the great work of regeneration, and have been ransomed by the blood of Jesus:—with much more of warning, and exhortation, and encouragement, as ability and utterance were graciously afforded.

After I sat down, my heart was filled with humble gratitude; and a tribute of thanksgiving and praise was raised to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who had thus graciously condescended to make Himself known amongst us, what if I say, by the breaking of the bread of life: under a sense of which, I had publicly to acknowledge the same, and that the Lord should have the glory due unto His holy name. The meeting held longer than usual; but the weight and solemnity so strikingly apparent, (as afterwards openly acknowledged,) remained to the last undissipated and undiminished. What, indeed, is man, or the son of man, that the Lord Most High is thus mindful of him,—that He thus visiteth him.

28*th*.—I may mention, for the encouragement of others, who at a future day may have to follow in a track similar to this, in which it is my highly-favoured and happy lot to tread, that previously to attending the meeting just alluded to, I had felt very poor, and empty, and disqualified: although without any particular feeling of discouragement as to the result. When the time came for me to stand up, although weakness and fear were my wholesome companions; yet the further I proceeded, the more I was strengthened and furnished for the work before me, and was even to the end unexhausted. The remainder of the day, and through the night-watches, my peace flowed undisturbed and uninterrupted, as the stream

of a mighty river; and a song of praise filled my heart: for I was indeed made joyful in the house of prayer, as on the mountain of the Lord;—to the glory of the riches of His grace be it spoken.

30*th.*—Charles and Elizabeth Pittman paid us a visit. The impaired state of the health of the former has compelled him to quit his station at Rarotonga for the present, being no longer able to attend to the duties devolving upon him. His wife is also far from well. They have resided about ten years upon the island, where their united labour has been eminently crowned with success. The circumstance of there being no harbour for shipping, except for vessels of very small tonnage, and that insecure, although the means of subjecting them to many privations, is a great blessing to the people of that island; because they are thereby preserved from the contaminating example which the sailors invariably introduce wherever they go; and to this may, in great measure, be attributed the success of Charles and Elizabeth Pittman's endeavours: at the same time, it is only just to say, they are a truly devoted couple, and well qualified by example as well as precept, to fill the station they have occupied. They hope to return to the island in a few months; and being desirous that the natives might be furnished with cotton dresses, for want of which they evidently suffer much in their winter seasons, it seemed a good opportunity afforded for me to furnish them with a stock of knitting-needles, as cotton grows spontaneously and plentifully upon the island: this was accordingly done, together with a knitted worsted vest, as a pattern to begin the work with. They need only to commence the work, and their wants will soon be supplied; industry would also be promoted, of a kind not too fatiguing, and which they are capable of sustaining: hard labour cannot be borne in this climate, and I think the ample supply of food provided for them by a bounteous Creator, plainly indicates it was never intended or required.

Eighth Month 1*st.*—To-day, I did not feel as if I dared omit endeavouring to hold another meeting on board the *Charles Carroll* to-morrow, if that ship's deck could be again procured: I did not mention this until the afternoon, wishing to try the fleece both wet and dry. On a

request being made to Reuben Weeks, the master of the said ship, for the use of her deck, it was immediately granted, and the crews of the different ships in the bay invited to attend the meeting. In the evening the invitation was extended to the shore.

2*nd*. *(First day.)*—At half-past ten o'clock, A.M., a warning-flag was hoisted on board the *Charles Carroll:* and about eleven o'clock the meeting was completely gathered. The number of sailors who attended was considerably increased by those from the newly arrived vessels. After the attention of the people had been arrested by the object of our meeting together being explained, a general silence prevailed. At length, I stood up with the words; "The wolf shall dwell with the lamb; the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together: and a little child shall lead them," &c. After alluding to the fulfilment of this prophecy in the gospel dispensation, as shadowed forth by Isaiah, I had to tell them that these are the very days in which we live; every individual had a share in it, and a part to act in it, though of general application:—that the gospel was not a mere outward declaration of good things, but "the power of God unto salvation," to all who believe, repent, and obey it; and that its privileges could only be attained through Christ: that the early promulgators of the Christian religion were constrained to turn all men to Christ. "We preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake," was the apostle Paul's declaration to the primitive believers, on behalf of himself and fellow-labourers: but he himself had a more special and divinely authorized commission, communicated immediately by the voice of that Saviour, whom he had so long and cruelly persecuted, wherever His appearance could be found: it was stamped with a double seal, for a two-fold purpose, as a minister and a witness of those things which he had seen, and of things which were hereafter to be shown to him; in which his Lord would appear unto him, to open the eyes of mankind, to turn men from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God. That Christ was the Light, the true Light, that lighteth every man that cometh into the world; unto whom all mankind must be

turned, and must come, if they are saved, &c., &c. It was a highly favoured, solemn meeting, and owned by the great Master of assemblies; whose power reigned gloriously amongst us, causing thanksgiving and praise in many hearts.

7th.—Walked in the evening to George Bicknell's, and had an opportunity of seeing the master of the *Olivia* schooner of Boston, lately arrived from the Paumotu islands. He seemed in the last stage of consumption, was unwell when he left home, and has been exposed to great hardship amongst those islands. His complaint has been much increased and aggravated by having long to subsist on fish and cocoa-nuts. He appeared glad to see me; and after sitting awhile by the bed-side, I began to advert to his appalling situation, winding gradually on as matter opened. On saying it was little matter how soon we leave this world of trouble, if we are but prepared for the event; he said, 'I am not prepared, and cannot prepare myself.' I told him I was even rejoiced to find he was thus sensible of his own inability and weakness, because it was a conscious feeling of the want and necessity of the Saviour's help. I endeavoured to turn his mind to the dear Redeemer; but he said, 'the time was too short to expect to accomplish the great work,' and spoke as if it had been too long deferred. I reminded him that the invitation was extended even as late as the eleventh hour; and then mentioned the thief upon the cross, with the words, "To-day shalt thou be with me in Paradise." He seemed a little encouraged before we parted. I was afraid of staying too long, and of causing too much excitement, but a prayer ascended in secret for him both then and since. When about to leave, he expressed a wish for me to come again, and I hope to comply with it. I was comforted in finding he had got into a place where he would want for nothing, and be well attended to. I consider it an act of true Christian benevolence in George Bicknell, with his large family, to take in, without solicitation, this poor, exhausted, sick stranger; and cheerfully to administer to all his wants, without any prospect of remuneration.

[On the 9th, a public meeting was held in the chapel

on shore, to which the crews of the shipping were invited. The attendance was numerous, and D. W. remarks respecting it:]

I was largely opened to declare many great and heavenly truths to these people for about an hour, under a weighty feeling of a power to myself irresistible; all seemed brought down and laid low under its dominion, and the pillars of my frail tabernacle were shaken.

27*th.*—For several days past but little has transpired to vary the customary routine of duties. As regards myself, I have not been able to discern any particular line of service called for at my hands; and hope to be preserved watching and waiting as at the posts of wisdom's gate. Vain, indeed, would be an attempt to move forward, while the cloud thus, as it were, rests upon the tabernacle. In the afternoon went to Taunoà to visit the American captain, who is not expected to survive many days. Here is an affecting and mournful instance of the great business of life being neglected or little thought of, until brought upon the bed of death. The *Olivia*, of which vessel he is part owner, sailed yesterday, and I thought he would now have nothing left relating to worldly matters to harass him, which induced me to make the present visit. I humbly trust, yea, I pray, that this poor dear man may yet so bow in humble resignation to the name and power of Jesus, and from heart-felt conviction confess that He is Lord, to the glory of God the Father, as to obtain the salvation of his own soul. For, though he is now bowing, under heavy judgment, to this power, great is my desire, that he may yet bow to it under a sense of the Lord's everlasting mercy, and forgiveness; for mercy still covers the judgment-seat, even to a hair's breadth; with God all things are possible to them that believe.

Ninth Month 10*th.*—I told the captain yesterday evening, that I did not see any thing to prevent our sailing this morning for Eimeo. At an early hour the pilot came on board, when the vessel was unmoored; and there being a light breeze off the land, the last anchor was weighed. We were towed out of the bay by a boat kindly sent by Captain Davies of the ship *Balance* of Bristol, Rhode Island. Just as the anchor was weighed, a man came

from the shore with a packet containing letters, the Yearly Meeting's Epistle, &c., from England, which had been brought by an English whaler, to the Marquesas Islands, from which George Pritchard had arrived in the night. We could not but admire how exactly we had been cared for, in being permitted to receive accounts from our beloved family at Petersburg, contained in four letters; which, though old dated, were truly acceptable, with letters also from some of our dear friends. Having discharged the pilot, cleared the reefs, and begun to stretch away from the island, the delightful employment of reading our letters commenced. While sitting on deck, the vessel made a formidable pitch, which occasioned a loud and sudden crash, as in a moment. It was soon ascertained that our mizen-mast was gone by the board, and had fallen over the very centre of the stern. Not only the man at the helm escaped unhurt, but every other on board; and nothing short of an Almighty, all-merciful, and all superintending Providence could possibly have screened and sheltered us from every harm. My Charles had been sitting for some time quite near the mast, but had removed just before from the place of danger. Our captain immediately represented the vessel as so crippled, that she would not stay, or tack, and wished to know whether I thought of proceeding, or of endeavouring to return to the bay of Papeéte, which we had just left. I paused for a moment, and then signified that we might safely proceed, although at the time it was nearly calm, and a heavy tumbling sea heaving around us. In a few minutes, however, the regular trade-wind sprung up, with a fresh gale in our favour, which in a few hours drove us to the desired haven of Talloo; into which the *Henry Freeling* worked as well as could be desired, notwithstanding she had lost one of her wings: but it became dark before she reached the proper anchorage. The wreck of the mast, rigging, sails, &c., was all cleared away, and got on board, before the strength of the trade-wind set upon us, and before the sea had time to rise under it, which afterwards became unusually heavy. The great superiority of a small vessel over a large one was fairly proved to-day, as we were beating through a channel beset with coral reefs, in a masterly manner, our pilot

frequently cried out ' Maitai, Maitai,' ' good, good!' to denote his approbation; and would occasionally say, in tolerable English, ' She works well.'

13*th. (First-day.)*—*Talloo Harbour, Island of Eimeo.*—Although we landed apparently in ample time, we found Alexander Simpson's house shut up, and the family gone to meeting; and when we reached the place of worship, the singing had already commenced. We remained at the door until this was finished, then went in and sat down on a form. When the Tahitian exercises were all gone through, Alexander Simpson began reading my certificates; when these were finished, I went and stood by his side to be ready; and when all was gathered into stillness, alluding to what they had heard read, I said,—they were now aware that I had left all that was near and dear to me on earth, to visit them; that I had sailed over the trackless ocean, during many moons, for this purpose, in order that I might be found standing in the counsel of that most holy will, which is ever excellent; and that the desire of my heart was, that the gospel might not be to them an empty sound, or a mere outward declaration of good things, but that they might believe, repent, and obey it; and that it might be to them indeed "the power of God unto salvation." As I proceeded, I was strengthened as by "the mighty God of Jacob," by the extension of that love which enlargeth the heart, to declare to the people the unsearchable riches of Christ, and the necessity of their coming to the knowledge of Him in whom they believed, by the Holy Spirit: that nothing short of their being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by this Word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever, could make them members of His church, which is without spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing. That unless they came to hear the voice of the true Shepherd, and know it for themselves, they could never be His sheep, nor be known of Him. "My sheep, hear my voice," said Christ:—"I know them, and they follow me; and I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand. My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand;"—turning their attention

more and more to the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, that great shepherd of the sheep, whose light shineth in every heart; that so they might come to sit under His teaching, and know the voice of the only true teacher of His people, who speaketh in righteousness, and is mighty to save His people from their sins, but never in them;—appealing to the islanders, if they had not heard his voice in their own hearts, reproving them when they had committed evil, &c. That they must be willing to hear it and obey it, and to bear the indignation of it for sin and for transgression; until their cause was pleaded, and judgment executed, and themselves brought forth to the light, the light of Christ Jesus,—"the true light which lighteth every man that cometh into the world," in the secret of the heart;—the Holy Spirit of Him that speaketh in righteousness, mighty to save: that they might know Him experimentally to be the "Lamb of God that taketh away the sin of the world," from having witnessed their sins and transgressions to be washed white in his blood, and remembered no more, &c. &c.

The people were very attentive in the general; and although the house is large, and was more filled than usual by natives from distant parts of the island, and others from Tahiti, I felt as if I could penetrate its most distant crevices with comparative ease. There might be twelve hundred persons present. A boat was waiting to convey us on board; but after having passed through the ceremony of shaking hands with a wholesale number, on retiring to the school, I did not feel altogether clear of the people; so concluded to send off the boat, and remained on shore to attend the afternoon meeting.

The meeting gathered again at three o'clock, and was well attended, though somewhat smaller than in the morning. I had much to say to them of an arousing, encouraging, and warning nature and tendency, with the same undiminished strength as had been vouchsafed me in the morning,—to the comfort, peace, and relief of my own mind, and I trust, with humble thankfulness, to my Maker's praise.

CHAPTER XIV.

EIMEO CONTINUED—HUAHINE—RAIATEA—BOLABOLA—VOYAGE TO THE SANDWICH ISLANDS—OAHU.

[On the island of Eimeo was a boarding-school for the children of the missionaries stationed on the adjacent islands. At the time of D. W.'s visit, it was conducted by Alexander Simpson, and contained about twenty-two children. A meeting with the inmates of this establishment was arranged for the 20th, which proved a satisfactory occasion. The doctrines of the gospel were proclaimed among them, and the dear young people were tenderly invited to seek after that knowledge which is life eternal.

Alexander Simpson having kindly offered to accompany them to the distant station of Afareaitu, they left the *Henry Freeling* early in the morning of the 24th of Ninth Month, and reached their destination in the afternoon of that day.]

Afareaitu, 25th.—The bell for the sun-rise worship rung early, and when the people were collected, we went to the meeting. At a suitable opportunity my certificates were read by Alexander Simpson; after which I had a full opportunity to clear my mind amongst these people: and although I had had nearly a sleepless night, and felt in the morning sunk both in body and mind, below the usual level of depression in such cases, yet my Lord was to me in truth, strength in weakness, riches in poverty, and a present helper in the needful time; and I had largely to declare of his love, of his mercy, and of his Truth; and to shew forth his salvation to the people, as it is wrought in the heart through faith in the operation of the Holy Spirit. I had also close things to say amongst them, and to show them the dreadful consequences of drawing down the Divine wrath, if their return for his love and mercy was only neglect, disobedi-

ence, and rebellion against his heavenly and righteous invitation, so largely extended towards them: and to point out the snare which had been laid by the great enemy, in the introduction of spirituous liquors amongst them, and how they had fallen under the temptation, from which, if they had obeyed the gospel, they would have been preserved.

[The inhabitants of a distant village, Matea, had been invited to the meeting, but none of them having attended it, D. W. did not feel satisfied to pass them by, and he and his companions proceeded thither. After some hesitation on the part of the chief, many of the people were collected to meet them, and a full opportunity was afforded for proclaiming the gospel among them, and urging on them their responsibility to believe and obey it. They reached the vessel in safety, with thankful hearts, the same evening.]

On the passage from Papetoia to Afareaitu, we landed to examine the remains of the largest Marai (Idol temple) in the South Seas, and not so much dilapidated as many of them. Much of the hewn stone-work is yet to be seen; and the upright stones are still remaining, placed in a position best adapted to accommodate the backs of the priests when praying, and from whence they could witness the sacrifices of the wretched human victims.

Ninth Month 27th (First-day.)—[In the forenoon the crew of the vessel were assembled on board; and in the afternoon, D. W. believed it required of him to attend the native worship on shore.] Before two o'clock, Charles and myself landed, and reached the school just as the children were moving off in train towards the meeting. We followed, previously telling Alexander Simpson, that if I should have any thing to say, when he came down from the pulpit, I would come and stand by his side. I found that I had a heavy burden to throw off; but my trust was in the Lord Jehovah, in whom alone is everlasting strength. I sat while they were proceeding with the regular service, in much conflict of mind; but as has often, if not always been the case, casting a thought

towards my dear brethren and sisters in England, as if they were in degree sensible of my situation: and I cannot help thinking that such is the precious unity in spirit of the faithful, that petitions are constantly ascending from one or other, as a lamp that burneth and never goeth out, to the throne of the Majesty on high, on behalf of a poor weak brother, separated as an outcast, almost as far from them as the east is from the west. For, however distant from each other the members of the mystical body may be placed, nothing can separate them from the love of God, as it is in Christ Jesus, their crucified, risen, and glorified Lord: and therefore, if one member suffer, all the members suffer; if one member be honoured, all the members rejoice in heavenly sympathy and joy, in which a stranger cannot intermeddle. When Alexander Simpson came down from the pulpit, I went and stood by him; and shortly after he had prepared my way, by telling the people to be still, I said,—"Verily there is a reward for the righteous: Verily he is a God that judgeth in the earth."—"Righteousness exalteth a nation, but sin is a reproach to any people."—"The work of righteousness shall be peace; and the effect of righteousness, quietness, and assurance for ever." 'I was not aware that my voice would be heard any more among you, but my Lord and Master hath put it into my heart to stand before you once again. As what I speak must be in faithfulness before my God, so I must be honest, and deal plainly with you. I am come to warn you to flee from the wrath to come: and to show you a snare which the grand enemy, both to God and to man, that old serpent the devil, hath prepared for you: he has tried it before, and found it to answer. It is that of throwing strong drink or spirituous liquors in your way. You have it in your power to resist the temptation; for no temptation will be permitted to assail us without a way being made for our escape. Then "draw nigh to God, and He will draw nigh to you: resist the devil and he will flee from you." The scene of riot and confusion has already begun upon the sister island, Tahiti, and the poison will soon reach to this island: if you do not resist it, your destruction will be of yourselves. If those in authority do not know it, they ought to know it; and if the authorities do know it, and with those under them in

power, are conniving at it or winking at it, or deriving emolument from it, most assuredly the Lord will punish these: He will visit for these things. "Shall I not visit for these things, shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this?" was the language of the Lord through his faithful prophet to a rebellious people formerly. Yea, He will sweep them from the face of the earth as with the besom of destruction. Nothing is so calculated to destroy the happiness of the people as this curse of the human race, and to aggravate that awful disease which is now rapidly depopulating these islands. If you do not set shoulder to shoulder in resisting this evil, what will you do when the wrath of the Lord is appearing? "He will laugh at your calamity, and mock when your fear cometh;" and the denunciation of the prophet against a people that had revolted, and forsaken the Lord their God, will be applicable unto you: "Hast thou not procured this unto thyself, in that thou hast forsaken the Lord thy God when he led thee by the way? And now what hast thou to do in the way of Egypt," in following the fashions and follies, and vanities of this world, and in drinking the dark and polluted "waters of Sihor," &c.—"Thine own wickedness shall correct thee,—thy backslidings shall reprove thee: know therefore, and see, that it is an evil thing and bitter, that thou hast forsaken the Lord thy God, and that my fear is not in thee, saith the Lord of Hosts." Come, then, my beloved people, in the fear, and in the dread, and in the love, of the Lord Jehovah I warn you,—your only refuge is in Jesus: then turn inward, to his Holy Spirit in your hearts, to "Christ in you the hope of glory; submit yourselves to Him as little children, and He will leaven all in you into his own pure and heavenly nature, and prepare you for a kingdom "consisting not in meats and drinks, but in righteousness and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost;" a kingdom into which it is declared that nothing that is unclean or impure, nothing that worketh an abomination, or that maketh a lie, must ever enter: there, the wicked cease from troubling, there, the weary are at rest; there, the morning stars sing together; there, the sons of God shout an endless anthem; there, all is love and joy, and peace, and that for evermore.'

Several of the people went out when strong drink was

mentioned, but the queen and her party, with all the principal authorities and judges from Tahiti, as well as those of this island, were present, and remained to the last. Alexander Simpson told the people that they must not consider me their enemy, for it was in pure love that I had spoken to them: and after he had put up a prayer on the occasion, he dismissed the assembly. Only one man and one woman ventured to shake hands with me. I told A. S. that I had placed him in an awkward situation, but the truth must be spoken: it was not a time to withhold it. He expressed his satisfaction at what had been done, and said it was much better for it to come from a stranger. I certainly did not know that so many of the authorities were present from Tahiti. I was aware that Pomare V. was in the neighbourhood; but though in the meeting, I did not see her, or know she was there. I was afterwards informed, that Paofai, one of the principal chiefs, was desirous to have spoken to me in the meeting by way of reply, but was deterred through fear of giving offence. When the meeting broke up, he attempted to get to me, but could not succeed for the crowd of people. He told Alexander Simpson, my informant, that he wished, in reply to my testimony borne in the meeting, to have said, on behalf of the natives of these islands and himself, that "he hoped I would go to Britain, and beg the people to have mercy on them; and then go to America, and beg the people there also to have mercy on them; because it was these countries that sent the poison amongst them." A fact not less true than lamentable.

[Feeling constrained to seek another opportunity with the mission family, and the children at the school, D. W. suggested their assembling together on First-day, the 11th of Tenth Month. Of this meeting he says:—] The stream of gospel love flowed freely and largely to all present, and great was the solemnity that prevailed over us; such was the condescending mercy and loving-kindness of the Lord to his poor unworthy creatures. We then took leave of the whole, not expecting to visit them again; and we returned on board to dinner, under feelings of gratitude and thankfulness, and in peaceful serenity of mind, not being conscious myself of having any further service to attend to in this island.

[On the 12th, they left Talloo Harbour, and, on the 13th, arrived at Huahine.]

Tenth Month 12th.—Soon after anchoring in Fare Harbour, a well-dressed person came on board, as a constable, to prevent petty thefts and depredations being committed by the natives, but we did not consider such a person at all needful: and having never suffered any material inconvenience of the kind at the other islands, his attendance was declined; I thought it would look like distrust on our part, and might have an unpleasant, if not injurious effect upon the people. In the afternoon, Charles Barff the missionary, came on board; he seemed very sociably inclined towards us, and disposed to render every assistance in his power, when I might feel inclined to see the people collected. He translated the queen of Tahiti's letter to two of the chiefs of the island of Huahine, then on board; who appeared glad to have an opportunity afforded to take off the port charges, saying, they should be sorry to have been worse thought of than the neighbouring islands. I told them it was a very trifling affair, but I thought it would not have been handsome treatment, if the option of choosing for themselves had not been afforded. At midnight there were tremendous gusts of wind from the mountains, with heavy showers of rain. We were informed, that a short time ago, some of the principal persons who had given way to the temptation of strong drink, were the first to come forward to propose that its use should be entirely abolished; which, eventually, was unanimously agreed to by the inhabitants. The reason given for making this proposal, was the conviction, that it was taking away their lives. Captain Russel, of the *Zone*, told us that there are no spirits to be found on shore. One part of his crew go daily for exercise, and return every evening in an orderly manner, which would not be the case if drink could be purchased. How I should rejoice to hear, that these islands are strengthened to stand firm against every thing of the kind being landed amongst them; which might easily be effected, by supplies being withheld from any vessel attempting to trade with it. Every Christian government ought to come forward for the protection of these defenceless islanders, from every cruel outrage of such vessels as might attempt to

enforce by arms the exchange of supplies, for rum, muskets and gunpowder.

18*th.*—*(First Day.)*—Last evening my certificates in the Polynesian language were handed to Charles Barff, to read at the native meeting this morning, if nothing should prevent my attendance. May the Lord be pleased to exalt his ever excellent name, and magnify his power amongst us, until the blessed Truth shall rise into dominion, and reign over all, to his glory. After an anxious, restless night, in which little sleep could be obtained, we arose early, and went on shore in good time, to look into the children's school before the meeting took place. All our sailors accompanied us, leaving only the Spanish cook and the captain, to take care of the *Henry Freeling*. The meeting was large; but the building would have accommodated a much larger assembly. The whole population is said to be, by a census lately taken, seventeen hundred and sixty persons, including every description: but I cannot suppose that many more than one thousand were present. I sat in much conflict of mind: it was a low time with me: and when my certificates were read, and Charles Barff came down from his pulpit, there seemed little before me to stand up with; but after the attention of the people was attracted, and a general stillness prevailed throughout the assembly, I expressed a desire that "grace, mercy and peace might be multiplied," &c., upon all the inhabitants of this island; and then proceeded to declare, that for the sake of Christ and his gospel, I had been induced to leave all that is near and dear to me in this world, that "the fulness of its blessing" might be theirs;—desiring that they might not rest satisfied with making an empty profession of the religion of Jesus, but that they might come to the full possession of the Truth as it is in Him, &c. When the meeting broke up, the people flocked round us to shake hands, with much apparent warmth and sincerity, of which we partook in a large degree.

23*rd.*—The authorities of this island are in the practice of meeting together occasionally, and they usually solicit the company of such strangers as may be among them, taking care to fix the day for collecting, when these can attend. Several days ago we were informed that such a

meeting was in contemplation, and to-day being agreed upon for holding it, Charles and myself were invited. The children were collected in the forenoon at the meeting-house, and afterwards formed no insignificant part of the guests at the dinner-tables. We dined out of doors, under the shade of large trees adjoining the queen's apartments. More than one thousand persons were present, including lookers-on, and the festival altogether was highly interesting. The company was exhorted by several of the principal speakers, and the dear children were again and again reminded of the privileges enjoyed by these islands in their day and generation. They were told, that in the days of superstition and idolatry many of them would have been offered as human sacrifices,—that some of the boys might have been permitted to live if their parents were of high rank; but the girls were often sacrificed, and many of the boys thus preserved would be afterwards killed, being kept only for the purposes of war. But now look round, said one of these orators, at the comforts and blessings we enjoy; and how did they all come, but by the introduction of Christianity amongst us? It was all the goodness, and mercy, and love of Jehovah, in sending the gospel among us. Several of these speakers, on beginning, addressed themselves to us in terms of welcome and approbation. One said, alluding to myself, 'Your address to us last sababth-day, in the chapel, astonished us; I thought you had got the Bible in your head. We are happy to have a teacher come among us, then we have two teachers, one within and one without. You told us, that a mere outward profession of religion was nothing; that it would not benefit us. The Holy Spirit of the Messiah in the heart is what we must learn to be acquainted with, and that all the work is within ourselves,' &c. He said, 'We have formerly been a very wicked people; our island has been worse than any other island in these seas. Captain Cook said so: he found us so; we were the greatest thieves he met with. Captain Cook shot several of us; and if we had provoked him further, he would have shot more of us.* But your

* It was at this island that Captain Cook caused the ears of several of the natives to be cut off for committing petty thefts on board the ships and in other respects used them very cruelly.

visit to us is not like his; yours is in love to our souls,' &c. In this manner the time was occupied for the space of two hours, when a hymn was sung, and afterwards a short prayer made by one of the chiefs; when the company dispersed with as much order and quietness, as the breaking up of a Friends' meeting in England. I could have said on the spot, "It is good for us to be here;" for the love of the blessed Master flowed through my heart, and softened the creature, as into clay fit for the potter's use.

25*th.*—*(First-day.)*—For the last three days, at intervals, the prospect of attending the native meeting this morning has been heavy and humiliating; but there seemed no other way of clearing my mind, and of being at liberty to leave the island, than by standing resigned, and willing to be any thing or nothing; to go or to stay, according to the good pleasure of that holy will, in the counsel of which, I trust, it is my heart's desire to be found walking. Rose early to be in readiness, but for want of the means of keeping to any fixed time on shore, we found on landing, that the children were coming away from school, although half-an-hour before the proper time for the meeting to gather. We remained outside until Charles Barff and his wife came. He asked if I wished to have the order of things any way altered. I told him no, but that if I found it needful, I should come and stand near him at a proper time. I sat under much exercise until near the conclusion, when I began to see my way sufficiently clear to encourage me to leave the seat and go to the table; which Charles Barff perceiving, exhorted the people to stillness and attention. A solemn silence prevailed, until broken by my saying, "Blessed are they which have not seen, and yet have believed" in the only begotten Son of God; enlarging on the love unutterable of our heavenly Father in sending his Son into the world, that "whosoever believeth on Him, should not perish, but have eternal life." I had largely to speak of the dear Redeemer's kingdom, and the necessity of every individual coming to the saving knowledge of it in his own heart; for it had been declared by the Saviour himself to be the thing above all others needful, and the righteousness thereof first to be sought for. He has also told us where it is to be found: the kingdom of God

is within you: that all things needful should be added to those who obeyed this Divine command of—"seek ye first the kingdom of God and his righteousness." I had to set before them the gracious dealings of the Almighty, and the blessings and privileges by which they are surrounded, and the return that is called for at their hands. Before sitting down, I had to speak in a close manner to the heads of families, respecting the rising generation; that their offspring might be placed in a capacity, to inherit the privileges and advantages which they themselves enjoy: being confident that if they, the parents, were so favoured as to be permitted to enter the kingdom of heaven, none among them could be found who would not desire to have their dear children there also:—therefore it was their bounden duty to lay these things to heart, &c. The meeting concluded in a solemn manner.

Tenth Month 26*th*.—The queen and her husband, with two of the principal chiefs, and several others, came to dinner; they remained until near five o'clock, P.M., apparently well satisfied with their visit,—although to ourselves it seemed almost like a day lost.

[D. W. having felt desirous of attending one of the native meetings held in the middle of the week, it was arranged for him to do this on the 28th.]

We repaired to the meeting-house about the time that the people assembled; and although but few were collected when we got in, yet the whole number at last was far more considerable than had been looked for or expected. I had to revive the holy promise to them "that feared the Lord;" that "spake often one to another, and that thought upon his name." "They shall be mine, saith the Lord of Hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels; and I will spare them as a man spareth his own son that serveth him." I expressed to the people my belief, that they who attend on all such occasions, are in general desirous to serve the Lord in their day and generation: and although the number may be few, I would not have them discouraged. "The righteous shall hold on his way; and he that hath clean hands shall be stronger and stronger." That much depended on their conduct and circumspect walking through life;

as they would be looked up to by others, and therefore they had the greater need to take heed unto themselves.

[On the 30th they left Huahine, and crossed to Raiatea, accompanied by their kind interpreter, Charles Barff. He proposed to go with them also to Tahaa and Bolabola. On this subject, D. W. remarks:—]

Without this provision, our touching at any of the islands to leeward of this place would have been wholly in vain, there being no missionaries residing upon them. His going with us, I cannot but regard as a singular interposition of Divine Providence in our favour; as it came about without any intervention or contrivance on our part, but originated entirely with himself.

Raiatea, Eleventh Month 1*st.* (*First day.*)—Although half-past nine o'clock was the time fixed for the native meeting to begin, yet the people were observed moving along by the edge of the sea-coast, in small parties towards the meeting-house, by half-past seven o'clock in the morning. On this account we landed earlier than the time agreed upon, that they might not have to wait long before our arrival, seeing they could not be blamed for not keeping near to the time appointed, not possessing the means of ascertaining the hour. On reaching the place we found the meeting nearly gathered, and Charles Barff at his post. Perhaps the number collected did not materially exceed one thousand persons. Charles Barff began at an early period of the meeting to read my certificates.

This was the most attentive audience that I have yet stood before as a spectacle: my heart was greatly enlarged, and utterance abundantly given me, far beyond what I can convey an idea of here: tending to turn the people more and more to the teachings of the Holy Spirit of the great, heavenly, and only true Teacher in their own hearts; which would tell them all things that ever they did, and by which they must be converted and born again, or they could not enter the kingdom of God. The solemnizing power of Truth with which we were highly favoured, and of which I trust there were many sensible witnesses, reigned over all: under the covering of which the meeting broke up, in great quiet and order.

[They attended another meeting with the natives in the afternoon, when D. W. was again engaged in earnest labour among them.]

After the meeting broke up, we were spared the ceremony of shaking hands by a discussion which took place among the people. As this was in a tongue unknown to me, and no interpreter came forward, I felt myself at liberty quietly to retire.

The seamen of the *Henry Freeling* attended both these meetings in an orderly manner. Returned on board to tea, under a feeling of poverty and unworthiness.

2*nd*.—Went to look at the grave of the late James Loxton, with whom I became acquainted when in London about two years ago; he was then a fine young man. In this comparatively short space of time, a fourth part of which had been expended on the passage out in the *Tuscan*, or thereabouts, he had arrived at this island, commenced his work, and finished his course: his widow has since become a mother, and returned to England with her infant charge.

3*rd*.—Visited the ancient and extensive Marai at the east end of the island, accounted the most celebrated in the South Seas, and upon which the sacrifice of human life has been witnessed to a horrible extent. To-morrow afternoon a meeting is appointed to be held on the island of Tahaa, not many miles distant from Raiatea, and sheltered within the same coral reef. It being the usual time for holding the native meeting, and notice having been sent yesterday of our intention to be there, it is hoped that those islanders will generally attend on the occasion. Tahaa is under the control of the government of Raiatea.

Tahaa, 4*th*.—After dinner set out in company with Charles Barff for Tahaa, in a whale-boat, with a fine breeze of wind. On landing, we stopped at the chief's house, while the people had time to collect. On repairing to the meeting-house, but few had come; and for some time the prospect was discouraging, particularly to myself, as I felt much depressed, and in a state of more than usual desertion and barrenness. As the number of people increased, their general behaviour indicated them to be strangers to the important object for which they are in the common practice of assembling; a circumstance

which may be readily conceived and for which allowance should be made, as they are seldom even visited by missionaries at the present day. Since the death of James Loxton, and the absence of George Platt on the Samoa mission, they have even been without a native teacher. * *

The meeting however sunk down into quietness as I proceeded; and before it closed, was evidently owned by the Divine Master. I think I never observed more attention and interest exhibited; and the countenances of many bespoke the solidity of their minds.

At noon, went on shore to partake of the feeding at Tamotoa's new house, which was opened, for the first time, on the occasion of this public dinner. The building although extremely large, was well filled; and the whole affair was conducted throughout in an orderly manner. I told Charles Barff that I wished to speak to the people at a suitable time; this he communicated to them, and a general silence soon prevailed: my mouth was opened freely to declare the day of the Lord amongst them, to the great relief of my own mind; standing up with,—"behold how good and how pleasant it is for brethren to dwell together in unity!" &c., declaring the blessedness of those that believe the gospel, that repent and obey it. Such find it not to be a mere outward declaration of good things to come; but the power of God unto salvation, from sin here, and to their everlasting comfort hereafter: it proved a solemn opportunity. May it long be remembered, to the Lord's glory and praise, by the humble thanksgiving of many. At eight o'clock P. M., we took leave of Judith Platt and her family, whose uniform kindness could not well be exceeded, and on reaching the *Henry Freeling*, prepared for sailing in the morning.

6*th*.—As soon as the signal was made for sailing, Charles Barff came on board. For several hours we were baffled between the two islands of Raiatea and Tahaa, the wind often light, and shifting from side to side every few minutes. At length a fresh breeze sprung up, and after making a few tacks we got clear of every shoal, and into the open passage; discharged the pilot, and made sail to the westward, with a fine trade-wind for the island of Bolabola, at half-past one o'clock A. M. Soon after five o'clock we entered a fine opening in the reef which en-

circles this island, and worked up into a beautiful and well-sheltered haven, sufficiently extensive to contain a great part of the British navy. Anchored in fourteen fathoms water, opposite the once flourishing missionary settlement at Vaitape, in latitude 16° 27′ south, 152° 8′ west longitude. One of the principal chiefs and many of the people have relapsed into their former idolatrous practices, and the intoxicated state of the people has latterly deterred ships from calling here, not only from a fear of receiving damage, but on account of the few supplies to be obtained. Such vessels as do come are mostly American, and they generally 'stand off and on,' at a distance, to dispose of rum, in exchange for what the islanders can furnish. There is, however, at present but little to be had, as the thoughtless part of the community (and these unhappily are in power) have converted even their bread-fruit into ardent spirits by distillation, and many families are now in an unclothed and famishing condition. Charles Barff has no doubt but they will be kindly disposed towards us; and I do not feel the least hesitation in coming amongst them. There is a little remnant of serious natives yet remaining, who have hitherto stood firmly against the practices of those in authority; and several of them are nearly allied to the notorious chief whose name is Mai, to which the letter O is often prefixed: this little band there will be no difficulty in convening. A message was dispatched in the course of the day to the head of the rebellious party, who has been their leader into every mischief and distress that has overtaken them of late, to invite him and his company to attend the meeting to-morrow. These people have now taken up a position in a distant valley, for the purpose of carrying on their abominable practices more free from restraint: the invitation was stated to be at the request of two strangers just arrived from the island of Raiatea. They returned for answer that they could not come to-morrow, but would certainly attend on the following day. By this it was understood that they are in such a reduced, impoverished, and suffering state, from their evil habits and ruinous practices, as to be for the most part without clothing, and their resources exhausted by purchasing rum and other strong drink.

8*th.* *(First-day.)*—By nine o'clock went on shore,

and on reaching the meeting-house, (a large and commodious building,) we found that the children were in school, and singing a hymn before separating. When they had finished, we went into the meeting-house, where about five hundred of the natives were soon assembled, but none of the rebel party were there. When Charles Barff had finished and come down from the pulpit into the reading-desk, I took a station at his left hand. The house being very large, and the people seated in a straggling manner, I suggested their drawing nearer together and to us; which was immediately complied with in a very rough and disorderly manner, and as they continued unsettled, and talking pretty loud, I said a few words, which produced a general silence. Although poor and low enough before standing up, yet now my tongue was loosed, and my heart expanded in that love and strength, which alone clotheth with authority to set the truth over all, and cause even the earthly tabernacle to rejoice in the midst of the tribulations of the gospel; because its consolations are known and felt to abound, and create renewed sensations of gratitude and praise, to the glory of God the Father. It was a blessed meeting. When it broke up, the people crowded round about us in their usual way to greet the strangers. When going to the afternoon meeting, I told Charles Barff from present feeling, that I believed I should have nothing to say to the people; and so it proved, for I sat as a sign amongst them; but peace and resignation to the Divine will were my dwelling place. Our captain and seamen attended both these meetings.

9*th*.—A messenger was dispatched early this morning to ascertain whether the rebel chief and his party were likely to keep their word and come to us; as I had concluded, if they failed in fulfilling their promise, to visit them in their own valley. The messenger however reported, on returning, that the chief would come to us in the forenoon. They soon arrived, and knowing that the chief had objected to go into the meeting-house, this was not urged; but we took up our station immediately under the shade of an immense tree, under the wide-spreading branches of which, several hundred persons could be sheltered from the scorching heat of the sun. The chief, at the head of a large banditti of females, first made his

appearance; and on coming near to us, said, 'You are come at a good time, and I hope that one or both of you will remain with us and be our teachers.' I told him we were not at our own disposal; that we must go wherever it is the will of the Lord, and that I believed we had many places to go to beside that island: we then shook hands with him and all his followers. The females were decorated in the true ancient heathen style, with garlands of flowers upon their heads, and were persons employed to perform for their chief's amusement, those disgraceful and abominable dances practised in these islands before the introduction of the missionaries. A body of men then followed, each of them throwing one or more cocoanuts at our feet as they came up; and those couples which had them suspended from a pole, threw them upon the ground in a ludicrous manner, which kept the whole assembly, and the rabble that attended on the occasion, in constant laughter and confusion. Upon the chief beginning to ask some questions about us, I proposed that my certificates should be read, which Charles Barff at once assented to, when silence was immediately proclaimed. Before the reading was finished, these wild, thoughtless people were measurably changed into an attentive audience: all remained silent; and after a pause, I exhorted them to let the Lord God be their fear, and let him be their dread.—"He is not far from every one of us," said I; "for in him we live, and move, and have our being:" adding that I had hoped to see their faces yesterday with the rest of the inhabitants of the island, who gave me their company; but as this was not the case, it was my intention to-day to have visited them where they dwelt, as I could not think of leaving the island without seeing them; for the Lord God, whom I serve, is a God of love and of mercy, and willeth not the death of a sinner, but rather that all should repent, return, and live. For this he sent His only begotten Son into the world, "that whosoever believeth on Him should not perish, but have everlasting life." It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God; for if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the sinner and the ungodly appear. That for the sake of Christ and his gospel, I was come amongst them; for His inheritance is still the heathen, and the uttermost parts of the earth His possession.

That I was a stranger, and knew nothing of the existing differences amongst them, and desired to know nothing amongst them, but "Jesus Christ and him crucified;" but this I do know, that you have not obeyed the gospel: "for if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die; but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live."—"Be not deceived; God is not mocked; for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to the flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption: but he that soweth to the Spirit, shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting."—"Turn ye, turn ye, why will ye die?" Your only refuge is in Jesus; a measure or manifestation of His Holy Spirit is given to every man to profit withal; this is the light of Christ in your hearts, which if taken heed to, will place your sins in order before you, in matchless love and mercy, that you may repent of them, and be saved from them. But if you continue to disregard this light, and to rebel against it, it will be your condemnation; and the wrath of God will overtake you. He will laugh at your calamity, and mock when your fear cometh: "the wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God." I warned them, in the fear, and in the dread, and in the love of God, to flee from the wrath to come,—to repent, believe, and obey the gospel—to seek the Lord while he may be found, to call upon him while he is near. "Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the Lord, and He will have mercy upon him, and to our God, for He will abundantly pardon." They were warned of the judgments of the Lord that would overtake them if they continued in their wicked practices, and entreated to turn unto the Lord; to acquaint themselves with Him and be at peace," &c. All was chained down and laid low; their haughty and airy looks were changed into those of serious thoughtfulness by that Almighty power, which controlleth the hearts of all men.

When we separated, the chief came to Charles Barff and told him, that old thoughts had been brought into his mind, and seemed kindly disposed towards us.

10*th*.—To-day our deck has again swarmed with the natives, and although the principal part of our crew with our captain are engaged on shore procuring water, (a

scarce article here,) yet there was nothing to apprehend from their numbers. Perhaps the treatment met with in our vessel is such as they never witnessed before, and we were far from entertaining a thought of danger, although the average number on board was ten of them to one of us; but their deportment has hitherto been uniformly gentle and harmless. They are naturally a ferocious people, and when not at war with their neighbours, are frequently engaged in broils amongst themselves. Great is the love I feel for them, as a stream in my heart, and particularly towards the poor neglected children. To-morrow morning a meeting is to be held, to which I have been looking at times since last First-day afternoon. All my springs are in the Lord Most High: when He is pleased to shut, who can open? Unto whom shall I look, or whither shall I go? for the words of eternal life are only with the Lord Jesus—the crucified, risen, and glorified Saviour.

11*th*.—Attended the meeting held at the settlement at nine o'clock this morning; but the persons present were few in comparison with those at meeting last First-day. I was strengthened to declare amongst them, that one hour in the Lord's presence is better than a thousand elsewhere:—"I had rather be a door-keeper in the house of my God, than to dwell in the tents of wickedness;" for in His presence only there is life, and at his right hand are pleasures, durable as the days of heaven. I felt much for the upright-hearted little remnant amongst them, who are desirous to serve the Lord in their day and generation. I wished them to be encouraged to hold on their way, for in due time they will assuredly reap if they faint not. The invitation of the Saviour, given when on earth, is still extended for us to come unto Him in spirit: it is there we must learn of Him.—"Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me," said he, "for I am meek and lowly in heart; and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy and my burden is light." We shall be taught how to pray to the holy Father in faith, believing in the name of the Son; and what we ask, when thus qualified and influenced, we shall most assuredly receive for Christ's sake; and we shall know from living experience, that peaceful and easy is his yoke, light the burden, sweet the rest. The watch tower is the Chris-

tian's only safe retreat, his only refuge from the enemy. It is the place where prayer is wont to be made, appointed in love to man by Him who said, "What I say unto you I say unto all, watch. Watch and pray, lest ye enter into temptation." I had much more to express amongst them; it was to my own relief, and peace, and comfort; and I humbly trust, if none were benefited, that none would be hurt, for it was the Lord's doing, and to Him alone belongs the praise.

12*th*.—It being Fifth-day, we sat down together in the cabin, as usual; and although there was much noise upon the deck with the people, it served to make us sensible of our own weakness, and to awaken feelings of humility in commiserating the sufferings of others, in contritedness before the Lord. It would have afforded great satisfaction to clothe the poor naked children of this island, had I possessed the means; but the number is too great for my resources. In order to select objects suitable for our purpose, Charles Barff was employed, who readily undertook to procure a list of the most diligent scholars from a native teacher: forty-four garments were appropriated in this manner. In the evening visited the shore for the last time; its suffering inhabitants will not be easily effaced from my memory; for whose welfare my heart is deeply, interested, and for whom I must long mourn in secret not having at any time felt a greater drawing of love for any people, amongst whom my lot has been cast in this southern hemisphere, than for those of Bolabola.

13*th*.—After breakfast, a chapter in the Testament was read, as usual; and having spent a short interval in retirement together, Charles Barff and John Platt, prepared to leave us. As soon as the anchor was weighed, our kind friends pushed off for the shore; and, quitting the well-sheltered haven of Te-ava-nui, we stretched through the opening of the reef, and once more committed ourselves to Him, at whose command the vast Pacific rolls. After getting from under the lee of the island, the weather proved rugged, and the wind scant: this day two years ago, we embarked from London to join the *Henry Freeling* at the Lower Hope, about seven miles below Gravesend. Many have been our tossings, and buffetings, and provings, since that time: but through

that loving-kindness which is better than life, we have been delivered out of them all: and are still left to acknowledge, in the grateful language of the Psalmist, that "the goodness of God endureth continually," and his love and his mercy unceasingly flow, "from the river to the ends of the earth."

[After leaving Bolabola, their course was directed to the Sandwich Islands. For several weeks their progress was much impeded by contrary winds and rough weather. On the 14th of Twelfth Month, they crossed the equator and entered the North Pacific. The wind was now in their favour and the weather beautifully fine, so that they advanced rapidly towards their place of destination.]

27*th*.—This day my sixty-fourth year is completed; and when I look at the lateness of life's hour, and consider my present situation, contending with winds and waves on this side the globe, and my hands ready to hang down under a sense of weakness and increasing infirmities, it is truly appalling. I feel at times ready to faint at the magnitude of the prospect still widely spread before me and certainly I should have fainted long ago, if I had not believed to see, and also been permitted to see, to my finite admiration, the mercy, the goodness, and the faithfulness "of the Lord in the land of the living." He beareth up my often-drooping and helpless head above the strife of the mighty waters: He sustaineth and upholdeth me by the word of His power, for His great name's sake.

Twelfth Month.—On the 19th, did not fail, and, I trust, allowably so, to remember the mercifully-bestowed, and long-entrusted and beloved partner of my bosom;—a bosom friend indeed, guileless and faithful; whose loss to me was indeed great and irreparable, but her gain eternal:—humble resignation to the Divine will is as a canopy of peace around me, although the loss was such, that even time does not lessen its extent.

23*rd*.—Yesterday the wind fresh and favourable: we got on rapidly also through the night, and to-day are still hastening onward with a following sea. At noon the latitude 19° 41′ north; at four o'clock P. M.,

longitude 153° 18′ west. This morning hauled a little more to the westward, to endeavour to make the land. Just before sun-set, the sight of land was announced from the mast-head; but the haze about the water's edge made it very indistinct, and not visible from the deck to myself, until the sun had sunk below the horizon; when not only the stupendous mountain of Mouna Kea, with its snow-clad top, which is more than 13,000 feet above the level of the sea: but the lower land towards the north cape of the island of Hawaii could be plainly distinguished, at the distance of more than eighty miles. Here is a renewed call for thankfulness, after such a winding and intricate passage of six weeks, thus to be favoured with such a defined, and decidedly excellent land-fall before the night closed upon us,—which is now long and dark, the shortest day, in this region, being just over, and the moon but in an infant state at present. The mercies of the Lord are indeed from everlasting to everlasting, and blessed for ever is He, the Lord God of Israel, who only doeth wondrous things; blessed be his glorious name for ever, and let the whole earth be filled with his glory: and who can refrain from saying with David, "Amen and Amen?"

I feel it no light thing to be, as it were, upon the eve of again landing upon shores by myself as yet untrodden, amongst thousands and thousands of my fellow-creatures, in whose sight I must unquestionably appear, "as one born out of due time;" but when I trace the motive of my coming to its utmost source, I am favoured to find a foundation firm enough to bear me out: and the prospect of another opportunity being afforded me, for the exaltation of the dear Redeemer's kingdom, at seasons warms and gladdens the heart, rekindling a measure of that love which desires the welfare of all mankind the world over; many of whom have long since heard of the name of Jesus, the Messiah, at a distance, but know him not as a Saviour nigh in the heart, to save them from their sins.

CHAPTER XV.

SANDWICH ISLANDS.

Oahu. Twelfth Month 26*th.*—Plyed to and fro during the darkness to windward of the island, and at the earliest dawn of day bore up for Diamond Hill. As we neared the entrance, several boats were seen coming out. The first brought two or three of the resident traders, the second brought the pilot and some others, and in the third came the British and American Consuls; the former bringing us a packet of letters from our beloved family, as might be expected, all of old date, but new to us, and truly welcome; and afresh claiming a grateful tribute of thankfulness to Him whose tender mercies extend to all His poor unworthy creatures, however widely separated. The wind, which at first was likely to prevent our getting in, now changed, and bore us quickly through the winding narrow channel, into the still harbour of Honolulu. The anchor was but just dropped, when Hiram Bingham, the senior missionary of the establishment at this place, came on board, and offered his services in whatever way we could accept them; at the same time inviting us to become his guests while here. We had on board a large packet of letters and parcels for him and his colleagues on these islands.

27*th.*—In the afternoon landed and made our way to Hiram Bingham's habitation; but not finding him at home, we called upon the British Consul, who kindly accompanied us to obtain some exercise on foot, it being forty-five days since we had had an opportunity of walking more than a few paces at a time on the *Freeling's* deck. Returned to Hiram Bingham's about the time his return home was expected, and found him accordingly. Believing it safest for me not to miss an opportunity, if one could be obtained, of seeing a body of the natives collected together to-morrow, at their own place of worship, I mentioned the matter to Hiram Bingham, who readily

made way for my accommodation, kindly offering his services to interpret if I wished to address the people. After partaking of an early tea with the family, we returned on board, at ten o'clock, P.M. Mercifully supported to look forward towards to-morrow in humble confidence and hope of that help and strength which is almighty, and which has never yet failed to deliver me out of every trouble and distress. My trust is in the Lord, who alone can bless and cause his own works to praise his ever great and adorable name.

28*th.* *(First-day.)* — At nine A.M., repaired to the house of Hiram Bingham, who accompanied us to the native meeting. As the branch of the mission here consists of several families from America,* who understand the native language but in a small degree, and as some other white people attending the meeting are labouring under the same disadvantage, Hiram Bingham proposed that my certificates should be first read in English, and then to the people in the native tongue; and this plan afterwards appeared more eligible, when it was observed that other persons came into the meeting (probably induced by curiosity) who do not attend on other occasions, such as the foreign Consuls and others from the town. The service performed here by the missionary, somewhat differed from what we had seen among the Southern Islands. It commenced with a very short prayer, which we had previously been told was for a blessing on what was about to follow; a portion of the Scriptures was then read, and afterwards a hymn was sung. When this was finished, the principal prayer, as before explained to us, was offered at considerable length, and then another hymn was sung, after which the reading of my certificates commenced. I had sat under a great weight of exercise, from a belief that I should have to stand up when the reading of them was gone through, and not without a humiliating feeling of weakness and fear at my own insufficiency. Not having for perhaps a year and a half heard my certificates read, except in the Polynesian

* The missionaries stationed in the Sandwich Islands are exclusively from the American board of missions.

language, I felt quite struck on hearing them in English; but I think the unity and sympathy of my dear brethren and sisters at home, never at any time felt so truly precious and strengthening to my bowed-down mind: and the expressions which they contain of my beloved family's concurrence with my leaving them, to attend to the call of apprehended duty, were so unexpectedly sounded in my ears, that the weakness of human nature could not be repressed, nor the tear of parental affection restrained. "Deep called unto deep;" the waves and the billows passed over, leaving me in a state of nothingness and emptiness; but, perhaps, never more fit to declare of the goodness and mercy of my Lord, in the ability he was graciously pleased to bestow. When Hiram Bingham had finished reading and explaining my certificates to the people, I went and stood by his side, as "a reed shaken with the wind." A solemn silence now prevailed over us, until it was with me to say—'It is more than probable that the greater part of the company now assembled, never before heard of the existence of a Society under the denomination of Friends, (alluding to my certificates:) but my beloved people, all such as love the Lord Jesus Christ and keep his commandments, are friends,—friends universally to God, friends to one another, and friends to all mankind. "Ye are my friends," said Christ, "if ye do whatsoever I command you." All such are members of the same society the world over,' &c. A more attentive audience can scarcely be conceived, than certain classes of this people, both natives and foreigners. The Lord's power had the dominion, and reigned pre-eminently, until the breaking up of the meeting. Every class and variety of the people flocked round us, scarcely affording us an opportunity of speaking to the members of the missionary establishment. Some of the natives endeavoured to thank me through the medium of Hiram Bingham; but I requested him to refer such to the great Creator, and not to the creature. One said I had brought them a blessing. A number of serious-looking women came round us, whose countenances bespoke the love that was in their hearts. Troops of the dear children gathered in their turn, and seemed delighted to find that they also

might shake hands with the strangers: some of them would come again and again until they found their faces were recognized. Thus hath my gracious Lord been pleased to deal with a poor, unprofitable creature, but who is a living monument of His everlasting love and mercy; although he is unworthy of being numbered among the least of His servants. Truly His judgments are a great deep; but His love who can declare? It is unutterable, unfathomable, and unbounded as His mercy; whose is the kingdom, and to whom all power and glory belong for ever. When we got into the open road, Hiram Bingham told us the bell was then ringing at the Mariners' Chapel, where the English and other foreigners meet, if I wished to go to it. I replied, that I believed I must go on board to my little family there.

First Month 1*st*, 1836.—This morning a deputation of chiefs of the highest order came on board, bringing a letter, addressed to me, as follows:—

'*Honolulu, January* 1*st*, 1836.

'As an expression of friendly regard of Kinau and her associate chiefs to Mr. Wheeler, the friendly visitant, they beg his acceptance of a few supplies. They are the following:—five barrels of potatoes, five turkeys, five fowls, and one hog.

'NA' 'KINAU.'

Finding upon inquiry that to refuse this present, would create much dissatisfaction, because entirely intended as a good-will offering, the following acknowledgment was returned:

'Highly sensible of the kindness and hospitable intention of Kinau, the governing chief of the Sandwich Islands, and the constituted authorities of the same, I assure them of my Christian regard in the love of the everlasting gospel, which has induced me to visit these isles afar off.

'I feel and value this token of good-will in their act of generosity, and I do freely accept the supplies so gratuitously furnished.

'With best desires for their present and eternal wel-

fare, and that of every age and every class over whom they preside, I am her and their sincere friend,

'DANIEL WHEELER.'

'*Henry Freeling, in the harbour of Honolulu,*
'*First Month* 1*st*, 1836.

'To KINAU, the governing chief of the Sandwich Islands,' &c.

Before the business was fully arranged, and the parties gone from the cabin, the young king Kauikeaouli arrived, with several of his principal attendants.* He was escorted on board by the English Consul, accompanied by two other foreigners. It appears that the king, although the lawful ruler of these islands, has delivered up the executive power into the hands of Kinau, and takes no part whatever in the administration of public affairs. He is surrounded by a set of evil advisers, and there is every reason to apprehend, he leads a very unsteady, dissipated life, but is said to possess good abilities and an amiable disposition: he talks some English, and understands much of what is said. He examined every part of our vessel very minutely, and might possibly have gone to the mast-head, (a common thing with him;) but our rigging being fresh tarred, deterred him from attempting it. An intelligent person, a native of Dundee, was on board at the time, though not one of the palace party. To this man I mentioned what I thought of the islanders; and as the king, who sat next him, appeared to listen attentively, I spoke freely and plainly of the ruin that awaited these islands, if the importation of spirits and the use of them were allowed to continue; and unless the private property of the poor inhabitants is protected by wholesome laws, firmly executed without partiality. At present these people are groaning under an arbitrary feudal system, kept up with shameful tyranny on the part of the chiefs. I may mention a recent instance that has come within our knowledge, which is only a fair specimen of the actual state of things here: an industrious native had grown a small plot of sugar cane, and when its pro-

* Kauikeaouli is said to mean in the Sandwich Island dialect, '*to hang upon the dark blue sky.*'

duce was ascertained, his chief, who had permitted him to cultivate the land, ordered the whole of it to be brought to him, except a portion of the molasses. This summons was duly obeyed, and the chief afterwards informed him by message, that the next year he should take the whole, both sugar and molasses. This however so damped the exertion of the poor man, that he did not attempt to grow any more; though if his chief had insisted on it, he durst not have refused, as things now stand. This mercenary chief has been one of our visitors on board.

5th.—Yesterday, as our people were left at their liberty to attend a place of worship on shore, Charles and myself sat down together in the forenoon: with the weight of the prospect before me of the meeting appointed to be held in the evening with the public, the quiet season we were favoured with was both refreshing and strengthening. We landed soon after dark, to be in readiness for the time appointed, and repaired to the place of worship. The time no sooner arrived, than the people poured in from every direction, and soon filled nearly all the seats. The novelty of a 'Quaker's meeting,' and the first ever held on a Sandwich Island, might induce many to come out of curiosity, who at other times never think of attending a place of worship; and it is probable that the whole of the white residents were present, besides those who came from the shipping, and a considerable number of the natives and half-castes, with several of the highest authorities in the place; so that the house was crowded, we were informed, as it had never been before. Sitting in silence seemed quite incomprehensible to nearly all that were there. The first part of the time was unsettled by many whispering and talking, and an individual or two not quite sober, were a little troublesome and annoying; but I think I have witnessed in lands accounted civilized, a meeting, from one or other cause quite as unsettled, though altogether free from the disadvantages under which this was labouring. Having sat a considerable time in silence after the meeting was fully gathered, it was with me to say, that as the disciples formerly were incapable of feeding a hungry multitude, until the great Master had blessed and broken the bread, so it is at this day. Without Him we can do nothing as it should be

done; and it is only when He is pleased to qualify any of his servants, to proclaim his Truth, that the people can be availingly benefited. "Without me ye can do nothing," was our Lord's declaration; and true it is,—for without Him we can do nothing, not even think a good thought, nor restrain an evil one; the spirit truly is willing, but the flesh is weak. That the Society of which I have the privilege of being a member, has always borne a faithful testimony to the excellency of waiting upon the Lord, as the all-sufficient and only true Teacher of his people. After recommending that we should endeavour to wait for the influence of the Holy Spirit to solemnize our minds together, I sat down. The meeting became much more settled after this, though doubtless the patience of many was tried before the silence was again broken. * * * So great was the solemnity that continued to be spread over us, that I had to call the attention of the people to it, as beyond the reach and power of man to produce. The Lord alone was exalted; His own arm brought him the victory and the praise.

11*th.* *(First-day.)*—Awaking at an early hour with the prospect of the native meeting full before me, I made no hesitation about setting off to attend it. When going into the meeting, I felt a poor creature indeed, I was bowed down before the Lord, who comforted and strengthened my heart; and I felt resigned and willing, and in degree prepared, when the first proper interval offered, to stand up. For upwards of an hour I had to declare the glad tidings of the glorious gospel among them; the people were very solid and attentive: they were encouraged "to press towards the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus:—the Lord's love flowed richly in my heart towards these people. The meeting was unusually large, owing, perhaps, to the governors of three distant islands being there, viz., of Hawaii, Maui, and Tauai. A number of strangers came about me when the meeting separated; and Kuakini, the governor of Hawaii, (well known by the name of John Adams,) who speaks tolerable English, wanted to know when I should come to his island. I could only say that I was not my own master; but it was not improbable that I should visit Hawaii before leaving the group. I

got off from them as soon as I could with propriety, as the way seemed now fully open before me to appoint a public meeting for the whites and half-castes, to be held in the Mariners' Chapel in the evening. Repaired to the shore before dark, in time to be in readiness for the meeting: but the approach of a storm, the thunder and lightning having commenced, it is probable prevented some from being there, as it was not so large as the one held the preceding week. It was a solemn and comfortable meeting, yielding peace.

17*th.*—Yesterday visited the school for half-white girls, it being the anniversary of its establishment three years ago. To teach this class of children is a laudable undertaking, and highly needful on their behalf. They are of a description calculated to do either much good or much harm upon these islands, from their knowledge of the native language, derived from the mother's side: this, in conjunction with a moral education, would tend to assist in the civilization of the people at large; at the same time there is much reason to fear their assuming a superiority over the natives, from their nearness of kin to Europeans or Americans, from whom they have sprung. Although little to be proud of on this account, yet it mostly happens that they abound in pride and haughtiness; and the fathers of such being for the most part runaway sailors, rum-sellers, or other profligate characters, their offspring, from the earliest age, are accustomed to scenes of vice and wickedness; the effects of which are not likely to be shaken off as they grow up, but rather to render them highly injurious to the natives around them, by their unrestrained, immoral, and base conduct and example. Not the least difficulty to be surmounted, is that of finding suitable employment to keep them out of mischief, having been trained in habits of sloth, and ignorance of every domestic and useful occupation.

26*th.* — On Seventh-day evening, having prepared written notices of a meeting, in readiness for distribution on First-day morning, and finding freedom to circulate them when the day opened, Captain Keen was commissioned to do the needful, in order to spread the information that a meeting for worship would be held in the evening, after the usual manner of our Society. In

the course of the day our crew assembled for devotional purposes. The weight of the prospect spread upon my mind, was as a heavy burden through the day, raising in me strong cries to Him from whom only cometh help and strength, for ability to do his will, and to exalt His ever great and excellent name. We repaired in time to the shore, and were the first that took seats in the meeting. The people gathered slowly, but with quietness; and the number was probably as large as at any time previously. After a considerable time of silence, beyond all expectation solid, I had to supplicate Him who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light;—that every thing in us that stood opposed to His righteous principle of light, life, and love, might be shaken and removed out of the way; that that only which cannot be shaken may remain,—to the exaltation of His own great name, and the establishment of the kingdom of Christ Jesus, which shall never have an end. Afterwards the people sat as if accustomed to silence. The first expressions with which the silence was broken, were;—As "no man can save his brother, or give to God a ransom for his soul; so no man can perform for another the solemn act of worshipping the Almighty Creator, &c. The people were very attentive, and such a solemn stillness prevailed the greater part of the time, that if they could not have been seen upon their seats, it would have been difficult to ascertain whether any persons were present. It was the Lord's doing; and as is His name, so is His praise for ever!

31*st.* *(First-day.)*—Had an almost sleepless night, but towards morning the way seemed to open with relieving clearness for me to attend the native meeting: landed in due time, and called upon the missionary, who accompanied us to the meeting. * * After a short interval I stood up, when Hiram Bingham exhorted the people to stillness. I remarked on taking up the time of the meeting, which had already sat long; but that I was induced to stand before them once more to communicate whatever might be given me on the occasion. The attention of the people seemed now fully arrested, and after a solemn pause it was with me to express the encouraging language of the Lord's prophet,—"Arise, shine; thy light is come, and the glory of the Lord is

risen upon thee. For behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people: but the Lord shall arise upon thee, and his glory shall be seen upon thee." Thus was announced by holy inspiration, the light of that glorious gospel morning, then preparing to dawn upon the benighted regions of the earth, to dispel the mists of darkness from the mind of man; that sin should no longer have dominion over the human race, but that mercy and truth should meet together, and love, and joy, and peace through righteousness, should prevail from the river to the uttermost parts of the earth: that as sin hath reigned unto death, so now might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life, by Jesus Christ our Lord. There is no other way by which mankind can participate in the life and immortality that are brought to light by the gospel, than that of believing in Christ Jesus, and turning to the light of his Holy Spirit, which shineth in every heart. I was sure that these beloved people (telling them so) were no strangers to the name of Christ; but that the bare name is not enough; I wanted them to become acquainted with His power to save them from their sins: without this He would be no Saviour of theirs. The number present was computed at four thousand and upwards, and being placed above them, the heat was almost insupportable: they stood in crowds outside of the six double doors, and about a window that was open at the back of the pulpit. The building is one hundred and ninety-six feet long, and sixty-eight feet wide, and was, to all appearance, as full as the people could pack together. The mercy of the Lord is from everlasting to everlasting, and His truth to all generations of them that fear and love Him. We sat a few minutes with Hiram Bingham's family after the meeting concluded; and then returned on board to our own crew, who were assembled in the cabin in the afternoon.

Second Month 15*th*.—After a restless night, landed in good time yesterday morning, in readiness for the appointed meeting (in the mariners' chapel); which was well attended by the residents and strangers from the shipping. * * The meeting held longer than usual, but ended well: I trust the Lord magnified his own power in the hearts of some; who is blessed and worthy, and God

over all for ever. Most of the missionary families were present.

16*th.*—Visited the school for native girls, under the superintendence of a missionary's wife; which, for good order and general quietness, is the best conducted establishment of the kind we have yet seen. For some time after the formation of this school, the children could not be prevailed upon to go forward with the regular duties, without an adopted child of the queen's led the way, and had the preference shown to her. When ordered to break up at noon, or in the afternoon, they would all retain their seats; and when the reason was asked for this, would say, 'Let the queen go first;' although she was a mere shrimp in size, compared with many of the other children, and not more than six years old. The school-mistress has taken much pains to abolish such an unnecessary and invidious distinction, and has not hesitated to punish this child when in fault, like the other children, without showing any partiality because of her patronage; for a time this gave great offence, but by firmness and steady perseverance, the difficulty was at last completely surmounted. Most of the children have now got the better of yielding such undue servility, although it is said that some of the timid still consider this child's word as law.

17*th.*—This evening repaired to Hiram Bingham's by appointment to meet Kinau, the reigning queen. Her husband Kekuanóa was there, and Kanaina another principal chief and his wife. It proved an interesting season; they were desirous of being instructed in the best mode of governing the islands, and benefiting the people. I told them, there is but one way to effect this, and that is upon the principles of the gospel; nothing else will stand. Kinau has long been desirous of prohibiting the use of ardent spirits altogether, and requested some advice upon this head. It would require caution I said; but that the first step would be to stop all further importation; and that they themselves had better become purchasers of the stock on hand, and empty the rum into the river, than that the people should be destroyed by its effects; the dealers would then have no cause to complain: that best wisdom should be sought for to direct, and that all these things should be conducted throughout in a Christian

spirit. It is high time something was done to remove this evil from amongst the people. They expressed satisfaction with the interview, and suggested that we should meet again for the further consideration of this important subject, viz., the best manner of governing the islands, and benefiting the people. Both these females are tall, portly women, of shrewd understanding, and have a gentleness in their demeanour not usually possessed by others of the same rank, though on first appearing they assume much reserve and austerity.

18*th.*—Some time back my mind was attracted towards preparing something like an address, to be left with those that bear rule over the inhabitants of these islands; which might serve to remind them at a future day, that I had not omitted to warn them of those evils, which, if suffered to continue, will undermine every effort to improve their condition, both civil and religious. The conversation which took place last evening seemed to have opened the way for something further, and confirmed me in believing myself required, as ability may be afforded, to draw up and leave some written document for the clearance of myself towards them.

20*th.*—Before retiring to rest, I began to feel a little towards the evening meeting at the mariners' chapel to-morrow, and the love of the gospel flowed in my heart so encouragingly, that a willingness was at once begotten, to give up to a meeting being appointed on my account.

21*st.* *(First-day.)*—This morning I received a note written at seven o'clock A. M., from the American preacher, offering his place of worship for an evening meeting. On solidly considering the subject, I believe with an honest desire to do the will of my gracious Master, I did not feel easy to let the opportunity pass away without availing myself of it; and therefore, in due time sent written information, in order to insure its being held as a Friends' meeting. In the course of the day our sailors were assembled twice for devotional purposes; and in the evening they attended the public meeting at a quarter past seven o'clock, an hour best adapted to the climate and the people. The meeting was larger than looked for, as the weather was showery; a number of strangers were present, who had arrived two days previously from Boston,

also the most seriously inclined of the residents, several branches of the missionary establishment, with an increased number of sailors, and many of the islanders. We sat long in silence, but under a feeling, solemn beyond expression, which chained down opposing spirits. When the time came for me to stand up, I had to contrast the worship of Almighty God under the Jewish dispensation in the outward temple, with that of the gospel in the inner temple of the heart, &c. The people were very attentive, as has been uniformly the case at every meeting.

26*th.*—To-day visited the school of half-white boys. As our calling was altogether unexpected, there could have been no contrivance whatever to show off to the best advantage. Sixteen boys were present: we heard them read, spell, and answer a variety of questions, and saw specimens of their writing.

On hearing them read some manuscript verses on 'a little boy that never told a lie,' also a paper against committing sin, I perceived something gathering upon my mind, and told the master that I wished to say a few words before we separated as we might never meet together again. I wished them fully to understand, that the knowledge they were acquiring would in reality be of no benefit, but render their condemnation greater, unless obedience kept pace with it; reviving the Saviour's words,—"If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them," &c. The boys were very attentive, and behaved in a solid manner. We remained until the school was dismissed, and then returned on board.

Third Month 1*st.*—Having completed an address to those who bear rule over the inhabitants of the Sandwich Islands, it seemed best to consult the senior missionary on the subject of getting it translated into their language. After having perused it, he very kindly undertook to translate it, in readiness to lay before the king and chiefs when convened for the occasion, in the course of a day or two.

11*th.*—This morning Hiram Bingham came on board to say we were expected this evening at his house, as Kinau the governing chief, with her associates, and the king himself, would be there; and that my address would

probably be read. May the Lord incline their hearts to render unto him His due.

12*th.*—Soon after sunset last evening, we repaired to Hiram Bingham's, where the whole of the expected company assembled, with some others. After tea the address was introduced, and read in the native language; the greatest attention was manifested by the principals present, and a solemn feeling prevailed over us. Shortly after the reading was finished, one of the females proposed that it should be printed, which was confirmed by Kinau, and it appeared to be the mind of all the parties concerned. Having done what I believed to be my part, I can peacefully leave the result to Him, who alone can make it subservient to any purpose of his own praise and glory, and the well-being of the workmanship of his hands.

13*th.*—*(First-day.)*—Remained on board through the day with our own people. Strippedness and poverty of mind are my present portion, and perhaps, food of all others the most needful for me.

27*th.*—*(First-day.)*—The weather still very boisterous. Assembled the crew in the cabin twice in the day. In the forenoon it was a dull, heavy season; in the afternoon more lively. I have been much cast down of late by several discouraging circumstances. The continuance of heavy rain not only confines us more on board, but within the narrow limits of our little heated cabin below deck. In addition to this, I do not see my way clear for leaving the island of Oahu; while most persons around are impatient to be gone, and cannot exactly enter into my feelings. The Lord alone knoweth, and to Him I commit my cause, and desire to bow in humble resignation to His holy Will: if only now and then favoured with a glimpse of His heavenly, life-giving presence, (however short, if certain,) it will be enough.

Fourth Month 24*th.*—*(First-day.)*—In the morning wrote a note to John Deill, enclosing a written notice, which he was requested to read to the people at the breaking up of the forenoon meeting;—that a public meeting for worship, after the manner of the Society of Friends, would be held in the mariners' chapel that evening, at the usual hour; to which the company of all persons who inclined to

attend was requested. Read portions of Scripture to our seamen twice in the course of the day. At the time appointed, landed to attend the meeting: it gathered slowly, but in the end was well attended. After sitting a while in silence, it was with me to point out the desirableness of our endeavouring to get into a quiet state of mind; that we might be sensible of the influence of the Holy Spirit, to solemnize our minds together, if He should be graciously pleased to lift up the light of His heavenly countenance upon us, and bless us therewith: we then settled down into silence before the Lord. After a time, one or two persons went out, but stillness generally prevailed over the company. When the time came for me to stand up, I told them that I had had no expectation of my voice being heard again among them;—that my mouth had for several weeks been closed up, and that a heavy burden had rested upon my mind; to what shall I compare it, but to "the roll that was written within and without, with lamentation, and mourning, and woe," for the inhabitants of that place; who are crucifying to themselves the Son of God afresh, and by their example putting him to open shame in the face of the benighted islanders among whom they dwell. It was probable that those who were the principal causes of this travail of soul, were not among that company; but I could do no less for the clearance of my own mind, than publicly advert to this lamentable state of things; lest I should be found short of doing my own duty, though the cause of suffering might not be removed: but the disciples of Christ must be willing to suffer with their suffering Lord, and to fill up that which is behind, that which remains of the afflictions of Christ in the flesh, for his body's sake, which is the church. Notwithstanding the extent to which sin and iniquity abound, such is the wondrous love of God to his creature man, that he willeth not the death of a sinner, but that all should repent, return unto Him, and live for ever: for this, He gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth on Him should not perish, but have everlasting life; and blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed in the only begotten Son of God. I trusted that there were many such believers then before me, who profess to be His followers: but a

bare profession only of Christ would do little for any of us; nothing short of the possession of the unspeakable gift of His Holy Spirit will avail us. It is no matter under what denomination of religion we are walking before men, or to what outward and visible body of professing Christians we may belong, if we are not members of the mystical body, of which Christ Jesus is the holy Head and everlasting High Priest: and there is no other way of attaining to this, but by and through Christ Jesus,—by receiving Him in the way of his coming. We must be willing to take His yoke upon us, and learn of Him meekness and lowliness; we must be willing to submit to the restraining yoke of His Holy Spirit upon us, and to bring our deeds to its light, which will show us our sins, and our exceeding sinfulness, and cause us to feel our miserable condition. As this yoke is patiently abode under, the effect will be godly sorrow unto repentance, never to be repented of: the glories of eternity will be gradually opened to our view, and we shall be permitted to behold the blessedness of those, who have found rest in Jesus. Our sins will be removed from us as far as the east is from the west, and blotted out for ever for His sake; and we shall be numbered among those who have returned, "and come to Zion, with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads,"—ransomed and redeemed from our sins by the blood of Jesus, the new and living way, and the only way of initiation into membership, with those whose names are written in heaven. Unless we witness this for ourselves, and know from heart-felt experience Christ Jesus to save us from our sins, He is no Saviour of ours: and if we die in our sins, where He is, we can never come.

I stood long among them: and although in the forepart of the time it seemed heavy getting on, yet towards the end, the life spread over us in an eminent manner, and reigned over all. The people seemed as if riveted to their seats, instead of rising up and hasting away, when I sat down. After this I had to appeal to themselves as witnesses of the power which prevailed over us. They still remained stationary after I again sat down, until informed that the meeting was over. Such was the renewed goodness and mercy of Him, to His poor un-

worthy creatures: but He is "God over all, blessed for ever." Amen.

25*th.*—The way seemed now clear for me to direct that the vessel should be completely furnished with wood and water, and prepared for sea. In the evening, I went to Hiram Bingham, to say that I wished to see the people once again collected; at the same time querying, whether, if the meeting in the middle of the week was held in the evening, there would not be a fuller attendance, especially if the occasion was made known. He immediately proposed, that as their week-day meeting consisted principally of Church members only, they should come together as usual on the Fourth-day; and that he would then give notice of a meeting to be held on the Fifth-day evening, at half-past seven o'clock. This proposal was gratefully accepted on my part.

27*th.*—Until now, every thing like a present to any of the parties with whom we have been connected, was studiously avoided on our part, as gifts often open a door to blindness and perversion; but the time of our departure being at hand, several articles likely to be useful were selected and presented to Kinau, and her associate chiefs, as a token of esteem and gratitude for the uniform kindness shown us while in the port of Honolulu; these were courteously received.

After taking tea at Hiram Bingham's we proceeded to the meeting appointed the preceding evening, and found a large concourse of people assembled in readiness. As this was an extra meeting appointed on my account, the people were informed that it would commence with silent waiting, and were exhorted to stillness. Although it is probable more than three thousand persons were present, and many of them strangers to the practices of Friends; yet such was the solemn feeling graciously vouchsafed on the occasion, that the greatest order and quietness prevailed. I was enlarged and strengthened to testify the gospel of the grace of God, which bringeth salvation, and hath appeared unto all men; a word of encouragement was strong in my heart to the dear people, and I had to remind them, that it was not the rich, nor the mighty, nor the noble to whom the call was limited; not many of these were called,—nor many that were wise; but the

poor, simple-hearted and unlearned, and fishermen like themselves; and that they were the people unto whom the call is still extended. After having sat down awhile, it was with me to endeavour to make them sensible of the power, that so eminently reigned over all; recommending them to keep close to it, and it would be with them for ever; because it is "the power of an endless life." None attempted to rise up when the meeting was over: I requested Hiram Bingham to dismiss them, but they still kept their seats, and the same precious solemnity prevailed. When we left our seats they began to draw round us to shake hands, and bid us 'farewell.' Most of the missionary families were present, and five of their preachers.

30*th.*—Made the signal for a pilot according to the rules of the port, and at eleven o'clock A.M., slipped off under easy sail. The morning had been cloudy and squally, but the trade-wind was now steady, though strong and scant for our purpose.

Fifth Month 2*nd.*—Towards nightfall, we had an indistinct view of the island of Owhyee, now called Hawaii.

3*rd.*—Notwithstanding the scantiness of the trade-wind, we had the satisfaction to find, soon after daylight this morning, that there was a probability of our fetching into the neighbourhood of Kalakakua Bay. About three o'clock P.M., we dropped an anchor in ten fathoms water, close in with the shore, and near the place where the affray occurred, in which the British commander, James Cook, was killed.

4*th.*—Our deck was crowded in good time this morning by the natives, bringing with them abundance of their simple commodities for barter. In the forenoon we landed, and ascended a steep more than two miles in length, and in places almost inaccessible. The great heat of the sun, reflected from a nearly black surface of volcanic rock, smooth and glassy, was almost insupportable. The native boys and girls were very desirous to help me up the hill: some pulled me forward by the arms, and others pushing behind, contributed to lessen the fatigue; although this had a ludicrous appearance, I could not well reject their kindness. On reaching the mission-house, we were welcomed in a friendly manner by Cochran Forbes and his

wife, who occupy this secluded habitation. As the native meeting was to be held in regular course in the afternoon, it was concluded that notice should be given of a public meeting to be held to-morrow morning, for our accommodation, in the hope of collecting a large number of the people together; but a chief woman who sat by, stated, that as the king and his large retinue were at Kailua, (the next station,) the people who were now at home, in their huts, would be engaged in procuring a supply of food, and in transporting it to these visitors both to-morrow and the next day also. On this account it seemed best to hold the meeting this afternoon, and to take measures to spread the report of our being come to attend it. A considerable number of the people were collected at the hour appointed, and in due time my certificates were read, and translated by the missionary; and after calling their attention to the importance of the object for which we were assembled, ability was afforded me to declare the Truth amongst them, fully and freely, for the space of an hour. Nothing could exceed the attention and solidity manifested by these Hawaiians, I humbly trust to the glory of Him who wrought and crowned the work by his solemnizing presence. On the left of the ascent to the missionary station, about half a mile from the rocky margin of the sea, stands a rough but substantial monument, erected to the memory of the late James Cook, with the following inscription. "In memory of Captain James Cook, R.N., who discovered these islands in the year of our Lord 1778; this humble monument is erected by his fellow-countrymen, in the year 1825."

6*th*.—At nine o'clock, P.M., got under weigh with a fresh land-breeze, and stood off from the coast to secure an offing sufficient to warrant our steering with safety shore-ward in the dark, clear of all crags. Heavy rain fell just after leaving the bay of Kalakakua; but the rising of the moon soon after midnight dispelled every cloud, and the weather continuing beautifully clear, favoured our design. About eight o'clock A.M., on the morning of the 7th instant, we anchored near the king's brig, which, with three native schooners, was lying in the roads of Kailua. In the forenoon, the resident missionary, Artemas Bishop, came on board, to welcome us on our

arrival; we returned with him to the shore, and on reaching the mission-station were kindly received by the family. In the afternoon we called at the residence of John Adams, alias Kuakini, the governor of the island, with whom I became acquainted at Oahu; but he had not returned from his favourite employment of fishing, at which he is considered very expert. On our way back we sat some time on the floor with a chief's widow, who was sick. On the fort established by Tamehameha are yet remaining two enormous idols, which were formerly worshipped by these people. They have been evidently cut out of the solid part of two immensely large trees, and carved into forms hideous and disgusting, and truly gigantic: they must have cost excessive labour.

8*th*. *(First-day.)*—Reached the shore in good time, and accompanied the missionary and his family to the meeting. When all seemed gathered, the people were informed by Artemas Bishop, that if we should remain silent, they were to keep themselves quite still and quiet. As I have uniformly witnessed the beneficial effects of my certificates being read, I had previously handed them to the missionary, who read them audibly in English, as many of our nation were present, and afterwards translated them, I believe very ably, to the islanders, who were very attentive. We had a highly favoured season together, and the language of "peace be unto you," flowed in my heart richly towards these dear people. When the meeting was well gathered, the king and some of his followers came in, and stayed the whole time, behaving in an orderly manner. When the meeting broke up, those with whom we had been previously acquainted at Oahu flocked about us, and many others followed their example of shaking hands. Being informed that a bible-class was about to assemble in the same building, we resumed our seats again: it was conducted on the system of learning one verse each day, through the week, the whole to be repeated on the First-day of the week. The children and adults repeated the same words aloud at the same time. After this, questions were asked by the teacher, to which all the parties answered with one voice.

Not feeling any warrant to request that the afternoon meeting should be held exclusively on my account, it

took its usual course, although it did not seem safe for me to omit attending it. I sat near the missionary, and when the usual services were gone through, I told him that I wished to say a few words; on standing up, he rose to be ready to interpret, which arrested the attention of the people. After a pause, the way opened for me to declare the necessity for "every one that nameth the name of Christ, to depart from iniquity," without which the highest profession of the Christian religion is in vain; and that nothing short of the regenerating power of the Spirit of the Lord Jesus in the heart of man, can cleanse and purify, and prepare him for that kingdom which shall never have an end. It is in the heart that sin hath its origin and root; and where the disease is seated, there the remedy must be applied. Out of the heart of man proceed "evil thoughts;" and it is these that must be watched for and detected in the light of the Holy Spirit. I stood up in much weakness, but was greatly strengthened, and largely opened before sitting down, to testify the gospel of the grace of my God, and to ascribe all to the Lord God and to the Lamb, who sitteth upon the throne; who loved us, and washed us from sin in his own precious blood, to whom dominion, and glory, and praise belong for ever.

9th.—This morning Kauikeaouli, the king, came on board, and fixed to come again in the afternoon to dinner; this he did to our great satisfaction, bringing with him a confidential person of respectability. Every opportunity that could be desired was afforded to put the king in full possession of our opinion as to the real state of things upon the islands, and to apprize him of the artful designs of those persons who are constantly endeavouring to prejudice him against the missionaries, by raising evil reports against them on every trifling occasion, under pretence of being his best friends; while they are at the same time his worst enemies, and those of his people. They would rejoice to see the missionaries banished from the islands, the latter being the only persons capable of counteracting their desire to reduce the people to a state of slavery: by introducing an extensive growth of sugar-cane, and permitting the chiefs to share in the profit with them, they would at once compel the natives to

labour for them, or in other words, to be slaves to their sordid avarice, while a set of mercenary foreigners would be enriched, altogether regardless of the waste of life they occasion. The king listened with great attention, and from the questions he asked, there is no doubt, but that he thoroughly understood the substance of the whole matter. Although Kauikeaouli does not speak English with facility, yet he understands it tolerably well; and the young man who accompanied him, having had a good education, was able to give every explanation required.

In the evening we drank tea at the mission-house, where again Kauikeaouli was one of the company. I sat next to him, but he was now like another person, and took no interest in any thing that went forward, seeming quite absorbed in thought. The number assembled at the meeting yesterday was more than 2000; but many of them had come from the neighbourhood of Kalakakua Bay.

A large stone building, for a place of worship, is nearly ready for roofing at Kailua: on my remarking the very great thickness of the walls, I was told, that unless this was the case it could not stand, on account of the violent shocks which earthquakes frequently occasion: at times the tables and chairs rattle on the floors of the missionary dwelling.

10*th*.—Preparation being made for sailing, and the land-breeze springing up, we left the bay of Kailua about midnight, and stretched off under easy canvass, not having the advantage of moonlight. In the morning of the 11th instant, the weather clear and hot, with light breezes, but not from a favourable quarter. Low in mind, but in the enjoyment of peaceful poverty, trusting in Him who only knoweth the extent of what is before me. My desire is, to be found in the way cast up for me, and that I may leave nothing undone, and no place unvisited where it is His will that the ever-blessed Truth, by the power of the Holy Spirit, should be proclaimed, though it be in weakness and in fear, by such an one as myself, frail indeed, and my days fast numbering to a close: but the strength of Israel is sufficient for all things required at our hands; and if we are faithful, I am persuaded, that as our day is, so shall our strength be.

CHAPTER XVI.

SANDWICH ISLANDS CONTINUED.

Fifth Month 13*th*, 1836.—It was late in the afternoon when we arrived at Waimea; and on reaching the mission-house were kindly received by Lorenzo Lyons, and Dwight Baldwin and their families. Feeling much exhausted with the heat and the harassing journey, I should have rejoiced if the meeting had been appointed for the next morning: but found on inquiry, that the people would soon begin to collect, and that if postponed until to-morrow, but few persons would be able to attend, as they would necessarily be widely scattered in collecting food for the first day of the week, so that they might have nothing to prevent their attending the places of worship. I was informed, that on First-day the meeting would be larger if the weather proved fine; but if wet, the people would not come. These things considered, it seemed best to take the opportunity which now presented, rather than by delay to run the risk of faring worse, or perhaps losing my labour altogether. After some refreshment we repaired to the meeting, which proved quite as large as was expected. The senior missionary thought it unnecessary to do more than explain the nature of my certificates, and this in a brief manner; but perhaps sufficient for the understanding of the people. When he had finished, I stood up in great weakness, desiring that we might endeavour to draw nigh unto the Lord in humble reverence of soul. The people were very solid and attentive; and although I do not remember having felt less ability to minister, or having less matter in prospect, strength sufficient was mercifully and timely afforded, to endeavour to turn them from darkness to the light of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus in their own hearts,—that they might know Him to be a Saviour indeed, to save them from their sins; that so He might be theirs, and they might be His, through the never-ending ages of eternity:

it is He who bringeth unto God the Father, and raiseth up at the last day.

14*th.*—At nine A.M., taking leave of Waimea, we made the best of our way to the coast, expecting to put to sea the same evening; but the night proving rainy and rough, it seemed best for us to remain under the shelter at present afforded by the projecting land in the neighbourhood of Koala.

15*th. (First-day.)*—From the state of the weather, it is probable if we had remained at Waimea, but few of the people would have attended the meeting to-day. Twice in the course of the day our seamen were assembled for devotional purposes, as we had no communication with the shore; although I thought if an interpreter had been present some of the straggling natives might have been collected together. At sun-down got under weigh, and proceeded towards Koala with a light breeze; but on opening the mouth of the passage, between the islands, we found plenty of wind and sea.

17*th.*—Early in the morning stood in for Hawaii,—the weather rainy through the day; at six o'clock P.M., stood off again for the night. Torrents of rain appeared to be falling all the day upon the mountains of Hawaii: twenty-six different cascades were counted at one time rushing towards the ocean down the rocky cliffs: every part of the island which we have seen seems to consist of huge masses of volcanic substance, and the leeward side is truly dreary and barren in appearance.

18*th.*—This evening, whilst under feeling of poverty and weakness, I was reminded that this day the Yearly Meeting of Friends at large sat down in London. This brought afresh my dear brethren and sisters, who are endeavouring to do the will of our heavenly Father, very near to me in the covenant of life and peace; and a belief that we ourselves shall not be forgotten by some who compose that large assembly, when drawing nigh in spirit to the footstool of mercy and love, is very precious and animating, though removed from them almost as far as the east is from the west.

19*th.*—Towards midnight, the flashes from the great volcano illumined the atmosphere, and at times had the appearance of a stationary light on that part of the coast.

At three o'clock A.M., it visibly spread and increased its light; but was eventually lost sight of in the beams of returning morning. At half-past two o'clock P.M., dropped anchor in seven fathoms water, behind a small reef, which affords a good shelter from the swell occasioned by the usual trade-wind.

21*st.*—Drank tea at David B. Lyman's, who has kindly undertaken to accept the office of interpreter between myself and the people to-morrow. Notwithstanding I have now stood before so many thousands of these islanders on both sides the equator; yet the prospect of to-morrow is formidable in my sight. If the weakness of human nature was not thus felt, there would, I believe, be a danger of our not sufficiently and devotedly seeking after, and imploring the strengthening influence of that power, without which "we can do nothing," but with it all things. May the Lord be our helper, and cause his own works to praise Him, to the glory of the riches of that grace, which came by Jesus Christ.

22*nd.* (*First-day.*)—Attended the meeting at the time fixed: sat as one that had lost all strength, until David B. Lyman had nearly finished reading the Morning Meeting's certificate, when I seemed ready, and only waiting the termination of the concluding paragraph to stand upon my feet, with my mind centred and the fear of man banished far away. After the people were requested to settle down in stillness, and endeavour to draw nigh unto the Lord with humble reverence, I was strengthened to declare amongst them the way of life and salvation, in the word of the truth of the gospel, in the love of which my heart was greatly enlarged. Repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ, the only way to obtain forgiveness of sins that are past, and freedom from the thraldom of sin in future, were largely pointed out, and the light of the Holy Spirit of Christ Jesus, which shineth in every heart, as the only blessed medium by which this path is made manifest; by reason of the darkness which prevaileth in man, while held in a carnal, and unregenerate state, in bondage to the power of Satan, the prince of darkness. The meeting was not so large, we were told, as at some other times; but the people were very attentive, and bowed down

under the mighty hand of Him whose power reigned over all. After the meeting broke up, we attended a Sabbath-school for Bible scholars, of all ages and both sexes. It commenced with a prayer by a native teacher, and finished with another by one of the missionaries.

We partook of some dinner with Titus Coan and wife, as I felt an engagement to attend the native meeting again in the afternoon. It began at three o'clock, and I had again to testify of the gospel of grace and truth which came by Jesus Christ, from which, such is the universal love of God, none are excluded.

23*rd*.—In the afternoon landed, and visited a magnificent and stupendous waterfall, called the 'Cascade of the Rainbow.' The sun was hot and the walk fatiguing; but the exercise was needful before again putting to sea, as from the wetness of the weather since anchoring in the bay but little had been obtained. We passed by three distinct craters, situated in a line stretching inland from the shore, apparently at exact distances from each other, and the same size and shape in every particular, all declaring the wonderful works of the same Almighty power. The cascade of the rainbow exceeds the description given of it, and at once excites wonder and admiration, exhibiting a mighty torrent of foaming water in perpetual roar, rushing down a perpendicular steep of more than one hundred feet into a basin of sufficient magnitude to receive this never-ceasing deluge. At the back of the fall, towards the bottom, a large arch is formed probably by the rushing torrent; and the enormous weight of water falling such a depth, causes a mist to arise two-thirds of the whole height of the surrounding cliffs, which with the sun in a certain position, gives rise to the name of the cascade, by displaying a beautiful rainbow.

[The missionaries from the different stations in the Sandwich Island group, are accustomed to assemble once in the year at Oahu. The time of their annual meeting was now approaching; and two of the missionaries having kindly stayed behind to interpret for Daniel Wheeler, they and their families were subsequently conveyed in the *Henry Freeling* as far as the island of Maui.]

25*th*.—Soon after eight o'clock A. M. the sea-breeze made its appearance, but before setting in, a canoe came paddling off in great haste to reach the vessel, with a couple who were desirous of being married before the departure of the missionaries; but having neglected to obtain the permission of the principal chiefess, this could not be accomplished. There was no alternative but that of returning again to the shore about three miles off, to obtain the needful sanction; and having been told that we should not wait for them if the wind should spring up in our favour, they paddled off again with all the speed in their power. Before the wind was strong enough to warrant the risk of getting under weigh and clearing the reef, this canoe was seen again returning to the vessel from the shore. They would gladly have been married in their canoe, but the motion was so violent that the parties could not possibly stand upright while the missionary performed the usual ceremony. They were then taken on board, and to make it easy to both parties, were brought down into the cabin, where the rite was performed by one of the missionaries demanding answers to several important questions; the other offering up a prayer. The captain, mate, and ourselves, were witnesses of this curious exhibition, the vessel rolling about in such a manner that they were forced to hold themselves by the table and each other, when they stood upon their feet: they were both so drenched by the sea that had washed into the canoe, that measures were necessary to clear the cabin floor from the quantity of water on it after the ceremony was concluded. The husband was clothed in a European shirt, with a belt round him; and his wife in a loose cotton robe, reaching nearly to the floor, which comprised the whole attire of the parties. I felt a degree of satisfaction at what had transpired, and to myself our detention last evening was accounted for.

We witnessed last evening a scene, in the embarkation of the two missionary families, both affecting and highly interesting. When the moment for their leaving their habitations approached, the natives crowded into their houses to take leave of them; and as the train proceeded towards the beach, the company increased to

a large number, perhaps hundreds. When arrived at the edge of the cliff, there was a solemn pause, and a prayer was eventually offered by D. B. Lyman; after which, the final separation took place. The people seemed to consider us also as friends about to leave them, and extended their good wishes, shaking hands very freely as we retired to the boat. Some of them assisted us to launch into the surf, and I have no hesitation in believing, that they would have risked their own lives to save ours. How different their present state to what it was, when these shores were visited by the first navigators of the Pacific: but what might the situation of these simple hearted natives have been at this day, if only men of Christian principles had trod their soil, instead of the wicked and barbarous crews of the shipping; who have committed every possible excess and outrage, shameful and brutal, upon these helpless islanders, to the lasting disgrace and infamy of the white skin.

26*th*.—In hauling round the point of the island, the wind became light; but a fresh breeze springing up from the south-west, enabled us to stem the current and reach the roads of Lahaina, soon after twelve o'clock; we anchored near the American ship *Newark*, a whaling vessel put in for fresh provisions and vegetables. The smooth water having recruited our passengers, the men went on shore, but soon returned, bringing with them the resident missionary, William Richards. The captain of the whaler coming on board at the same time, kindly made the offer of his boat, which conveyed all our passengers on shore at once, with ease. In the afternoon Charles and myself landed, and remained at the mission-house until sundown. It appeared that William Richards and family had intended to leave Lahaina on the evening of the following day for Oahu, in a small schooner lying near at hand; this being the only opportunity likely to offer for their conveyance to that island in time for their annual meeting. Although I had not disclosed what was upon my mind to any one: yet I had long believed that I should not be clear of the Sandwich Islands, without making an attempt to see the whole of the missionary families, when collected together for their annual meeting at Oahu: and it now sprung in my heart to tell William

Richards, that if he would consent to remain at Lahaina, and assist me over the approaching First-day, I should feel myself bound to convey himself and family, in time for their meeting at Oahu if practicable, in the *Henry Freeling*. These terms being accepted, it was with me to inquire whether the missionary at the station of Wairûkû, on the south side of the island, had sailed for Oahu; and finding there was considerable probability of his being still at his post, it seemed best to make the necessary arrangements for proceeding thither without delay. A messenger was forthwith dispatched with a letter, requesting that the inhabitants of that district might be collected to-morrow at the place of worship, as early in the day as could conveniently be done.

27*th*.—By two o'clock A. M., a whale-boat manned with a native crew came alongside; and at the cock-crowing, as agreed upon by all parties, we left the vessel properly equipped for the journey. By eight o'clock, we reached the boundary aimed at, beyond which the boat was of no further service; here we landed and hauled it up; and the men corded the oars to a chair we had purposely brought with us. I was thus speedily furnished with a land conveyance, and Charles being provided with a horse, we pursued our route towards Wairûkû, about eight miles distant; he on horseback, and I riding and walking alternately, for the relief of my bearers, as well as for a change of position. We got to our destination about noon, and were kindly received by the missionary family. While some refreshment was preparing, we visited the school, consisting of a large number of children of both sexes. The meeting gathered at three o'clock, which we attended accordingly,—myself in much weariness and emptiness; but I was strengthened to stand up shortly after the reading of my certificates, and remind the people that we were in the presence of the Most High God of Heaven and earth; before whom "the nations are as a drop of a bucket: He taketh up the isles as a very little thing:" He not only seeth all our actions, but knoweth the most inward thoughts and imaginations of every heart. I was carried forward to unusual length, and without any prospect of drawing to a conclusion; the blessed truths of the

gospel unfolding in continued succession to the view of my mind for about an hour and a-half: I afterwards found that the meeting had kept increasing, far beyond what was anticipated. It was to me a very memorable season, the Lord's power was over all; and I humbly trust His name was honoured and exalted, and the kingdom within proclaimed to the dear Redeemer's praise. My mind felt peaceful and refreshed, and the fatigue of the journey was remembered no more. We had to shake hands with a large body of the natives between the meeting-house and the missionary's dwelling. After spending some time with the family, and the night drawing on, we were compelled to renew our travel towards the place where the boat had been left in the morning; and though it soon became dark after leaving Wairûkû, we succeeded in getting to the right spot. After the people had rested themselves, the boat was launched, and we were favoured to reach our little vessel about half-past one o'clock in the morning. It was to me a memorable day of goodness and mercy, and the more so, as it was the anniversary of my dear William's birth, which kindled in my heart towards our heavenly Father, renewed desires for the welfare of my precious family.

29*th*. (*First-day.*)—Got some rest in the night; but was awakened early by the remembrance of the great weight of responsibility resting upon me; but the voice of my supplication was heard, and my prayer was not permitted to return again into my bosom in the hour of trouble. At this place we found a noble meeting-house, full of people, both in the galleries and upon the ground-floor, more in number than two thousand, according to the missionary's statement. Though a stranger to the language of these people, I was sensible that my kind and willing interpreter took more than ordinary pains to impress their minds with the belief that I had brought with me well attested letters of recommendation; and as the name of William Ellis was well-known and remembered among them, he took care to state that I had a letter from him also, among others; his competent knowledge and fluent expression of the language, while it at once commanded attention, raised a degree of confidence, both in them and myself which was of a strengthening tendency.

[After giving an outline of his address, D. W. adds.] It was indeed a high day, a day of light and joy and gladness of heart, as when the Bridegroom's voice is heard. The meeting held long; and when over, we were invited to attend an English service to be conducted by Titus Coan; which I was most easy to decline, and return forthwith on board the *Henry Freeling*, to collect our own sailors. Some of the seamen of the American whaler were present, and my mouth was again opened to speak of the way of life and salvation by Christ Jesus, to this little gathering.

Soon after three o'clock P.M., we again returned to the shore, to attend the afternoon native meeting. Not more than half the number of the people were present who had assembled in the morning. I had again to minister unto them: but the current of life was weak in comparison to what had flowed so freely and strongly in the first meeting. The "gospel of the kingdom," was again declared to them; and I trust the great name was magnified, by the praise of His own work.

30*th*.—William Richards having kindly furnished a light waggon, Charles and myself proceeded to Lahaina Luna, where the high-school is established; we were kindly received by the principals of this institution, who are missionaries; and specimens of the books which have been printed here, charts of the Sandwich Islands, and a general atlas, (the plates which these were taken from, being the work of the native scholars at this school,) were presented to us. The buildings were undergoing alterations and repairs during the vacation, on which account the scholars had been dismissed some days previous to our arrival. At four o'clock P.M., the missionary families came on board, consisting in all of twenty-three persons. At five o'clock the *Henry Freeling* left the island of Maui; after reaching the Morakai channel, the breeze forsook us, and we were left to tumble about all the night in a heavy swell.

31*st*.—Having the advantage of a fine trade-wind in the course of the day, about five o'clock P.M. we anchored outside the reefs at Oahu in ten fathoms water.

Oahu, Sixth Month 1*st*.—Early in the forenoon, the British Consul came on board in a whale-boat, and conveyed us to the shore, as our own small boat was in such

a shattered condition from exposure to the sun, as scarcely to be fit to trust to for so considerable a distance, as from our present anchorage without the reefs, to the town of Honolulu. After landing, proceeded to the missionary establishment, and had an interview with the three missionaries from the island of Tauai, about ninety miles to leeward of Oahu, who had arrived yesterday in the *Missionary Packet*. Our situation was fully explained to them, and it was I believe understood, that unless one of them would kindly accompany us to that island, our making an attempt to visit the people would be useless. Whilst on shore we were informed that the neighbourhood of New Zealand had been visited, in the First Month last, with an awful tempest, in which much damage had been done to the shipping; that Captain Russel, of the American ship *Zone*, with whom we were personally acquainted, and to whom we were much attached, in endeavouring to save one of the sailors, had himself been washed overboard and lost. We met with him last year, at the Society Isle Huahine, and were much pleased with his serious and steady deportment. Several books and tracts were furnished for the use of the crew of his vessel, by whom he was much beloved. We were informed by the missionary family, that he had been much interested at the meeting that was held there with the natives, which he had attended. He had determined that that should be his last voyage, and so it has proved. I humbly trust he has safely entered a haven of eternal rest; where storm and tempest cannot come, nor pain nor sorrow find place.

2*nd*.—Although the prospect which had been spread before the view of my mind, for some weeks previous to our return to Honolulu, of seeing the whole of the missionaries and their families when collected at their general meeting, still remained strongly with me; yet the time did not seem come for me to take any steps to accomplish the same, until we had ascertained that the whole of them had arrived. Those who were present at the opening of this general meeting, concluded I was detained until an interpreter was ready to accompany us to the island of Tauai, and in a very kind and brotherly manner invited us to attend the several sittings of that meeting. The manner in which the affairs of the mission to these islands is

conducted, could not fail to excite much interest in our minds; and although well aware that in our attendance at the meetings we should be subjected to witness many things that we could not unite in, yet, as they had always allowed us to do that which was most easy to ourselves, without a single remonstrance or the slightest appearance of dissatisfaction on their part, I was not satisfied to let such an opportunity pass away without availing ourselves of it.

11*th.*—In the afternoon left the vessel and proceeded towards the Pearl river, at the head of which lies the station of Eva; we were favoured to reach it in less than five hours.

12*th.* *(First-day.)*—Having retired early to rest last evening, we were seated at the breakfast table by six o'clock this morning. The horn was blown in good time to collect the people, and at ten o'clock we met about seven hundred of them in a shed open on every side, there being as yet no place of worship erected. I had largely to declare among them the glad tidings of the gospel, turning their attention, as ability was afforded, to the just witness for God in every heart. Although under feelings of great weakness as to myself, yet the deportment of the people afforded an encouraging evidence that the great Master was near to own the work. The afternoon meeting was not quite so numerously attended, but it proved even more solid than that in the morning.

We left Eva at three o'clock this morning, the 13th instant, and were favoured to reach the *Henry Freeling* by eight o'clock. The time was now fully come for me to request an opportunity with the whole of the members of the mission; and in the evening I stated my case to the senior missionary, who appeared quite disposed to make way for it, by consulting his brethren at a meeting then about to collect, to which we repaired. Most of two hours elapsed before a suitable opportunity presented to spread the subject before the meeting; but when once understood, my request was immediately granted, and the next evening was fixed for us to meet together.

14*th.*—Employed on board through the day. In the evening called upon Hiram Bingham, who accompanied us to the meeting. I was shown into the moderator's

seat, and the company was soon gathered together. After some time in silence, it was with me simply to state, that on leaving Honolulu a few weeks ago, I had no expectation of returning to it again; but some time afterwards I found that I should not be clear of these parts, without endeavouring to see the whole of the missionary establishment in its collected capacity. At that time it seemed difficult to comprehend how it would be brought about, but I felt a willingness and resignation on my part towards its accomplishment:—He that causeth his wind to blow, and the waters flow, directed our steps and brought it to pass. As it is probable, (I continued) that all are present who will be on the occasion, I would suggest that we now endeavour to sink down in humble reverence of soul before "the Judge of all the earth," to wait for the counsel of His will; and, if graciously favoured therewith, endeavour to do it, to his praise and to his glory. The meeting then settled down in silence and remained for a considerable time under a solemn covering; until I had to speak of the order in the church of Christ, and of the preparation of heart which every member must pass through by the operation of the Holy Spirit, before he can become a part of this glorious body, which is without spot or wrinkle; and the necessity of our individually knowing for ourselves the hope of our high and holy calling. It was afterwards with me to state, the opportunity I had had of seeing them in their different, distant, solitary and secluded allotments, and of witnessing their patient endeavours to promote the work in which they were engaged. Having myself dwelt amongst those whose language I could not understand, I was the better able to feel for them on this account with brotherly sympathy; and I was no stranger to the many obstacles thrown in their way, and the numerous difficulties that they had to encounter; but their only refuge was Christ Jesus the Lord; if He was with them, they had nothing to fear. I had no desire to discourage any, but while beholding the vast importance of the work they had taken in hand, I was ready to tremble at the awful weight of the responsibility which rested upon them. It was not for me to judge whether they had been called and chosen for the work, or not. I knew that our Lord had

declared, "this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come." Their being called or not called to the work, rested with themselves. It is, however, possible for a man to have a zeal for God, but not according to knowledge; and while earnestly endeavouring to lend a hand of help to others, he may be neglecting the all-important duty of coming to the knowledge of the Lord for himself. I believed that many of them were truly and earnestly desirous to know the Lord for themselves, and I wished to encourage such to follow on to know Him: to seek Him, and not to rest contented, until they found him who said, "seek and ye shall find." "The Lord whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to His temple,—even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, He shall come, saith the Lord of Hosts. But who may abide the day of his coming, and who shall stand when he appeareth?" Nothing that is of man, or in man,—that is earthly, sensual or unclean, can stand before Him: the heart must be cleansed and purified from every thing that defileth, before it can become the temple of a holy, pure, and just God: and none is sufficient for these things but He, unto whom all power in heaven and earth is given; who, the prophet declares, is "like a refiner's fire, and like fuller's soap; and he shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver." This heart-searching process we must all pass through: and by yielding in meekness and submission to the baptizing operation thereof, we shall in due time be given to know and to feel it to be the "messenger to prepare the way of the Lord" before Him, who will not dwell in the defiled temple of an unclean heart. This ordeal all have to pass through in a greater or smaller degree, before they come to that knowledge which is "life eternal,"—even the knowledge of "the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom He hath sent;" who once visited the earth in a body that was prepared for Him, but who now visiteth by His Holy Spirit the heart of man: who is indeed the heavenly messenger of the covenant, to all that seek Him, and delight in Him, and whose coming is sure, because the Lord hath promised. But to those who are called and chosen to speak to others in the name of the Lord, and to proclaim the glad tidings

of that gospel which "is the power of God unto salvation, to every one that believeth," a largerportion of the "refiner's fire" is often needful, to purge them as gold and silver, and prepare them for the great work of declaring "the truth as it is in Jesus," from their own blessed and sensible experience. Just in proportion as the Lord's messengers are qualified and taught of Him, when commissioned to go forth in his name, may we expect that the people will be benefited: if our eyes are not first opened, vain is the attempt to open the eyes of the blind, and turn them from darkness to light. I was largely drawn forth to speak of the vast importance of the work in which they had engaged, and to arouse them to a sense of the responsibility it involved; recommending them to take counsel of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus,—for the same shall judge us at the last day. I had much to express to them in great plainness of speech, under the overshadowing power of that love which maketh not afraid; reminding them of the many blessed seasons we had been permitted to witness together, on the different islands, when the Divine presence was as a crown and diadem over those large assemblies of the people. That "faith which works by love," and the true supper of the Lord, were also largely held up to their view.

15*th*.—Taking the necessary measures to prepare the vessel for sea. In the evening met the whole of the missionary establishment again; when the senior, on behalf of his brethren and himself, delivered an address, on the subject of our visit to these islands; in which he expressed their satisfaction in terms of applause, perhaps, better forgotten by us, than remembered. I was silent among them; but when the meeting broke up, I told the speaker, I could have added, "Not unto us," &c.

16*th*.—In the morning, Charles and myself took an early opportunity of sitting down together, and were favoured to get into the quiet, although all was bustle around us. In the afternoon went on shore to settle our affairs, and take leave of those with whom we had now been several months acquainted, and for whom an earnest solicitude was felt. Soon after returning on board, we embarked the baggage of Peter J. Gulick the missionary, who had engaged to accompany us to the island of Tauai,

and who resides at the station of Koloa; he, his wife, and five children, with the British Consul and the master of the free-school, were our passengers. The trade-wind being fresh in our favour, and having our pilot 'Sugar-Cane' in readiness, at five o'clock we quitted the sheltering harbour of Honolulu and stretched well into the offing, in the hope of a permanent breeze at a good distance from the land.

17*th.*—Got sight of the island at three o'clock P.M., and at six o'clock, anchored in the open roadstead of Koloa, just in time to land our passengers before the night came upon us.

19*th.* (*First-day.*)—Repaired in good time to the shore, having two miles to go to the native meeting in the heat of the sun. By nine o'clock, about eight hundred of the people were assembled in an open shed. I was poor, and under feelings of great weakness amongst them; but after reminding them of the solemn purpose for which we were brought together, when the missionary had finished reading the translation of my certificates, the way was opened for me largely to declare the glad tidings of great joy to all that repent, believe, and obey the gospel; and to make a solemn appeal to the just witness for God in every heart. I felt an earnest engagement to turn the attention of these dear people to the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, which would discover to them "all things that ever they did," would set their sins in order before them, and save them from sin with an everlasting salvation. The people were very attentive, and under a solemn feeling the meeting broke up; when they flocked round us in the usual manner. I found that on account of the weak state of the health of the missionary, no afternoon meeting was held; but the school was largely attended; on this occasion, however, the people were again assembled for worship at three o'clock P.M. I felt little on my mind towards them, but was fearful of withholding that little, and stood for a time under much discouragement; strength was, however, in due time graciously afforded,—and I was enabled, to my admiration, to set before the people "life and death, good and evil,"—and to encourage them not to be overcome of evil, but to overcome evil with good. "Let every one that

nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity," and "live unto Him who died for them, and rose again;" and who now by the grace of His Holy Spirit, bringeth salvation to all men, hath appeared unto all men, and teacheth all men, &c. Although the number present was less than in the morning, yet the meeting was no less solemn. Returned on board before dark to lessen the risk of staving the boat against the vessel, as the constant swell of the sea renders access and egress at all times difficult, but much less hazardous by day-light.

21*st*.—Yesterday and this morning pretty fully engaged in procuring vegetables, Indian corn, &c. In the afternoon went up to Koloa, to take leave of the missionary's family, he himself being about to accompany us to Hanarei, a station on the other side of the island.

Hanarei, 24*th*.—Our missionary friend came off from the shore at an early hour, to inform us that the natives would be collected about half-past nine o'clock. We landed with him in a large canoe, conducted by skilful natives, which carried us comfortably through the surf. As we approached the strand, the people collected in a body, and watching the return of the roller which bore the canoe a sufficient height for their purpose, it was placed in a few moments very safely out of the reach of the breakers upon dry ground. The conch-shells were immediately sounded; and after waiting some time at the missionary-house, we proceeded to the meeting. Here we found, perhaps, seven hundred people, all squatted in stillness upon the ground, (as no seats were provided,) waiting for the strangers. After a time my mind was opened to declare amongst them Christ Jesus the Lord; the light of the knowledge of whose Holy Spirit visiteth every heart, to give the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ, and if believed in, and walked in, to restore man from a state of sin and death to holiness and newness of life. Strength and ability were richly afforded me, to testify the love and the mercy of God in Christ Jesus to the children of men; and the people were exhorted to turn to His light whilst the day of their visitation was extended, lest they should be overtaken by the night, wherein no man can work. Although the people were very attentive, and great solemnity prevailed on the occa-

sion, yet after the meeting broke up, as was the case with those held at Koloa, the sentence of death in myself was my only portion: at its conclusion they flocked round us in the usual way,—many of them, I believe, with love in their hearts. At least one hundred and fifty accompanied us down to the strand, and saw us safely launched again into deep water. In the afternoon landed on the other side of the bay, and had full opportunity of witnessing the very low state of these poor degraded people, and the filthy abodes of several of them. I exchanged needles and fish-hooks for any thing they could furnish, even for broken shells, as they seemed to have nothing to part with, to purchase such articles as they stood in need of, and which they were very desirous to obtain. At seven o'clock, P.M. departed from the bay, and made sail to the eastward with a fair breeze, and heavy showers of rain falling.

25*th*.—In the course of this day, we were much baffled with variable winds and strong currents; towards sun-set we anchored in five fathoms water, in the road of Waimea, opposite a fort formed some years ago by the crew of a Russian vessel. Soon after arriving, Peter J. Gulick went on shore to arrange for a meeting with the people to-morrow. In the evening, some milk was sent off from the missionary station; its occupants, Samuel Whitney and family, are now absent at Oahu, with the rest of the mission.

26*th* (*First-day.*)—Landed in good time to attend the meeting. Richard Charlton undertook to conduct us through the surf with the natives, having acquired their language from long residence among these islands; we soon met with Peter J. Gulick, and proceeded to the meeting together. By nine o'clock about one thousand persons were collected, who filled every part of the house, except a narrow gallery intended for singers, at the lower end of it. I felt as one stripped of every thing but a sense of utter weakness and inability, which has been the case for several seasons of late; but although the Lord was pleased to try my faith, that my trust and confidence might be centred in Him alone, He again condescended to clothe me with strength and power, to declare amongst the people the unsearchable riches of Christ. Soon after

Peter J. Gulick had read my certificates, I stood up; and having awakened their attention and directed them to Him, unto whom the cattle on a thousand hills belong, I told them I had no desire to multiply words amongst them, lest I should be found darkening counsel; but that my desire was to turn them from words to the power of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus in their own hearts. My tongue was loosed to declare freely the things relating to the gospel of the kingdom, for upwards of an hour. No people could be more attentive; my prayer is, that many of them may be enabled to say, from heart-felt living experience,—"Now we believe, not because of thy saying: for we have heard him ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world:"—unto whom be ascribed glory and dominion for ever.

28*th.*—To-day, for the most part employed in embarking yams, sweet potatoes, water melons, goats, &c., which had been purchased with barter goods. Some molasses had been spoken about to a Chinaman who is engaged here as an agent to an American master residing at Oahu; but finding that this article was entirely the gain of oppression, we declined taking it on that account. A few gallons were purchased at last from an American, who had produced the sugar cane by his own labour, which wholly removed all difficulty on this head. On this island, it is said that the poor natives are more oppressed by the chiefs, than on any other of the Sandwich group. The introduction of two establishments for making sugar, with which the chiefs are connected, it seems probable, will eventually be the cause of promoting a state of slavery as oppressive as that which has existed in the West Indies: the population from this, and other much to be deplored causes, is rapidly decreasing: these sugar plantations were set on foot by two Americans. In one instance, the chiefs find all the labour, and have one-half of the profit; in the other, the scheme is more plausible, as the natives are paid a small pittance for their labour: but the chiefs are compelled by contract to furnish a sufficient number of labourers for their share of the profit; for the sake of which, the contract is more rigidly enforced. This was spoken of as being conducted upon a fair principle; but we told them, nothing compulsory

could be just. Our friend the missionary having left us and returned to his family at Koloa, we found the kind assistance of the British Consul very useful in our transactions with the natives. At the edge of dark, we had all on board, and only waited the land-breeze to waft us from the island. Our pilot 'Sugar-Cane' was now paid off, and all things being settled, we took a final departure, and stretched off a south and by east course; leaving these interesting isles of the ocean, amongst which more than half a year of our time had been expended. The best welfare of the inhabitants of the Sandwich Islands will be an object ever near and dear to my heart, and which, however distantly separated as to the body, my spirit will earnestly crave.

[When on the point of leaving the harbour of Honolulu, a letter was received from the members of the American mission there, expressing much brotherly kindness for D. W. and wishing him Godspeed in his remaining labours. Of this grateful acknowledgment was made; and they separated with mutual desires for each other's preservation and support in the work in which they were engaged.]

CHAPTER XVII.

RAROTONGA—FRIENDLY ISLANDS.

After witnessing the usual variety of changes in the winds and weather, and the thunder-storms to which these latitudes are subject, we were favoured to cross the equator about three o'clock in the morning of the 19th of Seventh Month, in health and safety, and at noon were in latitude forty miles south; longitude by lunar observation 160° west. Having by dint of exertion gained ground, one of the missionary stations on Rarotonga could plainly be discerned to leeward on Second-day afternoon, the 1st of Eighth Month. This was known by the appearance of a large building, which, with some others about it, was white-washed, and had a neat appearance. As the wind still blew strongly against us, we could not get sufficiently near the coast to entice the canoes to come off before the night closed in; so we hovered within a short distance of the island until the next morning, the 2nd of Eighth Month: when, at an early hour, a boat was seen coming from the shore, from the station observed yesterday, which in due time reached the *Henry Freeling*. We were enabled to understand from our visitors, that we were off the station of Charles Pittman the missionary, with whom and with his wife, we became acquainted at the island of Tahiti last year. I sent a note back by the boat to say, we were now permitted to greet them from the very edge of Rarotonga; and only waited information, as to the practicability of our vessel finding a place of safe anchorage. This boat was soon discovered to be again coming off, and on near approach, Charles Pittman himself proved to be on board of her. We had scarcely time to congratulate each other after he had reached the deck, before he became sea-sick from the tossing of our vessel. As he was unable to converse, we concluded to return to the shore with him immediately. As we drew nigh the strand, it became

densely covered with an innumerable host of children, who at once hailed us as their friends: it was with difficulty that we could pass along for them, as these delighted little naked fellows completely choked up the avenue through a grove of bananas, which leads to the mission-house, struggling who should first get hold of our hands; and if but a finger could be laid hold of, it seemed quite to satisfy them: this banana grove was of Charles Pittman's own planting. Soon after reaching the house, the floor was studded over with natives squatted on every side, the elders of the people coming forward to salute us, and welcome us to their island. After some consideration and inquiry had taken place, it was concluded that the people should be generally convened to-morrow morning in that district, and a meeting held at eleven o'clock A.M. After partaking of some simple refreshment, we looked round the village of Gnatagnia, and then prepared to return to our vessel. When leaving her in the morning, we took with us an English union jack, for the purpose of hoisting upon a lofty bamboo, or cocoa-nut tree, as a signal for Captain Keen to stand in as close to the reefs as was prudent on seeing this flag displayed upon the shore, to save the labour of the people in the boat, and to afford us every chance of smooth water. When this flag was put up, we were told that it was the first time the English flag had been planted upon the island of Rarotonga; very peaceable possession had been taken of the island on this occasion at any rate, and one in which a most cordial reception was strongly evinced, in a degree of that love which casteth out fear from every breast, and makes every man a brother.

Eighth Month 3*rd.* — The morning was beautifully fine, but having crept a long distance from the island during the darkness, and the breeze now being very light, our progress shoreward again was very slow. On landing we were met by several hundreds of the natives, a large proportion of them boys; and after remaining some time at the mission-house, we looked into the school for the least scholars: some of whom read to all appearance very readily. In the large school we heard several of the boys and girls read verse after verse alternately in one of the Evangelists; and were informed that fifteen hundred

copies of the four Evangelists had been recently received from England, viâ Tahiti: some of these were read audibly, and we were told correctly. After some further examination by catechising, a hymn was sung; the schools then broke up in an orderly manner, and proceeded towards the meeting-house.

While a silent spectator in the schools, the love of the Divine Master flowed in my heart towards these dear children,—an encouraging and sealing evidence, that strength and ability would not be wanting to proclaim the glad tidings of his gospel, in his time. The house was filled, and held upwards of two thousand people. We remained upon the floor of the building, whilst Charles Pittman read my certificates, and explained to the people the nature of my visit, I believe to the utmost of his power. During this time it was very evident, that if Charles Pittman had been speaking by my side, half of the people at least could not have heard him, and therefore I thought it best to promote his remaining in his pulpit by joining him there. I remained quiet, however, until he had thoroughly finished, and then went up and stood in silence by his side, for a short interval: when it was with me to turn the attention of the gazing islanders to the "God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ;"—that the great object of our thus being permitted to assemble together, might be fully realized, and the blessing which prevailed to the utmost bound of the everlasting hills, might rest upon us. After this, I had largely to declare the things which belong unto their peace, and to turn them to the "Lamb of God which taketh away the sin of the world;"—that they might know Him to be so in blessed reality, by believing in the light of the Holy Spirit, which shineth in every heart, as a light in a dark place; that by taking heed thereunto, they would be made sensible of the darkness of their own hearts. It was for this the Saviour died, that mankind might no longer walk in darkness, but in the light of life; that as sin hath heretofore reigned in us unto death, so now might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life, by Jesus Christ our Lord. It was a solemn season; the power of the Lord reigned over all, and his own works rendered living praises unto Him and the Son of his love.

After the meeting broke up, some time was occupied in noticing the people, who remained in crowds about us.

4*th*.—At this station (Avarua,) we had a fine meeting, more than 2500 persons being present. My certificates were read as usual, and I had largely to publish the glad tidings of the everlasting gospel amongst them, to my own peace.

The meeting held late, and the people were very solid and attentive; my sympathizing and faithful interpreter could not help acknowledging the blessing, with which we had that day been favoured, as a crowning evidence. The people seemed reluctant to separate; and many of them followed us to the dwelling of the absent missionary, where we partook of a repast, which had been kindly prepared for our accommodation. The king, or principal chief, Makea, joined us; he was desirous of making a present of supplies for the vessel; this however was declined, and his kind intention acknowledged with gratitude. This chief's sister once dined on board the *Henry Freeling*, with Pomare the queen of Tahiti, when we were lying in the bay of Papeéte at that island a year ago; and she was mentioned in my Journal of that day, as the sister of the king of Rarotonga. She was at the meeting, and came to me in a very kind and agreeable manner before it commenced, and after it was over; Charles Pittman gave me a pleasing account of her stability of conduct and example. Several questions were put to us on religious subjects through Charles Pittman, by Makea and others who attended; and I had an opportunity of telling them what great things the Lord had done for them, and that the principal work they had to do in return, was to labour in the vineyard of their own hearts, &c. I was favoured to reach the vessel at the edge of dark.

6*th*.—I did not feel clear of the out-station at Aroragne; and found that I must land to-day at Gnatagnia, attend the meeting there to-morrow, and on Second-day go off to the out-station. Every exertion was made to push the *Henry Freeling* within the range of tolerably smooth water; and the natives who had been anxiously watching our motions, on seeing this, launched the boat and put out to sea to meet us. On reaching the missionary dwelling, I told our kind host and hostess, that we were

now come to take up our abode with them in earnest. On explaining the prospect then before me, Charles Pittman expressed much satisfaction at the probability of the Aroragne people being visited. I left directions with Captain Keen, to stand close in with the island once every day if practicable; and when we were ready to embark, the flag should be hoisted by us as before agreed upon. The remaining part of the day was fully occupied among the people, in making trifling purchases and bestowing rewards, &c.

7th. (*First-day.*)—After breakfast this morning, the Bible was laid before me, according to the usual practice of giving preference to the stranger, who at once undertakes to read a chapter, and afterwards to go forward with a prayer. When I had finished reading, we remained in silence. I had a secret hope this circumstance might lead into serious consideration at a future day, as to the practice of Friends on these occasions; and perhaps point out the difference between those whose time is always ready, and others who can only move in the ability given by Him, who said, "without me ye can do nothing." I sometimes feel much for some of the former, from a conviction that they themselves are at seasons brought under a very humiliating sense of being numbered with those who "ask and receive not;" but whilst anxious to be found in the path of my own duty, my desire is to be clothed with the heavenly garment of charity towards others in these matters.

The time of the native meeting now drew nigh, at the thought of which my mind was greatly cast down; and yet I felt a sustaining confidence that my being here was in right ordering, for if my own inclination could have been followed, we should have been this morning out of sight of the island altogether. Charles Pittman might have observed my sunken condition: for previously to setting out for the meeting, he seemed desirous to ascertain whether I should speak to the people or not. I told him this was very uncertain; but from the manner in which this thing had been brought about, which was certainly not in my own will, it was by no means improbable that I might have something to say to them. The house was well filled when we reached it, and Charles

Pittman at once ascended the pulpit, but I remained on the ground floor, as one having no part to take in the matter; and, I trust, in a state something similar to that of passive clay, willing to be any thing or nothing, to do or to suffer in secret with the suffering seed. Charles Pittman went on with the usual services, as if he had little expectation of any interference on my part; but when the second singing was concluded, the way seemed at once to open for my going to him. On my getting into the pulpit, such was my blank condition, that I told him we must proceed slowly; for I should have to look well for the stepping stones to get along with safety. We stood some time in silence together, when my mouth was opened with our blessed Lord's declaration,—"there is joy in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons that need no repentance." Such is the everlasting mercy, and boundless love of God to his creature man, that he willeth not the death of a sinner; but rather that all should repent, forsake the evil of their ways, return unto Him, and live for ever. For this the Saviour came; not to condemn, but to save a guilty world:—Jesus Christ came into the world to save sinners from the wrath to come; that we might have life, and that we might have it more abundantly. He purchased for poor, lost, finite man, the unspeakable gift of the Holy Spirit, by the sacrifice of himself on the blood-stained cross, "the just for the unjust, that he might bring us unto God," &c. For about an hour and a-half, I was drawn forth to plead with these dear people, in the love of the gospel; that they might be reconciled to God, for Christ's sake, for their own soul's sake, and ours also, because of the Truth as it is in Jesus. It was indeed a glorious meeting, and ought to be commemorated with humblest gratitude and praise.

My faithful interpreter was almost overcome with the sense of the working of the Lord's almighty power. When the spring was closed up, he spoke to me in allusion to my having said, on first going into the pulpit, that 'I should have to look well for the stepping-stones to get along with safety,'—saying that he soon found I had got upon good ground, from the feelings he experienced. But the sentence of death was mine; I sat down in nothing-

ness and weakness; the creature was laid in the dust, as one that owed unto his Lord, far more than "five hundred pence" many times multiplied, and who had nothing to pay with:—self-convicted too, and as one to whom all that had been spoken most fully applied.

8*th*.—Rose at the earliest cock-crowing this morning, and prepared to set forward for Aroragne. Notice having been timely given, we found the people prepared to receive us, and the meeting was soon collected, to the number of fifteen hundred persons. Being a stranger on this side the island, my certificates were read as usual at the commencement. I remained upon the floor, with a crowd of natives squatted about me, and having now no one near me, that I had ever seen before, I felt like a stranger indeed. When the time arrived, I went to Charles Pittman, and eventually broke the silence, by reminding the people of Him, who knoweth our down-sitting and up-rising, and understandeth our thoughts afar off; yea, there is not a word in our tongue, but He knoweth it altogether: "all things are naked and open to the eyes of Him, with whom we have to do." "None of us can by any means redeem his brother, or give to God a ransom for him;—our salvation must be wrought out by ourselves, and that with fear and trembling. But sinful and impotent as we are, the means for the accomplishment of this great work are mercifully placed within the reach of all, through the unutterable love of God, in Christ Jesus, our crucified, risen, and glorified Lord. In order to partake of this great and universal salvation, conferred upon mankind by the "God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ," we must come to the experimental knowledge of Him, who is the eternal author of it all. He tasted death for every man; and by the awful sacrifice of himself, not only procured for a guilty world the remission of sins that are past, but the unspeakable gift of the Holy Spirit, &c. The spring of the everlasting gospel flowed freely to this people, and in its authority I was enabled to appeal unto themselves, and make them their own living witnesses to the in-shining of "the light of the glorious gospel of Christ" in their own hearts. It was a memorable season, and I trust will not soon be forgotten. After noticing the people we repaired to a native teacher's

house, and partook of some cooling refreshment, of which we both stood in need. On our return to Gnatagnia, we stopped to examine a new place of worship, sixty feet square, which is being built of coral, or agglomerated sand and shells, and is nearly complete to the roof.

On this island we had the satisfaction to see a great increase of population, the children swarmed about its shores like bees, and I think Charles Pittman said, the schools were attended by 3000 of different ages and both sexes. The houses of the natives are mostly constructed with some degree of uniformity, neatly white-washed, with roads to many of them made of broken shells, and a public road for travelling upon; and the people seem to live generally in a state of enjoyment. The fruit and vegetables usually found upon the isles of the Pacific abound, as the island is like a well-watered hot-bed. The lofty mountains in its centre, obstruct the passage of the clouds, and cause an abundant supply of rain.

9th.—After discharging all our debts, and affording as many supplies to our friends, and for the benefit of the dear children, as we could spare, we took our last meal with Charles and Elizabeth Pittman; we then bade a final adieu to the shores of Rarotonga, and its swarthy tribes.

The *Henry Freeling* anticipated our movement, and stretched in upon the coast, when the boat made its appearance; and we were favoured to get safely on board at half-past three o'clock in the afternoon: and at midnight were at least fifty miles from this interesting and highly-favoured little island.

Our visit to Rarotonga cannot, I think, on various accounts, be soon obliterated from our minds, or pass away as a tale that is told: the retrospect of the highly-favoured seasons, so condescendingly permitted to crown the different assemblies of the people, only brightens the more, as the days are increased which throw the scene of such love and such mercy still further and further behind. Before leaving Rarotonga, I received several letters from some of the most capable scholars in the school at Gnatagnia, which were literally translated to us; one of which I subjoin as a specimen, which will suffice for the whole, as they are nearly in the same

strain. It is from Tekori, a boy of about sixteen years of age.

'This is my speech to you, Daniel Wheeler,—

'Read it, that you may know great is our joy in seeing your face, and in knowing your speech of God's great kindness to you. Attend,—I will relate to you the coming of God's word to us. We were heathens formerly,—we did not know the living God Jehovah. At that time the devil was our god;—we worshipped him, and did that which is agreeable to his will:—that was our condition formerly, Daniel Wheeler. Attend,—then arrived the season in which the word of the great God came to us—even of Jehovah, and the word of God spread among us in that season;—still listen,—God sent his servants to us, to inform us of the true way. Then the light sprung up in the midst of us. The word spoken by Isaiah the prophet was then fulfilled, chap. lx. verse 1. "Arise, shine, for thy light is come, and the glory of the Lord is risen upon thee." Behold, the light of Jehovah came to this land, and the light of Jehovah dawned upon us: then the word of God spread on this land. The children know the word of God. Pittman taught us unweariedly, and in this likewise, behold the love of God to us.

'Our friend and brother, Daniel Wheeler, I think of the kindness of God in conveying you from your land—from Britain. You have been directed by God to this land and that land; you have witnessed his loving kindness,—you have seen what has occurred in the deep,—the mighty power of God. He will not forsake those who put their trust in Him. Friend, when you go to visit this land and that land, we will pray to God, that he may safely conduct you to the land whither you wish to go, and that he may carry you safely to your own land. Friend, now go; we have met,—you have seen our face in Rarotonga, and we have seen your face. Observe, one thing yet remains. When we shall be assembled with the word of God, of the blessed—in that world of joy, the good people of Britain will know those of Rarotonga, and the good people of Rarotonga will know those of Britain; and then will be known the true state of that land, and this land. This is a little speech of compassion toward you: may you be preserved in your voyaging. And

now, may the grace of God be granted to us—even so—Amen.

'From Tekori: that is all I have to say.'

17*th.*—At nine o'clock we were cheered with a sight of the island of Vavau, and immediately stood for the northernmost bluff, with a fresh trade-wind in our favour. We found a sandy bottom, with sixteen fathoms upon it, which, after tumbling about for two months since leaving the roads of Waimea, at the Sandwich Isle Tauai, was accepted with thankfulness. What shall we render unto the Lord Most High, whose goodness and mercy still follow us in the way that we go?—Yea, he delivereth the poor, and him that hath no helper. What shall we say, or what shall we do, but wonder and adore, in humble prostration of soul, the fulness and extent of that love, which no tongue can set forth or declare: it is boundless, as His everlasting mercy,—filling all space, and unfathomable as the ocean we traverse.

Vavau, Eighth Month 18*th.*—At noon left the vessel in quest of the missionary station. In a short time we reached the habitation of John Thomas, the senior missionary, who has been for several years engaged upon these islands. Here we met with a kind and friendly reception, and the same offer of assistance as had been extended to us at other places. We found that the mission belongs exclusively to the Wesleyan Missionary Society; these individuals are the first of its members whom we have met with in the Pacific. I left my certificates with John Thomas for translation.

19*th.*—Notwithstanding the weather was so wet as to confine us on board, yet the deck was crowded with the natives from morning till evening. Small hogs, vegetables, and abundance of shells seem to be the whole of their saleable property. They are a fine manly race of people, of the most perfect form we have yet seen; and having as yet had but little intercourse with foreigners they are not the victims of wretchedness and disease, which the seamen every where introduce. Their skins are clean and well oiled, and in general appearance they are healthy. The length and roughness of their hair, which is uniformly black, gives them rather a wild and ferocious appearance; but they are in reality as gentle

and docile as little children. With the exception of an apron of long wiry grass about the waist, they are mostly naked. Taofaahau, on whom the title of King George has been conferred by the missionaries, is now absent at Lifuka, one of the Haabai Islands. He is spoken of very highly, and declared to be a preacher of the gospel to the people; and the queen, Charlotte, fills the station of class-leader among the female part of the community. It is said, the whole population of the group Haafuluhau, (pronounced Haah-foo-loo-how,) of which Vavau is the largest island; of the Haabai group, of which Lifuka is the most considerable, and a part of Tongataboo, have embraced Christianity; the remainder upon this last island are still called heathens.

20*th*.—Went on shore this evening, principally to inquire at what time I could see the people collected to-morrow morning, my mind having been turned towards a meeting with them. Finding no difficulty in the way, and having the promise of John Thomas to interpret for me, we returned on board.

21*st*. (*First-day.*)—Got ready in good time this morning, and taking the mate and four men in the boat, proceeded to Neiafu. On reaching the meeting-house, it appeared that the native worship had commenced much earlier than usual, to allow of more time for what might succeed it. We remained outside the building, lest our appearance should tend to confuse, until it was finished, when John Thomas came out and took me to his seat. After my certificates were read and explained, I had, after a pause, to turn the people to the great Teacher of all mankind—Christ Jesus; who, when on earth, spoke as never man spoke, and taught as never man taught: the light of whose glorious gospel bringeth salvation to all that believe in and obey it. I had been induced to leave all to bring them the glad tidings of this gospel, which is the power of God unto salvation from sin; that the fulness of this heavenly blessing in all its riches, might be theirs for ever. I was abundantly strengthened by the might of my ever gracious Master, to proclaim to these noble islanders, the grace and truth which came by Him. Under a feeling of great solemnity their attention was riveted, while listening to the endeavours of a way-worn

stranger, to turn them from darkness to the light of Christ in their own hearts, and from the power of Satan unto God; whose mercy endureth for ever.

23*rd.*—This morning John Hobbs arrived in good time, bringing with him two canoes with six natives, who were to paddle the *Henry Freeling's* long boat to Feletoa for the purpose of conveying us to a meeting there. We were late in reaching our destination, owing to a strong current setting against the boat. John Thomas was preaching to the people when we arrived, and when he had finished we went into the meeting, and sat down. When John Thomas had finished his explanation of my certificate, I stood up in great weakness and fear, and solemn silence prevailed over the assembly, which was large. I had to declare unto them the truth as it is in Jesus, even in Him who in due time died for all that all might live;—the same blessed Jesus, who came on earth in the greatness of his love and strength, to seek and to save that which was lost;—who once taught the people in a body of flesh, but now teaches all mankind by His Holy Spirit of grace, and is the Saviour of all that believe,—the life and light of men;—mighty to save the soul from sin, and lead it up to God the Father. I seemed to have little or nothing before me but the supply of the moment, from the time of standing up to the end. After dining and spending some time in the family of John Hobbs, we returned to the boat which was left about a mile off.

31*st.*—In the afternoon, some steps were taken towards prosecuting a visit to one of the smaller islands, which the weather had prevented our attempting last Fifth-day. We found to-day, that John Thomas had ascertained from some of the most intelligent natives, that the tide would flow to-morrow, sufficiently early to allow us to pass over the flats and reach the meeting in seasonable time: we were also informed that general notice had been given to the people of two other stations, viz., Tanea and Eueiki, to assemble at the central station of the three, called Haalaufuli, where the meeting is appointed to be held.

Ninth Month 1*st.*—About ten o'clock A. M., we landed again on the island of Vavau, after a very circuitous passage, but the only one by which the extremity of this

island can be got at from Neiafu. We were soon met by the principal chief, Daniel Afu, and several of his people, who welcomed us to their neighbourhood; and after spending a short time at the chief's house, the meeting was assembled by the sound of heavy strokes upon a hollow piece of wood, a sort of native drum, which may be heard at a great distance. The people were soon collected, and after John Thomas had opened the meeting in the usual way, and read one of my certificates, all became silent. I had largely to declare amongst them the "unsearchable riches of Christ," the beloved Son of God, and Saviour of men; whom all men are commanded to hear: whose Holy Spirit speaketh in every heart, to bring us to repentance and amendment of life in the fear of God. To this heavenly Teacher I was concerned to turn them, and to exhort them in the love of the gospel to "believe in the Lord Jesus Christ and be saved;" to believe in the power of His Holy Spirit in their hearts, and wait for it there: we were favoured with a solemnity, which nothing short of this irresistible power can produce. Many of the people came to us in a loving manner, when the meeting broke up, and hung about while we remained in the neighbourhood.

After meeting we partook of some refreshment at the chief's house, in true native style upon the floor on mats, with the milk of the cocoa-nut as a beverage, and the pulpy shoots of the banana bruised between the fingers, to answer the purpose of washing the hands; some native cloth from the dress of the chiefess served for a towel: this was found a very needful and agreeable part of the entertainment, having had literally to tear the food to pieces with our fingers. When our repast was finished, we took leave of the chief and his family and others present, and returned to the sea-side, and were safely paddled back again to the sandy bay near Neiafu.

3rd.—Yesterday, the subject of a meeting with the seamen rested upon me. In the afternoon a sufficient number of written notices were prepared and distributed amongst the shipping, leaving the result to Him who knoweth all things; desiring that His great name alone may be exalted, and the gospel of the heavenly kingdom may be proclaimed in the heart of man to the Saviour's praise.

4*th*. (*First-day.*)—This morning much cast down and a poor creature, but as one bound to the work of the dear Master; from which I dared not hold back, however human nature might be ready to shrink, as the hour of trial approached. Landed in good time, and proceeded to the meeting-house at Neiafu. I felt depressed from a sense of something like a spirit of opposition being present; but was soon comforted by an evidence which I could not mistake, of that power being nigh to strengthen the inner man, the all-sufficiency of which to sustain in time of trouble I have so often witnessed. I had to sit long in silence, but eventually stood up with those instructive expressions of our Lord to his disciples,—"Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples."—"He that abideth in me and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit; for without me, ye can do nothing." From this I was enabled to show, that without the blessed influence of the Holy Spirit of the Son, we can do nothing,—much less be capable of bearing that fruit, by which the holy Father is glorified; and the impossibility of performing that worship which only is acceptable in the sight of Him, "who is a Spirit," without the help of the Holy Spirit: that therefore it is indispensable, in order to the performance of true spiritual worship, to wait in reverential silence for a renewal of that strength, which is mighty through God to the casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God,—to the "bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ,—even to the obedience of the Spirit of Truth in our hearts, without which none can worship God in Spirit and in truth. It is this influence which can alone prepare our hearts to worship, praise, and glorify the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ; who is a Spirit, and must be worshipped in Spirit and in truth. I had to set forth the admirable adaptation of the glorious gospel dispensation to the condition of man the world over, and the blessed superiority of true spiritual worship in the inner temple of the heart, over that which is left in the outer court to be trodden under foot. My mind was particularly turned towards those "that go down to the sea in ships, that do business in great waters,—that see the

works of the Lord, and his wonders in the deep." Although such may often feel excluded from their fellow-men, shut out from every opportunity of religious instruction, and destitute of the 'means of grace;' this is evidently not the case, but a delusion of the great enemy of God and man; although it may be often held out by those who have a zeal for God, but not according to knowledge, of whom the great apostle speaks. For notwithstanding it is the lot of seafaring men to spend their days in roving upon the mighty ocean, yet the only true and blessed means of grace are still within their reach,—even that grace and truth which came by Jesus Christ, which hath appeared unto all men, and teacheth all men that believe in it. No class of men have a better opportunity of attending upon the means of salvation; and although their allotment may be thought solitary, yet they are saved from many temptations, and out of the reach of the contaminating example of wicked men, to which those on shore are daily exposed. They have less to draw their attention aside from the great work, and more time to work out their souls' salvation, than many of their fellow mortals:—their nightly watches may be turned to everlasting account, in waiting upon the Lord, in looking for the blessed hope and glorious appearing of the great God and Saviour, by His Holy Spirit of grace. No men have greater need to acquaint themselves with God and be at peace; they are in jeopardy every hour, which plainly bespeaks the necessity of their being prepared to meet their God, as with their lives in their hands. The Lord most High, in his infinite goodness and mercy, hath vouchsafed a day of visitation to all men, for the salvation of all men; and it is this visitation that preserveth the life of the spirit in man. "Thy visitation," said Job, "hath preserved my spirit." The meeting held long, but proved a searching solemn season; and although at first a gloom seemed to hang over it, eventually every cloud, or feeling of this kind, was scattered by that power, whom winds and waves obey; and it ended well. A considerable number of seamen from the different ships with their captains attended, also the whole of the missionary families here, and one from Feletoa, with many of the natives, and

some New Zealanders connected with the shipping, who understand English pretty well.

8*th*.—We landed at Otea, and proceeded towards the other side of the island where the meeting was to be held. In crossing the sandy beaches, two of which were in our route, exposed to the full blaze of the sun nearly at noon, the heat and glare of light were almost insupportable, and the want of air when passing through the bush was still more oppressive. We stayed a short time at the house of the chief, whose name is Lazarus, a steady going man among the people; and when cooled a little, proceeded to the meeting, where the natives were assembled in readiness. Exclusive of the pulpit, there did not appear to be a seat in the whole neighbourhood, except on the floor; some of the people at last brought part of an old canoe into the building, for Charles and myself to sit upon. I felt in a very low and feeble condition, both as to body and mind; but when my certificates were read, I stood up with a salutation of love in my heart to the people; which having expressed, I had to turn their attention to Him, "Who seeth not as man seeth," but who is a Spirit, and looketh on the heart. My heart was greatly enlarged towards the people; and they listened with apparent attention: but there was a feeling of deadness over the meeting, greater than we had yet witnessed on these islands. After remaining some time at the house of the chief to refresh and rest, we again crossed the island, and resumed our station in the boat: we proceeded round the northern part of the island, and visited a splendid cavern, into which we rowed with the boat, having a canoe to lead the way, conducted by Noah, one of the chiefs of Otea, and two chosen natives also well acquainted with the position and entrance of this wonderful place. The great height of the vaulted arches above our heads, which are almost of gothic shape, from which are suspended a variety of huge spiral masses of ponderous weight, apparently ready to fall,—the amazing depth and clearness of the water under us, together with the dark and deep recesses, which could not be explored for want of a light, exhibited a sublime and magnificent spectacle and a specimen of those great and marvellous

works, incomprehensible to mortal man. Fish of large size swam about beneath us, without the least appearance of being disturbed by the boat, so great was the depth of water between us and them. In knocking off some of the spiral crags within our reach to bring away with us, the echo produced was alarming, and as if the whole roof was in danger of falling upon us.

9*th*.—King George having arrived from Lifuka, one of the Haabai Islands, this morning paid us a visit: a Saul-like man in truth, being higher than the rest of the people perhaps by the head and shoulders; he was naked, with the exception of some native cloth round his waist. His moral character is highly spoken of, and the great prosperity of the Christian profession here, is said to be owing to his promptness in the due observance of its rites and ordinances: the laws are said to be good, and he insists upon their being executed with rigour.

11*th*. *(First-day.)*—Spent a peaceful day on board, collected the crew both fore and afternoon for devotional purposes:—none of them seemed disposed to attend the meeting on shore.

13*th*.—This morning, John Thomas came on board at eight o'clock; when we immediately proceeded down the harbour in the usual way, and landed on the western coast of Vavau. A meeting was to be held at Hihifo, about a mile from the landing-place; whither we went, and met with the chief Solomon, at his own habitation; and as soon as the people were collected, repaired to the meeting-place. The places of worship at the stations distant from Neiafu are like large sheds, standing upon props, and open on both sides; but the ends are made tolerably close with coarse matting. As there was no seat in the meeting, I remained near John Thomas, who occupied a considerable time in the native language, before reading my certificates. When he had finished we stood by each other in silence, and the people seemed unsettled, as if they did not know what to expect next, or to whom they should hearken, first looking upon one of us, and then upon the other; until it was with me to caution them against a dependence upon the creature, but to endeavour to fix the attention of their minds upon the Creator, who is a Spirit and knoweth all things. The

darkness hideth not from Him,—the darkness and the light are both alike to Him, before whom the night shineth as the day. My desire was, that nothing might be permitted to beguile them from the simplicity of the gospel of Christ,—that they might not rest satisfied with a mere hearsay knowledge of his name, as a Saviour, but come to the knowledge of his Holy Spirit in themselves, and know for themselves His gospel to be the power of God unto salvation. Although I had full opportunity to clear myself, yet so great was the stream of love that flowed towards the people of Hihifo, that after the meeting was over, I found no relief: the desire of my heart was as strong as ever, that they might not be beguiled by lifeless forms and shadows, from the simplicity that is in Christ, the living and eternal substance. After spending some time with Solomon, the chief, who spread a table plentifully for our refreshment, according to native custom, we repaired to the boat, and proceeded forthwith to the *Henry Freeling*.

19*th*.—This evening it seemed best to arrange to attend a native meeting at Matika, a few miles from hence; the greater part of which distance can be performed by boat.

20*th*.—The weather apparently likely to answer for our going to Matika; and John Hobbs having arrived with a suitable crew of natives, by nine o'clock we proceeded on our way. Having now an interpreter, to whose abilities and qualifications in the native language I was a stranger, it seemed like venturing upon untried ground. I soon found that I had no cause to fear on this head, but rather to dread the quickness with which he at once comprehended the drift of what I had to say, and interpreted it to the people; however, although every sentence as soon as uttered, was rapidly conveyed to them without hesitation on his part, yet with thankfulness I can say, that I never felt less difficulty in getting on. I had to caution them particularly, not to be deceived in looking without for that which is only to be found within; that so they might come to the knowledge of Christ, the light of whose Holy Spirit shineth in every heart; and that they might believe in it to the saving of the soul,—that so Christ may dwell richly in their hearts by faith, that He

might be theirs, and they might be His, in His Father's kingdom for ever. It was a comfortable meeting, and ended well. Great is my desire for these people, that their hearts may be directed to the love of God, and to the patient waiting for Christ. How great the responsibility of those, who take upon themselves to introduce the religion of Jesus amongst a simple-hearted people, lest its beautiful simplicity be hid from them, by forms and shadows of man's invention!

22*nd.*—Although many natives were on board, we were enabled to set aside our bartering, and sit down to wait upon the Lord, but it required firm struggling to get into quiet introversion of mind; towards the end a little of that strength was witnessed, by which only the foes of a man's house can be cast out, and himself left in peaceable possession.

24*th.*—Both yesterday and to-day, with the exception of taking the needful exercise on shore, as the sun declined, we were engaged on board getting things into train, with the prospect of shortly sailing for the Haabai group of Tonga isles. Since it has come to my knowledge that the strength of these islands is to be assembled at Lifuka with king George of Vavau, and Josiah (Tubou), the king of Tongataboo, I have not seen the way open for me to move in any direction but to Lifuka; and the more I have dwelt upon this subject, the more it appears to be the right track for me to pursue.

26*th.*—Yesterday *(First-day,)* spent the day on board. Collected the sailors twice in the course of the day for devotional purposes.

28*th.*—John Hobbs called on board to-day, with whom an arrangement was made to visit a native meeting to-morrow afternoon, should the weather permit us to proceed and the people to collect. We learn from John Hobbs that the shock of the earthquake last evening, was the most severe he had known since his coming to these islands: it was felt on board the American ship *Russel*, quite as much as on board the *Henry Freeling*.

29*th.*—In our solitary sitting this forenoon, we were favoured to witness a degree of strength sufficient for the day, to wrestle for the blessing. Soon after three o'clock John Hobbs and ourselves set forward in our own boat, with

six able natives to paddle; on account of the falling tide we landed at a place much more distant from the meeting to which we were going, than would otherwise have been necessary.

The heat of the afternoon made the extra walking very fatiguing; and the current of air to which I was afterwards exposed, occasioned considerable pain in my head: but such was the engagement of my mind, that this bodily annoyance was little regarded. After resting awhile at a house built for the special purpose of accommodating the teachers, the meeting commenced; and although I was as an emptied vessel, while the translation of my certificates was read, yet shortly after the reading concluded, my mouth was opened to turn the attention of the people to that Almighty power, which "is not far from every one of us," dwelling in our hearts by his Holy Spirit, except we be reprobates; "in whom we live and move and have our being." He that abideth of old, with whom a thousand years are but as one day, and one day as a thousand years,—from everlasting to everlasting, —He is God, and changeth not. My desire for this people was, that they might become wise in heart, by seeking after that knowledge which is life eternal, through the operation of the Holy Spirit, which shines in every heart; that they might inherit glory, and be numbered among those that shall shine as the brightness of the firmament, and with them that turn many to righteousness. The gospel of the everlasting kingdom was freely preached to these dear people: it was a memorable season, and yielded peaceful relief to my mind. We reached our vessel soon after dark. What, indeed, can we render unto the Lord for all this! being nothing ourselves, and possessing nothing, but what we have received from Him, the God of love and praise.

Tenth Month 1*st.*—Yesterday engaged on board most of the day, making ready for sailing for the Haabai. My attention has been drawn at times, in the course of yesterday and to-day, towards again attending the native meeting at Neiafu to-morrow; and John Thomas and Stephen Rabone calling on board this afternoon, afforded me an opportunity of mentioning the subject. John Thomas, kindly agreed at once to make way for it, and offered his

assistance as interpreter. Although so often a partaker of heavenly help and goodness, I am still imploring more; being increasingly sensible of the want of it, when looking towards this meeting; that the name of the Lord Jesus may be exalted, to the glory of God the Father.

Having now every prospect of bending our course towards Lifuka, I deemed it expedient to make an offer to convey as many of the missionary families as inclined to go to the congress; telling John Thomas, that if they were willing to put up with the want of accommodations to which they would be subjected in our small vessel, the whole of them might go with us.

The shock of another earthquake was felt on the night of the 29th ultimo.*

2*nd.* *(First-day.)*—This morning I felt a very poor creature, both in body and mind; but "knowing in whom I have believed," and unto whom "all power in heaven and earth is given," I prepared to attend the native meeting at Neiafu. We reached the mission-house before the bell rung: and accompanied John Thomas to the meeting in due time. I sat for some time in a pew constructed for the missionaries; and when John Thomas had finished speaking, I went and stood in front of the people, upon the base on which the pulpit is erected. John Thomas then came down to me, and a general silence prevailed over the assembly, which was large, until broken by myself with the words;—"Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong." The burden which rested upon my mind was, that these people might become the Lord's people, formed for himself, to show forth his praise,—that they might become his children, and be taught of Him; for all the sons and daughters of men, which form His church, are taught of the Lord himself: in righteousness they are established, and great shall be their peace.—That they might indeed be sheep of the one fold, and of the one great and heavenly Shepherd, hear his voice, be known of him, and follow him: and thus be enabled individually to say, from blessed experience, "The Lord is my shepherd; I shall not want. He maketh

* This was the fifth earthquake which had occurred during their stay in Port Refuge.

me to lie down in green pastures; he leadeth me beside the still waters. He restoreth my soul; he leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for His name's sake." But the sheep must first learn to know the voice of the great Shepherd, when they hear it, from the voice of a stranger; that so they may follow him with safety whithersoever he leadeth: those that are the sheep of his fold know him, and are known of him. "My sheep," said Christ, "hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: and I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand: My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand." Thus, the security and blessedness of the Lord's children, which compose his church, are set forth by its holy Head, the Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep: and there is no other way for any of us to become of this happy number, but that of sitting under the teaching of His Holy Spirit, to learn of Him, to know his voice, and be known of Him, and be his sheep, and follow Him. He will teach us humility, meekness, and lowliness of heart. Such are formed for himself, do show forth His praise, and glorify Him before men, by producing the fruit of the Spirit in the sight of those around them; openly declaring by life and conversation, that the gospel of Christ is the power of God unto salvation, even to those who beforetime were in darkness, hateful and hating one another. I was largely opened among them; and if it was possible to recapitulate all that was uttered, words would still fall short, and fail to describe the heart-tendering solemnity which crowned the meeting. Towards the conclusion when about saying farewell to these dear people, as one never to see their faces again, that Almighty power which alone can soften the heart was eminently conspicuous; tears could not be restrained, but silently and undisguisedly rolled down the swarthy cheeks of the sons and daughters of this isle of the ocean.

3*rd*.—Early in the morning the *Henry Freeling* unmoored, and prepared for sailing: by twelve o'clock the whole of the missionary families, with their servants and luggage being on board, we left the well-sheltered harbour of Port Refuge; and retracing our course through the

maze of islands into the open ocean, stretched away from the shore of Vavau. A large number of the natives attended to the last, and hung round the sides of our vessel until compelled to let go their hold, evincing sincere regret at her departure. Our passengers amounted in all to eighteen persons, besides nine domestics. We had also William Bunubùnu, nephew of the late Finau the conqueror of these islands in former days, selected by King George, as our pilot for the Haabai group.

4*th*.—By ten o'clock, A. M., the island of Toofoa was fairly opened, and the action of the volcano at the north end plainly to be seen, vomiting clouds of smoke into the atmosphere, which occasionally burst forth with increased strength. On Fourth-day the 5th instant, we were favoured safely to anchor off the island of Lifuka, abreast of the settlement of Mua, in only three and a half fathoms water. Soon after we had anchored, Charles Tucker, the resident missionary at this place came off, bringing with him James Watkin, who had arrived the preceding day from his station on the island of Tongataboo. A double canoe was procured, which took the whole of our passengers and luggage at once to the shore: they were safely landed by eleven o'clock, to their great relief. The natives soon began to visit us, well pleased to see a vessel at anchor off the island, as it is but seldom that such a circumstance occurs.

CHAPTER XVIII.

FRIENDLY ISLANDS CONTINUED—NEW ZEALAND.

Tenth Month 7th.—In the afternoon we visited the mission-house by invitation. While there, it was with me to propose having an opportunity afforded of seeing the people, when collected at their morning meeting next First-day. On inquiring about some one to interpret what I might have to say to the people, James Watkin the missionary then present from Tongataboo, was proposed to undertake that part of the work, to which he kindly and readily assented. May the Lord be graciously pleased to magnify his power, and cause this stranger and myself to be faithful to Him, in performing each his office; so that, "that life and immortality" which "are brought to light by the glorious gospel," may be declared to the natives of Lifuka, and others assembled with them, to our Maker's praise.

8th.—It is probable that the meeting to-morrow will be very large, as the inhabitants from the different islands which compose the Haabai group, are now assembled at this place, besides a vast number from the Haafuluhau group, and Tongataboo. Oh! that the Master of assemblies may be there. To Him, who only knoweth my motive for coming amongst them, I commend them and myself; humbly praying for help in the needful time, lest the cause of truth and righteousness should suffer in such feeble hands.

9th. (First-day.)—Proceeded towards the shore at an early hour. We were met on landing by a swarm of young natives, who appeared to be on the look out for us. In half an hour the first bell rung to assemble the people: this bell might have been spared, as the large meeting-house was filled, and a multitude still outside, when we passed by on our way from the boat to the mission-house: another extensive building was also filled, not far from

the largest. The natives were indeed gathered together to an extent, which we have not before witnessed in the Friendly Islands.

James Watkin kindly conducted me through the concourse of people, into an enclosed place in front of the pulpit on a level with the floor: here I remained, until the interval arrived for me to take a station by the side of my interpreter, to be in readiness to minister to the people, as way should open. I felt no hesitation in going up into the pulpit, believing that even when the most advantageous position was chosen, but a small portion of the people in comparison with the whole collected about the house, would distinctly hear what was said; these buildings are open at the side, a circumstance which the nature of the climate requires, and which is a special advantage at these times, as before has been witnessed by us at Vavau. A general stillness now prevailed over this large assembly, which I thought might be occasioned in the first place, by the novelty of two persons appearing in the pulpit, both standing, and both silent. It was not long however before I had to turn their attention to Him, unto whom the cattle on a thousand hills belong; before whom, the secret thoughts of every heart are laid open. He seeth us as we really are, born in sin, and laden with iniquity, helpless, and utterly unable of ourselves to do anything for ourselves; for, as men and mortals, we possess nothing, and are as nothing; and yet such is the love of God even to a guilty world, that of the fulness of His Son Christ Jesus the Lord, "have we all received, and grace for grace."—"God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life." Who among us can contemplate the wondrous mercy and unutterable love, wherewith God so loved the world, without feeling a desire to pour forth a grateful acknowledgment of "thanks be unto God for his unspeakable gift;"—even the gift of His Son Jesus Christ, by whom came that grace which hath appeared unto all men; by which grace alone are we saved from sin and from the wrath to come, through faith, and that not of ourselves; for we have nothing, and are only sinners. It is through faith which cometh from the Son of God, who

loved us, and gave himself for us; who is also "the author and finisher" of that one true faith, which worketh by love, and purifieth the hearts of those who believe in its saving, cleansing power; which giveth the victory over the evil propensities of fallen nature, and over every temptation of the devil.

The word of the Truth of the gospel flowed freely to these dear people; for whom my desire was, that they might not rest satisfied with making an empty profession of religion, but "believe in the Lord Jesus Christ, and be saved." Although at the close of the meeting I felt as if my strength was renewed for the work, I should, without such sustaining help, have been dismayed at the burden which still rested upon my mind. After the meeting broke up many of the people flocked about us; amongst others, I shook hands with an aged female of rank, considered by the people higher than their king: king George himself was one of those who helped to carry her on their shoulders—she being unable to walk any considerable distance. Her placid countenance, and manner altogether, bespoke that she had good-will in her heart towards us; and the remembrance of the interview, though short, always brings with it a feeling of peaceful tranquillity to my mind.

13*th.*—At two o'clock P.M. Charles Tucker, the resident missionary at Lifuka, and his wife, accompanied king George and his wife Charlotte on board to dinner. On taking our seats at the table, I told Charles Tucker that it was *our* practice to endeavour to feel a grateful tribute arise in our hearts to Him, from whom all our blessings come; *they* were of course left at liberty: when Charles Tucker called upon the king to ask a blessing, which he did in a serious manner. The parties were greatly amused with a set of William Darton's Scripture views, &c.; and I believe were pleased with their visit. We landed towards evening, and walked to the other side of the island for exercise; this part is wholly enclosed by a coral reef, which enables the people to procure fish in almost any weather. When looking towards visiting Lifuka, I thought as the principal part of the Tongataboo people, with their ruler, would be assembled here, that I might not have to proceed to the latter island; but I do not

find that this will be sanction enough for me to stay away from it, as it has dwelt much upon my mind for several days past; I therefore believe it safest for me to go thither, however opposed to my own inclination: if the Lord's presence does but go with me, it is enough; for in His presence only there is life, and at His right hand durable riches and righteousness, yea pleasures for evermore. The desire and prayer of my heart, and I believe it may be added, my greatest delight also, is to be found labouring to exalt his great and adorable name, and to promote the extension of the blessed Saviour's kingdom in the hearts of mankind. On returning to the boat in the evening, several of the missionaries were upon the beach, when I told James Watkin that I could not pass by Tongataboo, offering him a passage with us to his family at Nukualofa. Fearing to let the members of the mission separate without requesting a select opportunity with them, I told them that I should like us to have an hour or so together, in the presence of the Most High, before they separated; this proposal was accepted with openness, and every thing made to give way for bringing it about: to-morrow evening at six or seven o'clock was mentioned as the probable time for our meeting together.

14*th*.—Landed in the afternoon, and drank tea at the mission-house. About the time agreed upon, the whole of the families, except the wife and young children of John Hobbs, (whose numerous family could not be left alone,) assembled in a large room in Charles Tucker's house, and sat down together in silence. I endeavoured to keep my mind staid in humble dependence upon Him, who commands the morning, and causeth the day-spring to know his place; and after dwelling a considerable time in silence, it was with me to bow the knee in supplication unto Him, who inhabiteth the praises of eternity, and "covereth himself with light as with a garment;"—and to ask in the name of our Redeemer, that His life-giving presence might be near on the occasion, to subdue in us every thing that stands opposed to His righteous principle of light, life, and love;—that His power alone may rule, and preserve our hearts, &c. After sitting down again, a quiet season was vouchsafed, though a further time of silence was to be passed. There seemed much to

travail under before the way was fairly opened for me, to declare the indispensable necessity for each of us to know for ourselves the will of God, seeing that Christ has said, —"not every one that saith, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven." That before we are in a state to be entrusted with the knowledge of the Divine will, the will of the creature must be laid low, and subjected to the will of the great Creator; our bodies must become living sacrifices, holy, acceptable to God; we must be altogether transformed, and our minds renewed by the power of the Spirit of the Lord Jesus, believed in, and operating in us, "that we may prove what is that good and acceptable, and perfect will of God," &c.

It was a solid and solemn season, the power of Truth was over all. Before leaving the shore, I mentioned the probability of my again attending a meeting of the natives on the following First-day morning, to which no difficulty seemed likely to present.

16*th*. *(First-day.)*—This morning went to Charles Tucker's house, to wait until the natives were collected together. On the way was much gratified to learn, that it was concluded to dispense with many of the exercises usual at their meetings on First-days. This circumstance had come about without my knowledge, although I had before-time mentioned, that the meetings lasted longer than the people were able to bear; being densely stowed upon the floor, almost without a circulation of air, in a tropical climate. After I had taken my station by the side of James Watkin, a general silence prevailed over the multitude assembled; and in due time my mouth was opened to revive in their hearing, that—"Whoso is wise, and will observe these things, even they shall understand the loving-kindness of the Lord." But the first thing to be done in order to partake of the Lord's loving-kindness, which is better than life, is to believe in the Lord Jesus Christ; without this, none can behold his wonderful works, nor praise Him, for his great goodness to the children of men. When the Saviour of the world was on earth, and dwelt among the sons of men, he did not many mighty works in some places, because of the unbelief of the people; and it is the same at this day. There is no

way unto God the Father, but by the Son; and we can never know the Son, to be "the way, the truth, and the life," unless we believe in His power to save to the uttermost, all those that are willing to come unto God by him.—"For he that cometh to God, must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him." Without faith it is impossible to please him: but how great is his goodness to the humble believer that feareth him,—to them that wait for him,—to the soul that seeketh him. Yea, eternal life is the reward of all those, who by patient continuance in well-doing, thus seek the Lord with believing hearts. While tribulation, anguish, indignation and wrath, will be the portion of unbelievers, and of those who are contentious; who disregard the shinings of the true light that lighteth every man that cometh into the world, who obey not the truth, or the manifestations of the Spirit of truth, which convinceth of sin. My heart was enlarged, and the way fairly opened before me, to proclaim amongst the people the truth as it is in Jesus; and to tell them that salvation was nigh unto them that day:—it depended upon themselves,—it remained with themselves,—to "believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and be saved." Not merely to believe that he came in the flesh, and died for the sins of the whole world; but to believe in the coming of his Holy Spirit into their hearts, to purge away their sins, and save them from the wrath to come, while the day of their visitation is mercifully lengthened out. In the same love which brought me among them, I bade them all an affectionate farewell in the Lord.

Many of them with whom we were personally acquainted, flocked round us to shake hands, amongst others, the king and his principal chiefs. And now believing myself clear of the island, we paid a short and final visit to the mission-house, and then returned to the vessel, having no other prospect before me, but that of sailing in the morning towards Tongataboo.

[Before leaving Lifuka, letters were addressed to D. W. by the Wesleyan missionaries resident in the Friendly Islands; expressing their Christian regard, and the comfort they had felt in his labours amongst their people.]

17*th.*—Unmoored at the earliest dawn of day. Soon after we were ready, our passenger James Watkin came on board, with the whole body of missionaries then at Lifuka. Their stay was necessarily short indeed, scarcely longer than while they delivered up their letters and parcels, for not a few of their friends and connexions in Sydney and England. On their departure the anchor was weighed, and we immediately proceeded towards the opening in the reef; making all sail, if possible, to clear the principal dangers of the Haabai group, before nightfall.

19*th.*—By two o'clock we were abreast of the settlement of Nukulofa, and were favoured to anchor safely in fourteen fathoms water. Soon after a canoe arrived, and carried off our agreeable passenger and companion, James Watkin, whose wife could be seen on the shore waiting for her husband.

We find that a large portion of the inhabitants of Tongataboo still retain their heathenish practices, and hitherto could never be prevailed upon to cast away their idols. They keep those who have embraced Christianity in constant alarm, and cause them to keep up a strict watch, and to live within strongly fortified places, as in a state of actual warfare.

20*th.*—At one o'clock P.M., landed for the first time at the settlement of Nukulofa; but the tide being low, we were compelled to submit to being carried over a part of the reef, the water being too shallow to float our boat. James Watkin, with two children, was on the beach, ready to conduct us to his house; and we spent an agreeable afternoon with his family. In the course of the time we were there, Abraham, a brother of Josiah Tubou the king, came in to see us:—he seems a serious steady man, from forty to fifty years of age, and is considered a religious character. The settlement of Nukulofa is surrounded by tall trees, so thickly planted, that a man cannot pass between them, having several sally-ports or entrance gates, which are secured at night in a substantial manner. Outside this wall of trees, which have rails connected with them, is a very deep trench, the coral taken out of which forms an additional barrier of defence outside the trees, and renders the approach almost in-

accessible. It was pleasant to find that the missionaries have lived latterly entirely outside of these fortifications, without any defence beyond a fence of slender cane-work.

21*st*.—Landed in the afternoon and made our way to the mission-house, taking with us a variety of drugs, and numerous articles of clothing for children, for the use of James Watkin's family, with a quantity of dresses suitable for the native children. It is a great privilege, through the kindness of my dear friends in England, to be able to administer, in some degree, to the wants and comforts of those to whom I am most certainly very greatly indebted; and without whose kind and brotherly assistance, my mouth, in most instances, must have been closed, as regards declaring the word of life in the different islands.

23*rd*.—On going to the meeting we found the house quite filled, with many standing and squatting outside, and others coming towards it. My truly kind and faithful interpreter, James Watkin, did every thing in his power to open the way clearly for me, by explaining the translation of the Morning Meeting's certificate, which he read. The reading was succeeded by a time of silence, until I stood up, and was strengthened to express the desire of my heart, that they might all come to the knowledge of the truth as it is in Jesus, and be saved, &c. It was a precious meeting: the people sat as if afraid to move,—such was the solemnity that prevailed over us. Power belongeth unto God; and the praise and glory are his for ever. Remained on board in the afternoon with our own people.

26*th*.—This morning the fleet from Lifuka made its appearance, consisting of seventeen large double canoes. The first which reached Nukulofa had on board Josiah Tubou and king George, (alias Taufaahau), the kings of Haabai and Tongataboo. We afterwards, in company with James Watkin, attended the king's kava party, assembled in the neighbourhood to welcome the arrival of the different parties from Lifuka, who had been to attend the general congress.

27*th*.—Before eight o'clock A. M., James Watkin came on board, bringing with him five natives, to accompany us in an attempt to procure an interview with a body of the heathen, residing at the settlement of Mua, in a

fortified position. We left the vessel forthwith, and proceeded towards the lagoon, at the entrance of which a bay of islands in miniature is formed. At eleven o'clock, we were abreast of the settlement; but the boat grounding upon a sand-bank, at a considerable distance from the shore, one of the natives, Isaackee, waded to the landing place, where a number of the people were collected on seeing the boat approach their territory. On being informed by Isaackee who we were, and what the object of our visit, they denied that the chief was at home. Our man returned to us and said the chief was not at home, and that Charles and myself might land, but not the missionary. Appearances on the shore were not very inviting, as the war-clubs were plainly seen in the hands of some of the natives. James Watkin advised us not to land. I was not satisfied, however, without making some further attempt to get among them, and Isaackee was dispatched again, to say, that our coming on shore would be useless, without the missionary to interpret. He did not at all hesitate to go; but, apprehending some mischief might arise, said, on leaving us, 'if they kill me, it will be nothing.' After a considerable parley had taken place, our man returned again, and said, that 'we might all come on shore;' but now James Watkin refused to accompany us, as the objection had appeared to be against him only. I felt a little disappointed, but concluded to land, at all events, without further debate. Charles and myself were then conveyed to the shore by our native boat's crew; and although a considerable number of these people immediately flocked about us, I had not the least apprehension of danger, for the fear of man was cast out. We ascertained afterwards that at least twenty muskets were pointed upon us, from behind a strong wooden fence, in readiness, had any affray taken place. We had in our hands only an umbrella each. We proceeded towards the settlement, under an escort of the people, until we had passed through the gates of the stronghold, and at length reached the habitation of the chief. We found him at home, and with a number of his people squatted ready upon the floor, waiting our arrival. The chief, perceiving me at a loss to distinguish him from the rest, moved aside to the log

of an old tree, upon which we both sat down together: this, I thought, was correct on my part, from the signs that he made to me. He could talk a few words of English; but could understand little that I said. I made him understand that they had a shipwrecked sailor among them, of whom I had heard previously, and made signs for him to be fetched; but he did not make his appearance, and was probably ashamed of being seen by his countrymen. The chief was evidently desirous of asking questions; but I signified that without the missionary we could do nothing. Some people then had orders to go for James Watkin, who arrived in less than half an hour. During this interval the number of people increased, and a root of the kava plant was laid at my feet, as a token of good-will towards me. An offer of some of the liquor was then tendered, which I accepted, to show that I had nothing but good-will towards them. Some persons were then appointed to chew the root, and prepare this odious drink, which, in due time, was handed to me. I drank some of it before them, and handed the remainder to one of the people, which I had learned was a usual practice in such cases. James Watkin now entered into conversation with the chief, and believing that things were going on smoothly, I proposed that the translation of my certificate from the Morning Meeting should be read. It was patiently and attentively heard to the end, with ample explanation to elucidate the cause of my coming among them. I had then to tell them, that the God whom I serve is a God of love and mercy, and willeth not the death of a sinner, but rather that all men every where should repent, return unto Him and live; and that such is the love of God to his creature man, that he gave His only begotten Son to save them from their sins, "that whosoever believeth on Him should not perish, but have everlasting life." That I was not satisfied to leave their island without telling them of the good things which God hath prepared for those that love him: I declared that salvation was come nigh unto them,—yea, placed within their reach, and that by Jesus Christ;—He is Lord of all; through the shedding of whose precious blood the gift of the Holy Spirit was received for every mortal, whether son or daughter,—for the whole

human race,—even for the rebellious. I told them, that I did not come among them to persuade them to turn to this way of life or that way of life; but to turn them from the darkness they were in to the light of Christ, "from the power of Satan unto God." To this Holy Spirit I desired that their hearts might be directed, and to the patient waiting for Christ, that they might know Him to be in them, "who liveth and abideth for ever." The above is the substance of what I had to express among them; and though some individuals mocked and behaved rudely, saying aloud, 'I wish he had done;' so that James Watkin stopped, and reproved them for their behaviour; yet the Divine Power was over others, and I believe that its influence was felt by the chief, as I observed, when I had finished and sat down, that his countenance was entirely changed, and he said that, 'I had done well in coming.'

Afterwards, by way of accounting for their not setting food before us, as is their usual custom with strangers, (which I firmly believe would have been done, had it been in his power,) he said, that they had very little to eat, and that it would be about five months before they could have plenty again; looking forward to the rainy season setting in. This I knew to be the case, as the famine in all the Friendly Isles was grievous, but more so at Tongataboo, then at Lifuka, as the bread fruit, banana, yam, sweet potatoes, &c., were almost wholly destroyed by a hurricane; and they were at this time eating the roots of the banana and tea-tree. It has been painful to observe how many have complained to us of hunger: some would put their hands on their stomachs, and exclaim, 'dead, dead.' It is, however, a certain fact, that in those places where the people are under the control of the missionaries, although suffering much, they are much better off for food than the heathen part of the community. Some of these, called heathen, particularly the chief just alluded to, and the other that came on board our vessel, declare, that they perfectly understand the nature of Christianity, and the blessing that it bestows, but they say, 'If we were to follow it, we should have to give up all our present delights,—put away all our wives but one, and all our bad habits.' They seem sen-

sible of the sinful condition in which they live; for they say in effect, 'it is impossible that we should be saved,—it cannot be.' Their poor bodies very generally bear the marks of violence, from the habit they are in of lacerating and burning themselves, as an indication of mourning for the dead; this was strikingly apparent. The little fingers on both hands had been in many cases cut off, and offered as sacrifices to avert the evils they most dreaded. This we found to be very general among those who are called Christians, but more particularly remarked it to be the case with those that are grown up; the rising generation of these now retain them. This circumstance we discovered on shaking hands with them, from their kings and chiefs down to the humblest individuals of their tribes, both male and female. We parted from this heathen chief in a friendly manner: his name is Fatu. It gave me much pain, to hear from his own mouth, through James Watkin, that, amidst all the wretchedness of a heathen life, the miseries of his people were greatly increased by their intercourse with the shipping; disease was fast sweeping them away.

29*th*.—The morning proved boisterous, but we landed for an hour about the time of high water, being desirous to speak with James Watkin, not feeling easy to let an opportunity pass away without improvement, of attending the native meeting to-morrow, if it should rest with me to do so. The fleet from Haabai, having arrived since last First-day, has greatly increased the number of people from the other islands. I found James Watkin ready as usual, to render me every assistance in his power, and the morning was mentioned, if it were concluded to come, and the weather did not prevent our landing. It may be the last opportunity that I shall have to see such a body of the Friendly islanders together; and such an one as could scarcely have been calculated on; and is of rare occurrence at any time, if indeed it ever took place before this season. No other motive, I trust, prompts in me a desire to avail myself of the opportunity thus placed within my reach so unexpectedly, than what is induced by that love which embraces the whole human family, and would bind all the children of men in the Lord's "bundle of life" everlasting. May the shout of a king

be heard among these people, and the glorious majesty of the spiritual kingdom of our Lord and Saviour, be unfolded to their understanding, by the same Almighty power which opened the heart of Lydia, in days that are over and gone, to His own praise and glory.

30*th*. *(First-day.)*—On account of the inadequate dimensions of the building to accommodate the thousands assembled, several hundreds were left outside; but they endeavoured to keep as near as they could to the place where the speaker is best heard. James Watkin occupied a short space of time in speaking to the people, and then left them in expectation of something from my mouth, when a general silence prevailed. It was not long before I stood up, in great weakness and fear, and told them that I felt myself to be indeed a feeble instrument in a cause so great and dignified; but they might remember, that the Lord's servants formerly, as now, had nothing of their own with which to satisfy the cravings of a hungry multitude. But when the Great Master was pleased to command a blessing, the few loaves and fishes were so multiplied, that there was much more left, after the people were fed to the full, than there had been before they began to eat. It is only, as He is pleased to qualify any one to speak in His name, and to open the understandings of them that hear, that any can be availingly benefited. "Without me ye can do nothing," said Christ; and though some may feel desirous to follow Him in the way of self-denial and the cross, yet when an hour of trial comes, such is the weakness of the flesh, that we are ready to shrink for fear of man, for fear of persecution; and are ready to deny Him, who suffered for us,—who died that we might live for ever. But although without Christ we can do nothing, yet through His strength we can do all things;—through the strength of His Holy Spirit, in our inner man, we can do all things to the praise and glory of God. It is in the Holy Spirit of Christ Jesus, that we must believe; and so wait to hear His voice, and obey Him in all things. This is that heavenly Prophet, of whom Moses spake to the children of Israel, whom the Lord their God should raise up unto them from amongst their brethren:—"A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you, from amongst your brethren, like unto

me, (said Moses;)—Him shall ye hear in all things; and the soul that will not hear this Prophet shall be cut off from amongst the people." In due time this was fulfilled; —this Prophet of the Lord was raised up amongst the people,—born at Bethlehem in Judea; in whom the fulness of the God-head dwelt bodily; and of whom the holy Father testified, and said,—"This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him." This is the Prophet whom we must hear in all things, as the children of Israel in that day heard Moses in all things; but with this difference,—Moses was only heard while in the flesh upon the earth, and this Prophet speaketh from heaven, by His Holy Spirit in the soul of man. How needful then for us to wait, and to watch, and to pray, that we may hear and obey Him, who speaketh unto us from heaven in righteousness, and is mighty to save the soul from sin. It is by the power of the Spirit of the Lord Jesus, that our hearts must be cleansed and purified from every defilement: it is this that searcheth all things; our secret thoughts and imaginations are all laid open before it; and nothing that is unclean or impure, that worketh abomination, or that maketh a lie, can stand before this heart-searching power of the Lord; which, as a fire, consumeth all that cannot bear his righteous judgments. But if this heavenly Teacher is heard, and obeyed in all things, with meekness and resignation,—if we fear to offend or grieve this Holy Spirit of the Lord,—it will purify us even as He is pure; and it will prepare us for the reception into our hearts of the spiritual kingdom of Christ Jesus. This is the kingdom that men are commanded, above all things, first to seek;—with the sure promise of our Lord, "that all things needful should be added" unto them. What then remains to prevent mankind from receiving the kingdom of Christ Jesus, but hardness of heart and unbelief in his spiritual appearance in man. We can scarcely suppose that any will earnestly seek for that, which they do not believe can be found. Hopeless and forlorn indeed is the situation of such as these: in vain do they say, that they believe in Jesus Christ as the Saviour of the world, and that there is no salvation but by Him;—whilst they remain strangers to His heavenly power to cleanse their hearts from sin, for want of believing that He is come in Spirit: therefore

they know him not. It is a consideration as affectingly awful as it is true,—that although He is the Saviour of them that believe, yet without we know and witness the power of His Holy Spirit to save us from our sins, He is no Saviour of ours: our belief is vanity, and will end in vexation of spirit; we are not among them that believe to the saving of the soul, notwithstanding all our profession of religion before men.

This is the substance of the testimony I had to bear amongst these people, though but a part of what I had to say.—Inviting and encouraging them, above all things, to seek first and in earnest the kingdom of heaven, and the righteousness thereof,—and with desires for their present and eternal welfare, I sat down. The place was exceedingly crowded, and the people were very solid and attentive. A number of English persons were present, probably in part from the shipping.

Spent the afternoon on board with our own people.

[A copy of the address which had been presented to the rulers of the Sandwich Islands, was left with the missionaries at Tongataboo, for translation into the Tonguese language. They concurred with D. W. in believing that its contents might be useful to those in authority there.]

Eleventh Month 5th.—The weather being more favourable for landing, we went on shore at four o'clock P. M.; and having found my mind drawn towards the remnant of English and other white people here, I told James Watkin on his inquiring about arrangements for to-morrow, that I had nothing in view towards the natives; but to sit with the English seemed to be my present business, if that could be brought to bear. This was readily assented to. I have felt a poor creature indeed, for the last day or two, owing perhaps to the increased heat of our vessel under deck; but the Lord can deliver, and strengthen him that hath no might, either in body or mind; and can at his pleasure make quick of understanding in His fear, those that trust and hope in his mercy. May He be graciously pleased to cause the opportunity to-morrow, to be a time of visitation to some: cause the earth to tremble at His power and presence, as in days of

old, when the sea saw it and fled, and Jordan was driven back; so may every thing in us, comparable to the unstable element, flee before Him; and the ever blessed truth reign over all to His glory.

6th. (First-day.)—Landed about ten o'clock in the forenoon: the natives were coming from their meeting as we approached the shore: soon after this the white people assembled together. On going into the place appointed for us to meet in, I observed that James Watkin had taken a side seat, to show the people that he had no part to take in that meeting, and as no hymn book appeared in the hands of any one, it seemed as if some pains had been taken to inform them, that it would be held after the manner of the Society of Friends. I sat down near a table, and as those who attended came in, they joined in the silent sitting of the rest. We had not remained long in this exercise, before I was made sensible of that power being nigh, which alone can soften the rocky heart, and cause the earthly nature in man to bow before it; and abiding under it, I had in due time to revive amongst them the language of the patriarch Jacob, when wrestling with the angel,—"I will not let thee go, except thou bless me;" desiring that we might individually imitate his noble example this morning, and like him prevail, and receive that blessing of the Lord which maketh truly rich, and satisfieth the hungry wrestling soul with favour. It was then with me to state the true intent and meaning of our sitting together in silence before the Lord, and the excellency of waiting upon God, if we believe in the promise of the Most High God, in the new covenant of life and power,—that he would write his law in the heart, and put it in the inward parts of man; and that he would be their God, and they should be his people: and they shall no more teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, "Know the Lord, for they shall all know me from the least of them, unto the greatest of them," saith the Lord; "for I will forgive their iniquity, and remember their sin no more." We, therefore, desire to know the Lord for ourselves; and the only way to come to this blessed knowledge, is to obey his command and be still. "Be still, and know that I am God: I will be exalted among the heathen; I will be exalted in the

earth." Here is the great and glorious privilege of the gospel dispensation: "the law of the spirit of life in Christ Jesus," is written in every heart, to make free from the law of sin and death. None are left without a manifestation of the Spirit of Christ Jesus; by which all have access unto God the Father, who is a Spirit, and must be worshipped in spirit and in truth. We, therefore, in our religious meetings, have no confidence in the flesh: we do not look to man as our teacher, whose breath is in his nostrils, to assist us in the worship of Almighty God; but we wait for the influence of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, to prepare our hearts to perform this worship aright. * *

7*th.*—Fixed with James Watkin to visit Fakafonua the heathen chief, to-morrow, in his own fortress of Maofanga.

8*th.*—Landed early, and called upon James Watkin, who accompanied Charles and myself to Maofanga; the sun was very hot, and having little or no shelter, the walk was very fatiguing, though the distance is comparatively short. On reaching the fortress, we found the entrance closely blocked up; and the keeper inside could not be prevailed upon to open to us, declaring that Fakafonua was on board the American ship, which we afterwards found to be correct.

9*th.*—I believed it safest for me to tell James Watkin, that notwithstanding the trouble already incurred, and the disappointment we had witnessed, I should like to go again to Maofanga, and if our object again failed, as regarded seeing Fakafonua, I believed that I should then have done what I could. It was not a pleasant task to tell James Watkin this, as I knew he was very averse to having any thing further to do with this man: I believe, however, he saw that I was bent upon going again to Maofanga, and kindly agreed to make another trial to accomplish what I had in view. On reaching the fortress we found the entrance blocked up as before; but James Watkin proposed that we should try another passage, more private, which he had got a hint of: this we reached at last, and found it open, but so narrow that only one person could pass through at a time. We soon met with a native who told us the chief was there; and having

obtained directions to his house, a short walk brought us to the place, where we found seven or eight American sailors hanging about. It was not long before Fakafonua himself made his appearance. Having seen him on board the *Henry Freeling*, we were not altogether strangers to each other. I took a seat on a log at his right hand, and the natives took their stations upon the floor, with the American sailors and some others. James Watkin entered into conversation with the chief, while I endeavoured to keep my mind retired in a waiting frame. At length I requested that Fakafonua might be told, that I had been among many of the islands in the Pacific Ocean with glad tidings of great joy to their inhabitants, and I was not satisfied to leave Tongataboo, without giving him a like opportunity with others to repent and believe the gospel: believing that it was not too late for him to be saved, if the terms of offered mercy were accepted on his part; for the Almighty Creator of man would have all to be saved, and he had provided the means, that all might repent and live, by his Son Jesus Christ, the light of whose Holy Spirit shineth in every heart. I was fully persuaded, that at times he had known something of this light in himself, which had shined upon and shown him his sinful state, and which had reproved him, and convinced him of his evil deeds; and though in his wickedness and hardness of heart he had rejected and resisted the strivings of the Holy Spirit, grieved it, and wounded it, yet a day would overtake him at last, when its convictions would be too heavy for him to bear. "The spirit of a man may sustain his infirmities, but a wounded spirit who can bear?" I exhorted and entreated him for some time, to repent, believe, and obey the gospel; to turn to the light of Christ Jesus in his own heart, follow it, and live; he would then no longer walk in darkness, but have the light of life. Fakafonua interrupted me once or twice to express his thanks; and when I stopped, he told James Watkin again to thank me, and said, 'I know very well it is true. I have thought of these things, and understand, and am convinced that it is better to be a Christian; but I can never be one, I am too great a sinner to be saved: I must remain as I am.' I told James Watkin to tell him, that as he knew and under-

stood these things, his condemnation would be greater on that account; and certainly his destruction would be of himself.

James Watkin then said he thought I had better speak to the sailors, who sat and listened with great attention. I replied, 'there is no occasion for that,—they know very well.' James Watkin replied, 'he thought they did not.' 'Yes,' said I, 'there is not one of them, but knows very well, that he ought to fear God; and knows when he commits sin, and that he ought not to do it, for that which may be known of God, is manifest in man: He hath showed it unto him.' Afterwards I found my mind drawn towards these men, and I was strengthened to declare the Truth among them as it is in Jesus. We then took leave of this poor benighted heathen chief, who with his people thanked me and shook hands very kindly; and I believe we parted better friends than we met. We were offered the juice of the cocoa-nut, and the stupifying kava, both which were declined. Although nothing may come of this visit, yet it is not for me to calculate upon results, but to leave them. I felt relieved, and rejoiced that I had made the effort; and I believe that James Watkin was not sorry for having accompanied me on this errand, now that it was well over. On looking round, my way seemed now clear for leaving the island.

10*th.*—At three o'clock P. M. the clouds began to disperse: a signal was made forthwith for the pilot, and a nimble native dispatched to the mission-house to state that we were about to sail. By the time the last anchor was up, James Watkin and our passengers were on board; and leaving the last of the Friendly Islands, (though not the least of them, as an object of our tender solicitude and regard,) we steered through the wide spreading reefs towards the open ocean. James Watkin accompanied us a considerable distance, until the shore of Nukulofa could be but dimly seen; but however painful the task of separating, the moment was come for it to be done. We waved to each other, while our movements could be seen in the twilight; and I believe we parted with sincere regret on both sides. If I mistake not, we can mutually acknowledge—'though lost to sight, to memory dear.'

11*th.*—Stood to the south-west, close to the wind. I

stood resigned as to our destination, whether it should be New Holland or New Zealand, and endeavoured to leave it to my heavenly Father to dispose of us according to his own good pleasure; believing if it was right for us to go to New Zealand, we should be enabled to fetch it, though the wind was opposed to it at that time.

13*th*. *First-day*.—Our sailors were collected twice in the day for devotional purposes. To-day is the third anniversary of our leaving London. Many have been the trials and conflicts permitted to overtake us; but abundantly more have been the mercies of the Lord since that time, overshadowing us by night and by day: and truly our strength has been proportioned to the necessity, in the darkest hour of dismay. There has been no lack of any needful thing; all our wants have been abundantly supplied; and that loving-kindness which is better than life, has at seasons been eminently displayed for our comfort and consolation; causing the Lord's own work to praise Him, and enabling us to give thanks at the remembrance of his holiness; and I trust, in humble resignation and devotedness, to renew our covenant, and say,—"Not my will, O Lord, but thine be done:" if thou wilt be with me in the way that I go, here am I a poor unworthy creature.

New Zealand, 24*th*.—Before six o'clock, anchored in little more than three fathoms water, on a muddy bottom, near the entrance towards Koua-Koua, after a passage of fourteen days from Tongataboo; thus we have to acknowledge that through the love and mercy of Him, who upholdeth all things by the word of his power, we have been brought in safety to the desired haven: the Lord of Hosts is his name. A few of the natives have been on board, but their barbarous and filthy appearance is enough to discourage any stranger; perhaps, these may not be a fair specimen, because of their intercourse with civilised nations, and their acquaintance with rum.

25*th*.—Before noon the Post-master Gilbert Maer came on board; and very kindly offered to conduct us to the resident missionary at the station of Paihia, engaging to call for us in his own boat, which he did accordingly: accompanied by our passengers we set out, and landed opposite to the missionary establishment, consisting of several good houses, occupied by its members, also one

place of worship: this belongs to the Church Mission. The senior and only ordained minister at this place, Henry Williams, being from home, we were conducted to the habitation of the lay minister, Charles Baker: we were kindly received by his wife, who was engaged amidst a large family, one member of which was not more than a year old. Before tea was finished, our host arrived, and confirmed the kind treatment of his wife, in a friendly manner: when the repast was over, Charles Baker took me into his study, when the object of my visit was fully entered into, and an offer made me of all the assistance in his power. After attentively reading my certificates, he said, he hailed me as a minister of the gospel, and a father, &c. Finding, while with Charles Baker, that there would be on the morrow a good opportunity to visit one of the native congregations, and that a young man, who is a competent interpreter, would be furnished with a well-manned roomy boat, I did not feel satisfied to let the opportunity pass away without availing myself of it. The prospect of moving, as it were, upon new and untried ground felt indeed weighty, but I was enabled to cast my burden upon the Lord; for truly he hath hitherto sustained me, and borne up my head amidst the floods of many waters.

27*th.* *(First-day.)*—We left the *Henry Freeling* about six o'clock A.M., in a boat belonging to the mission, which had arrived with our interpreter. After rowing about two hours and a half, we reached the point of destination at Koua-Koua, and found on our arrival at the building, that the customary service was going forward, conducted by a native teacher: he was at the moment, as we were informed, reading the nineteenth chapter of Matthew: we went quietly in, and sat down near a table. This was a rough building, lately erected, with a few seats for the females only. When the native preacher had finished, William Colenzo explained to the people the cause of our visit, which we could ascertain by the names of the different islands in the Pacific which he mentioned, to enable them the better to understand its real object. We had not agreed on any particular mode of proceeding; but when a suitable time arrived, I stood up by his side, leaving the event to my never-failing heavenly Helper. After a solemn pause, I warned the people of the neces-

sity of our humbling ourselves under the mighty hand of God, the judge of the whole earth, whom they had professedly met together to worship. "God is a Spirit," and without the aid of his Holy Spirit, we cannot draw nigh unto Him. How can we worship Him in spirit and in truth, without the help and assistance of the Holy Spirit of truth, when we cannot of ourselves think a good thought, or restrain an evil one. After enlarging on the nature of true spiritual worship, I had to turn them to the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus—the light of truth which shineth in every heart. My heart was greatly enlarged on this occasion, though a very poor empty creature on going into the meeting.

When the meeting was over, most if not all the people, came about us to shake hands, which though somewhat irksome to my exhausted frame, was much to be preferred to the practice common among the New Zealanders,—of rubbing noses together; of which we only witnessed a few specimens among themselves. I felt unwell in the morning, before leaving the vessel, and much cast down; but was now greatly relieved, though pain still continued in my head. The rain kept off until we had got through the coarse herbage and rushy plants on our way back from the meeting; but we had no sooner resumed our seats in the boat than it began to drop, and soon fell smartly: we were, however, well prepared for it, so as to keep ourselves comfortably dry overhead, and about the seats of the boat. The Lord sustained me through all this day, and magnified his own name among the people at the meeting. It was indeed a day which the Lord had made memorable to myself, for divine favour; and on which I completed my sixty-fifth year. Thus is the thread of my life lengthened out; and O! saith my soul, that it may be to the praise and glory of Him, who hath so marvellously redeemed it from destruction, and crowned me with loving-kindness and tender mercies. How can I sufficiently declare unto others, what hath been done for myself; that they also may come to taste and see for themselves His goodness and His love; and be able to say from heart-felt living experience, "mercy and truth have met together, righteousness and peace have kissed each other!"

CHAPTER XIX.

NEW ZEALAND CONTINUED—SYDNEY—HOBARTON—RETURN TO ENGLAND.

Twelfth Month 3rd.—At eight o'clock A.M. reached the station at Paihia, and found that the absent missionary, and senior of the establishment, Henry Williams, had returned to his family. He had been to the southward to endeavour to persuade the hostile tribes, who are butchering and devouring one another in a dreadful manner, to desist and listen to terms of peace. He reports that they are determined to persevere in the contest; and though he has heretofore been successful in restoring peace among them, they now turn a deaf ear to every proposition which he made to them. More than six hundred of these poor creatures have been slaughtered; and some of the missionary stations in those parts are entirely broken up for the present. One of their houses had been destroyed, some of the families stripped of every thing, and others had taken refuge in flight. Henry Williams brought with him a boy, whose sister had been murdered in a recent struggle of the contending parties. On leaving Henry Williams and his family, we proceeded towards Keri-Keri, in a boat well manned by natives belonging to the mission, having sent our own boat and crew back to the vessel from Paihia. We reached the station of Keri-Keri about noon, and were kindly received by James Kemp and his wife: he is the principal resident missionary there. Just after our arrival, a messenger appeared with a note to Henry Bobart, our conductor, from Waimate, the object of which was to prevent our coming forward, until Second-day, on account of indisposition in one of the families.

5th.—A note arrived from Waimate, stating, that if the weather cleared up, a cart should meet us on the way; but the road was so slippery, the soil being clay, and the horses wholly without shoes, that with the present

rain, the steep hills would be difficult and dangerous to travel over. I preferred going on foot to horseback, under all the attending circumstances; but Henry Bobart and Charles rode part of the way, and then gave up the horses to native boys, and travelled on foot with me. The rain commenced again before we had proceeded far, and increased after noon-tide of the day; and having to pass through much fern, and high coarse grass, procured us a larger share of wet than the rain which actually descended. We were five hours performing the journey, as from the state of the roads and lameness, I could only proceed at a crawling pace. Just as we began the last long hill, when my strength was nearly exhausted, and breathing difficult, we met the principal missionary, William Williams, who (having been formerly a medical man,) anticipating my situation from what he had heard of my age, brought with him a sandwich, &c. I told him that a friend in need was a friend indeed. On the strength of this, and with frequent stops to rest and recover my breath, I was enabled to reach the summit of the hill, and enter Waimate. Every accommodation within the reach of William Williams and his wife, was cheerfully afforded us; but the greater part of our damp clothes we were forced to keep on. In this place we found a well-conducted family, and a peaceful and quiet abode. When invited to the family devotion in the evening, we entered a large room, where thirty boys were assembled, the children of the missionaries; but such was the quiet order of the establishment, I did not know they were in the house till that time, nor that the house was a school, although we had then been three hours under its roof.

7th.—The weather still showery, but fine at intervals. Had an opportunity of seeing the manner in which the natives prepare the fern root, at present the principal article of their food. This root has an astringent property, and is admirably calculated to counterbalance the effects of fish and bad potatoes. Although well beaten after being roasted, it still retains a strong fibre which is separated from the more pulpy substance in the chewing, and thrown away by the eater. It requires good teeth to obtain sufficient support from it.

9th.—Yesterday, my lameness but little gone off, and

no opening presenting for religious service, my situation altogether required continued exercise of faith and patience; the weather was too unsettled to undertake the journey back to Keri-Keri. This morning, the state of the weather was more promising. Before breakfast, it crossed my mind, that it was not improbable a proposal would be held out, that if we stayed over next First-day, an opportunity would be afforded for seeing the people collected. After breakfast, I mentioned to our host, that as the weather appeared more favourable, we should be thinking about returning to the Bay of Islands. The anticipated proposal, however, was immediately drawn forth, for us to remain over First-day, to see the natives collected. I then stated, that we left the vessel unprepared for so lengthened a visit, but as this offer was now made, I did not dare to run away from it, acknowledging at the same time, that our clean linen was exhausted. This difficulty was soon surmounted by our hostess, who insisted upon getting every thing we had immediately washed. At nine o'clock, being informed that a considerable number of the natives would be collected from a distance, who would not be present on First-day, it seemed safest for me to attend on the occasion. We repaired to the building pointed out, and a goodly number soon collected in the place. Finding that the manner of conducting the meeting was wholly left to my disposal, we settled down into silence, until I was strengthened to declare amongst them, in an encouraging manner, the truths of the everlasting gospel. I had to turn them inward to the true minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord hath pitched and not man; who teacheth as never man taught, and speaketh as never man spake, by the Holy Spirit, in the hearts of the children of men the world over. There were some tender people present: the Lord's power was over us, and my heart rejoiced.

10*th*. — The weather being much improved, I was enabled to take what exercise I could bear without retarding the cure of my lameness. Late in the afternoon, William Williams informed me that the usual meeting of the whole establishment of missionaries and their families would be held in the evening, querying

whether I could not join them. I said but little in return, but in a while found that I must avail myself of this opportunity, and at a suitable interval told William Williams that I should like to have a little time afforded me at that meeting; and knowing their mode of conducting these meetings, I mentioned as the best time, the interval after the chapter in the Testament had been read. He directly asked, if I wished that any chapter in particular should be selected; I replied in the negative, saying, it would make no difference with me. In due time the meeting commenced, when individuals were fixed upon by them and named to lead the first and second prayer; when these were gone through, a hymn was sung as usual, and then the twentieth chapter of the Revelation was read by William Williams himself. When this was concluded, we dropped into silence, no doubt, to the surprise of many, as but few could have come to the knowledge of the request which I had made, from the shortness of the intervening space of time. After a solemn pause, I stood up with the words of the beloved disciple, when on the Isle of Patmos, in the day of the Lord's power and presence in spirit, for the word of God and the testimony of the Lord Jesus;—"Unto Him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, and hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to Him be glory and dominion for ever and ever, Amen;" —declaring that this language was what I desired they might be all enabled to adopt from their own blessed experience; and proclaiming amongst them the glory of the gospel day,—"When the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea," &c. I had for some time to wade, as it were, against wind and tide; but eventually it proved a solid opportunity.

11*th*. (*First day*.)—Since last Sixth-day morning, way has opened in the minds of those about us, in a remarkable manner, as if the ever-blessed Master had directed our steps to a place, where he himself intended to come, in his own appointed time, in condescending mercy to a poor, way-worn, unprofitable servant. It was now proposed by William Williams, that I should attend their place of public worship, and after the customary service was gone through in the New Zealand language,

according to their prescribed forms; he said, 'if you have a word for the people, I will interpret for you.' This was more than I had looked for, or dared to hope, but a few days ago. When all was gone through, William Williams threw aside his surplice, and fetched me to the appointed spot, where we stood together in silence; until I reminded the people, that we were in the presence of Him, without whose knowledge a sparrow cannot fall to the ground: but, though heaven is his throne, and the earth his footstool, yet to this man will he look, even unto Him that is poor, and of a contrite spirit, and who trembleth at the word of his power, &c. The countenances of some of these dear people spoke louder than words, that they had fallen upon the stone of Israel,—their brokenness could not be hid; to such, the message of everlasting love flowed freely, and I humbly trust, was as a shower upon the thirsty soil. It was an open and relieving season:—it was the Lord's doing, and, I believe, marvellous in the eyes of some present. There were several European families, besides those of artizans, attached in one way or other to the mission; which, with the boys' school and the natives of the surrounding neighbourhood, formed a considerable body of the people: but the praise was His alone, who wrought the work; and surely some of these were constrained to render unto Him of his due. In the afternoon we attended the meeting again, but my lips were closed up: it afterwards appeared that some were looking for words, and were disappointed.

[D. W. having felt his mind attracted to the children in the school, an opportunity was afforded him for addressing them at the usual family devotions on the morning of the 12th. He began with the text, "Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit," and dwelt on the beautiful simile of the vine and its branches. He reminded the young people of the privileges and advantages of their situation, and that although all are not called to be apostles, or prophets, or teachers, or workers of miracles, yet all are called to glory and to virtue with a high and holy calling, and concluded by bidding them an affectionate farewell in the Lord.]

12*th.*—After breakfast, preparation was made for our departure; but from one cause or other, this was delayed until near noon. Henry Bobart and W. R. Wade, accompanied my son Charles on horseback, but a cart being provided on account of my lameness, I was conveyed in it a great part of the way. We reached Keri-Keri by five o'clock; and having nothing to detain us there, proceeded towards the Bay of Islands, as soon as a boat could be got ready: we were favoured to reach the vessel soon after ten o'clock P.M. and to find all well on board, which was cause of thankfulness on my part, as the neighbourhood of the Bay is a very dissipated and wicked place. We had been absent ten days.

17*th.*—We have been engaged in selecting school materials, for the use of the native children, from the stock presented to us by the British and Foreign School Society in London; also a variety of religious and temperance tracts, with clothing for the native children.

This morning, Charles Baker came off to say, that there would be an opening for my going to Korarareka to-morrow to attend the native meeting; and that afterwards, there would be a meeting held for the English residents in this neighbourhood. He also said, that Henry Williams and himself had concluded to prepare a notice, stating that a member of the Society of Friends would be there, perhaps mentioning my name, and would give them an address. To avail myself of the opportunity of attending these meetings was a duty from which I was not satisfied to shrink; but I could not agree to the notice without its being worded in such a manner, that none would be disappointed, if I should have nothing to say to them. He said, the notice was so qualified, that that would be fully understood by all parties.

18*th.* *(First-day.)*—Charles Baker came on board in the forenoon, and we proceeded with him up the bay, and landed at Korarareka. A considerable time was then occupied in going round to the different huts of the natives, to rouse them up and persuade them to attend the meeting. I could perceive that Charles Baker availed himself of the circumstance of my having been among the islands in the South Seas, with the glad tidings of the gospel; when one of the chiefs immediately asked, 'if the people of

those islands had listened.' I am not aware of the reply of our interpreter to this question, though we fully understood the sort of conversation going forward, by the names of the different islands that were mentioned; but the chief who was then lying on the ground, wrapped in a large Witney blanket, seemed determined to attend the meeting, though not in the habit of so doing, and quickly starting up retired into his hut,—but soon made his appearance again, dressed in European clothing, and was about the first man to go into the meeting, when the bell rang. Charles Baker occupied a short time with them in the native language; but they came in, in such a straggling, careless manner, that they had scarcely all assembled before he had finished. The number altogether was very small; but the love of the gospel flowed towards them, as numbered among those for whom the Saviour died, and rose again, that they might live. The interval was short, after this meeting concluded, before that for the English residents was to begin. We were favoured with a solemn season together, though the opportunity was brought about in an unusual manner, and agreed upon in the first place without my knowledge, or any suggestion of mine.

25*th. (First-day.)*—Having been invited to attend a meeting to be held this evening, by the whole of the members of the mission at Paihia, at the house of Henry Williams; and believing it best for me to be there, we landed in time to take tea with the family. When the meeting was gathering, Henry Williams asked me if I would like to read a chapter in the Bible. I declined the offer, at the same time requesting that a little time might be afforded me when the reading was over; adding, that if I had any thing to say to them, they should have it. The chapter had not been long finished before I stood up, which produced a general silence. I was engaged to turn the minds of all present, to the teaching of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, which would lead them safely along through time, and sustain them in a boundless eternity. This appeared to be well received: a solemn feeling spread over us, under which we separated.

First Month 11*th*, 1837 —Yesterday, employed in disposing of articles of hardware, &c. The way seemed now to open with clearness, before leaving New Zealand, to

draw up an address to the missionaries stationed at Paihia, Keri-Keri, Waimate, Tepuna, &c., and all the members belonging to the 'Church Missionary Society,' (as it is denominated by themselves,) employed in New Zealand; and as I endeavoured to keep close to this prospect, it more and more brightened before me.

12*th.*—We held our usual meeting, and although a low time, I felt comforted and peaceful. In the afternoon took exercise on shore, after having been detained on board by one circumstance or other, nearly a fortnight. As the way opened, I began to commit to paper, from time to time, the matter which arose towards the members of the mission.

15*th.* *(First-day.)*—Believed it my place to remain with our people on board, feeling nothing towards the shore; and being well aware that the whole neighbourhood of the Bay, except where missionary interest prevails, answers nearly, if not altogether, the description of the place, where Satan's seat is.

18*th.*—All being ready, at day-break this morning, the *Henry Freeling* got under weigh, and dropped down the Bay opposite the station at Paihia, when we anchored again. We landed in the forenoon on the north side, settled our accounts, and bade farewell to the parties as we went along. My address being copied fairly, and various articles put together to remunerate the natives for their services in boats, &c., we landed in the evening for the last time at Paihia, and delivered them with the address to the care of Charles Baker, at whose house we drank tea. We called upon all the resident families, and saw those who had been forced from their stations to the southward by the war, before we returned on board. Before reaching the vessel a light land breeze had sprung up; and the night being moonlight we weighed and steered towards the entrance of the Bay with a fine breeze in our favour. At midnight, we were clear of the islands which form the entrance to the Bay, and from which it is probable the appellation of the Bay of Islands was originally taken. I may long have to mourn, on account of the lamentable state of the poor miserable natives of New Zealand, bound down as with chains in the service

of Satan, and the dupes of his agents, who are mingled among them, of a lighter coloured skin, but in many instances, it is greatly to be feared, the very scum and offscouring of the nations which gave them birth, and not a few of these mine own countrymen: however, under all these unhappy circumstances, the New Zealanders are a noble race of men; and though far behind-hand in that gentleness and docility which characterize the swarthy multitudes of the more sultry climates, in which the Georgian, Society, Hervey, and other isles of the Pacific ocean are placed, they certainly possess greater energy and firmness of character. This unhappily in their present lost and undone and, I may add, betrayed condition, is only devoted to the most barbarous purposes, for the destruction of their fellow-men. But if the day should ever come, when the benign principles of the everlasting gospel take root and spread among them, soften their hearts, and prepare them for that wisdom from above, which is pure and peaceable, and profitable in all things to direct into the love of God, and love to man,—they would then, far outstrip those who have long since made only a profession of the Christian religion: both in exalting and promoting the spiritual kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, in the heart of man to the praise and glory of God, and the welfare of their own species. With this view of a deeply-injured race of my fellow-creatures, constituting a part of the innumerable inheritance of the Lord Jesus, I leave their shores with a peaceful and easy mind;—at the same time, comforted under a belief, that the address to the missionary establishment will now circulate to every member; many of whom could not possibly have been present at a transitory interview, however regularly appointed. On looking at this subject, I have thought that the conflict of mind I have lately had to pass through, might be the means graciously vouchsafed, to beget in me a willingness to prepare the address. My desire is, that by it, and through it, the great name may be exalted, and the kingdom of Christ Jesus in the heart better understood and believed in, than heretofore has been the case, in the minds of many. May the Lord on high prepare the ground, in which it may, as seed, be sown; and may He bless it with fertility

to bring forth fruit that will lastingly remain;—that He may be glorified thereby.

[Before quitting New Zealand, D. W. received a letter from the Members of the Church of England Mission at Paihia, expressing their good wishes, and affectionate regard. The following is an extract:]—

'One effect of your visit to New Zealand has been to remind us, that though "there are differences of administration, it is the same spirit" which actuates the whole of Christ's mystical body, "the Church of the first-born, whose names are written in heaven." With gratitude, also, we have to acknowledge your liberal bestowment of school-books, tracts, clothing for natives, medicines, &c., which will remain behind you as a memorial of your Christian kindness."

[Before leaving England, Daniel Wheeler was furnished with a large supply of bibles, and other religious books, tracts, school-materials, clothing, medicines, &c. A portion of these was left at the different missionary stations; and the remainder distributed in other ways as opportunity offered.]

20*th.*—Yesterday, the weather was fine and wind fair. In the evening, the island of New Zealand was scarcely distinguishable from the deck. We are now steering a course for New South Wales, I trust, in the right line of things, to reach the port of Sydney, having nothing on my mind towards any other place.

29*th. (First-day.)*—A portion of the Scriptures was read to the crew, only three of whom attended. The air much cooler since the thunder-storm. The state of feeling with me, both as to mind and body, for the last two days, cannot be easily described; the former, as if it had never known good; and yet the loss could not be felt, if the possession had never been witnessed. It is, however, to myself a relieving proof or evidence that a spark of life still remains, for that which is dead cannot feel: but outward circumstances, which affect the body, also bear upon the mind, though imperceptibly, and at the moment unthought of as having any share in the mental conflict.

Below deck the water filters through upon us in many places: the deck above us is drenched again and again by the breaking tops of the waves; the motion of the vessel is so violent and incessant as to admit of no rest, either sitting or lying, and walking is altogether impracticable. Perhaps, the motto, 'Brighter hours will come,' is particularly appropriate in our case; and we may yet be permitted to realize the fact itself, and the language of David exultingly be ours,—"God hath spoken in his holiness; I will rejoice."

30*th.*—A fresh gale all night; but the moon rising about midnight, enabled us to run towards the land without fear. At ten o'clock, took in a pilot and bore up for the harbour, and before two o'clock were safely anchored in the Cove. Our dear friends James Backhouse and George Washington Walker were not long before they reached us: our joy was mutual at seeing each other's faces again, and I trust that our hearts were filled with gratitude and thankfulness to Him, who had sustained us through all, and brought it about for His great name's sake. It was afterwards ascertained, that a number of letters from England and home were lying in store for us. Accounts of the welfare of our beloved family at Shoosharry, beyond my most sanguine expectations, were received up to within seven months of the present date; not having heard of them for nearly two years, they seemed now restored to us again, as a treasure enhanced in value an hundred fold indeed, but still far beyond the reach of full possession. Humbled under a sense of the Lord's everlasting love and faithfulness, my heart rejoiced before Him.

Second Month 2nd. (Fifth-day.)—Attended the meeting in Sydney at eleven A.M. held in a comfortable building erected for the purpose during our absence from these shores. Twelve persons were the whole number present: it was a silent meeting. May faith and strength be more and more increased, if consistent with the Divine will, and a door effectually opened for the word of the gospel to be declared amongst these people; that the name of the Lord may be glorified, and the way of life and salvation, as it is in Jesus, set before them, to the exaltation of the blessed Saviour's spiritual kingdom in the heart of man; of the increase of whose government and peace,

there shall be no end, but the earth shall be filled with His praise.

[Daniel Wheeler and his son remained at Sydney until the 30th of Seventh Month, when they sailed for Hobart Town. Much public service did not devolve upon him whilst at Sydney; when health permitted, he regularly attended the meetings for worship on First and Fifth days, kept up by a few individuals professing with Friends in that town, which were not unfrequently resorted to by others. Soon after their arrival at Sydney, agreeable with arrangements made on leaving England, the *Henry Freeling* was sold, the ship's company were discharged, and the numerous surplus stores belonging to the ship disposed of; these engagements undertaken in an exhausted state of health, occupied much time.

The following extracts from his journal and letters, refer to this period.]

To John Kitching.

Sydney, Third Month 18th, 1837.

—— Our dear friends James Backhouse and George W. Walker took their departure from these shores last First-day, the 12th instant; so that we are sitting desolate, and somewhat resembling those that are forsaken; but, alas! not amongst an afflicted people. Would that I could say so; but instead of this, I think this is as wicked a place as any I have seen, which have not been a few in my day. Pride and haughtiness abound, and lamentable ignorance of spiritual religion is manifest on every side: indeed few seem to make even an outward profession of it. Drunkenness appears to be the prevailing sin amongst the working part of the community, although it is not confined to their grade. The major part of the lower order are bound in the fetters of popery; and for the most part are prisoners who have obtained tickets of leave, or they are what are called assigned servants, many of whom have been accustomed to crime from their very youth. The contrast is very and painfully striking with what we have seen among the poor and benighted islanders, with whom our lot has lately been cast; the

situation of many of these may be considered enviable, when compared with the miserable wretchedness of many here, who consider themselves Christians. Cursing and bitterness resound continually through the streets; and extortion and deceit prevail almost universally among the shop-keepers, on whose promises hardly any dependence can be placed. Many have amassed considerable wealth by extortion and the sale of spirits; and having risen only as from a dung-hill, are living as if there was no God, no judgment, and no world to come,—and length of days at their command. Those who come out as settlers are generally of a better stamp, though even among these there is little stability of character.

This is the state of the rising and fast flourishing colony of Sydney and its neighbourhood; but the most grievous thing we witness is the miserable condition of the aborigines of the country, who are frequently seen rolling about the streets in groups, altogether intoxicated; whilst their emaciated frames declare, that they are fast wasting from the face of the earth. They too, are following the dreadful example set before them, of cursing and swearing in the English tongue, which they have learnt from their exterminating visitors.

How long we may have to remain here, I know not; but I desire to be resigned to wait the blessed Master's time.

Third Month 26th.—In the forenoon meeting yesterday I had a close, searching testimony to bear,—standing up with the words of our Lord,—"If thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes, to be cast into hell fire; where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched." Stating that I believed it safest for me to revive these expressions in their hearing, lest there should be any present who were sensible that something stood in the way between them and eternal life; and though this might be dear to them as a right hand, a right foot, or a right eye, it would be their soul's true interest to pluck it out, or cut it off, and cast it from them, before it was too late to enter into life, even halt or maimed or with one eye, and before the day of the Lord's

visitation was passed away for ever. Entreating all to lay aside every weight and every burden, and that sin which most easily besets, and "run with patience the race that is set before us, looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who, for the joy that was set before Him, endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God."

Fourth Month 3rd.—Yesterday the forenoon meeting was better attended than is frequently the case; in the course of which it was with me to recite the words of the Saviour to his disciples,—"If ye love me, keep my commandments;"—stating my belief that it would be difficult to find any who profess to believe in Christ, who have not a hope that they love him. But let us prove what ground we have for this hope by the test of obedience, and examine how far we really have obeyed the commands of Christ: His commandments, as His promises, are "yea and amen for ever."—"Seek ye first the kingdom of God and his righteousness." Have we obeyed this important command? Has this been the employment of our life, as the first and primary object of our search, by which all things needful shall be added unto us? Or have we only occasionally remembered it, whilst following with eagerness after the follies, and vanities, and riches of the world; instead of laying up for ourselves "treasure in heaven?" Have we been securing to ourselves the enduring riches of eternity, by seeking this kingdom as it should be sought, "first" before all other things? It is time for some of us who are advanced in life, diligently to examine how we stand in this important search, and more especially so for those who make mention of His name before men. It is evident, that those whom our Lord enjoined to "seek first the kingdom of God," were fearful that whilst in pursuit of this heavenly treasure, they should fall short of the food and raiment necessary for their poor perishing bodies. "Behold the fowls of the air:" "Consider the lilies of the field," &c. said our Saviour, as encouragement to these of "little faith."

8th.—Attended the funeral of the wife of William Satterthwaite. The privilege of interment in the ground recently bequeathed to the Society of Friends, was granted at his request, his wife having formerly been a member.

This being the first interment at Sydney conducted after the manner of Friends, it is probable that many would have attended out of curiosity, had not the morning been extremely wet. The whole was conducted in a consistent manner. I had to remind those present, that to our own Master we must stand or fall: the work is our own, and the reward is our own. "No man can save his brother." And although nothing said or done by the living can possibly affect the dead: yet the dead are often powerful preachers to the living, warning them to flee from the wrath to come, by preparing for their latter end. "For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that every one may receive the things done in the body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad."—"Every man's work shall be made manifest, for the day shall declare it." Blessed and happy are they that are building on the ancient and sure foundation, which the righteous in all ages have built upon;—even Christ Jesus, that tried corner-stone;—"unto the Jews a stumbling block, and unto the Greeks foolishness; but unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God." This is a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence to all unbelievers now, as in the day when this declaration was made; but to those who believe, it is "a chief corner-stone, elect, precious,"—and the blessed means appointed for the salvation of all mankind, who are willing to submit to the power of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus in the heart. Although it was a scene never before witnessed here, those present were very attentive and solid, and I had peace: it appeared afterwards, that two Jews were present in the grave yard.

9th. (*First-day*)—In the forenoon meeting I had to set forth the righteousness of Christ Jesus: without which none can enter the kingdom of heaven. There are many highly professing Christians in this our day, who like the Scribes and Pharisees of old, have a righteousness of their own making; but a more excellent righteousness must be attained to, than any that man is capable of clothing himself with, before the heart is converted unto God. "Except your righteousness exceed the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case

enter into the kingdom of heaven," was declared by our Lord. Now this righteousness which excelleth, is of the Lord, and none but His children who have been taught of him, are acquainted with it, &c. Some strangers were present, but the whole number did not, I think, exceed eighteen persons. The evening meeting was smaller, but held under a comfortable quiet.

23*rd.* (*First day.*)—This morning attended the funeral of William Satterthwaite. During a solemn pause before the coffin was lowered into the grave, I had to call the attention of the by-standers to the awful instance before us, of the necessity of being prepared individually for the great change: "prepare to meet thy God," was sounded among them.

30*th.* (*First day.*)—In the forenoon meeting it was with me to revive the language of the apostle when addressing the primitive believers, who had witnessed the beauty and spirituality of the gospel dispensation; "The anointing which ye have received of Him (Christ) abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you; but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in Him." What a great and precious privilege it is to be permitted to sit as at the feet of Jesus, to hear the gracious words that proceed from Him; it is the one thing needful for all to do,—the part which Mary chose, and which our Lord declared should never be taken away from her. It is this inward teaching of the Holy Spirit, that I want all to believe in, and be acquainted with for and in themselves. Those who have received from Him the anointing which abideth, are qualified to give an account of the hope that is in them, not only in meekness and fear, but from heartfelt knowledge of the coming of the Son of God in Spirit. "We believe and are sure that thou art that Christ," said Simon Peter, when many had turned back and walked no more with Him, on account of the narrowness of the path which leads to life. "Will ye also go away," said our Lord to the few remaining disciples:—"to whom shall we go?" said Peter,—"Thou hast the words of eternal life; and we believe and are sure, that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God." Of this, and of the blessedness

of those who come to this knowledge, I had further to speak.

[Whilst at Sydney, Daniel Wheeler received the deeply affecting intelligence of the death of his eldest son, William Wheeler, who had succeeded his father in his agricultural concerns in Russia. He died on the 24th of Eleventh Month, 1836, at the Sand Rock Hotel, near Niton, on the Isle of Wight, to which place he had resorted for a more genial climate: his illness was a consumption, which rapidly terminated his life. The first intelligence of this event came to hand in a public journal, and proved a keen stroke; but was borne with much Christian resignation. The life of William Wheeler had been marked by watchfulness and prayer; and a conscientious regard to the pointing of Divine wisdom in the discharge of his religious duties, as well as by an active and diligent attention to his concerns in business;—his end was eminently crowned with peace, and an humble and confiding trust in redeeming mercy.]

Fifth Month 30*th.*—A letter has reached us by way of Hobarton, from our beloved Joshua, conveying the long anticipated confirmation of the painful report already in our possession, that our dear William has finished his earthly course. Although we have lost what never can be regained in this world; yet the accompanying particulars of his last days administered great consolation and relief, and raised in my heart a tribute of humble thankfulness to the great Preserver of men, who indeed "loveth his own unto the end;" at once removing all my doubts, and causing me in the depths of distress, to triumph with admiration at the loving-kindness of the Lord to the poor and to "him that hath no helper." On reviewing with calmness the provision which has been made for every exigency of the case, I was constrained to acknowledge, that had it been practicable, I could not have made any arrangement more satisfactory to myself; so that while I am enabled to say Amen, so be it, to this dispensation of His holy will, who wrought the work,—I can rejoice in the sustaining belief, and give thanks at the remembrance of His holiness, that the loss sustained is only ours; to

the dear departed soul it is eternal gain, through the tender mercy of God in Christ Jesus. And now, some things which at first sight only seemed to aggravate and add to our affliction, appear to have formed a part of the great whole which has been vouchsafed, by having in degree prepared our minds for the mournful event, of which we were afterwards more fully to be informed. Although the tidings received through a channel so unexpected and abrupt, plunged us at once into deep affliction, as a stern harbinger of woe; yet even this could afterwards be viewed as a blessing in disguise, gradually to lighten the weight of an overwhelming reality, and lessen the density of the gloom about to envelope us. "By watering, he wearieth the thick cloud," saith Job; so doth the tear of affection when shed in meekness and submission, soften the heart's keenest anguish, until the dark cloud of grief dissolves into resignation to the Divine will, and is sanctified to the praise and glory of God.

Sixth Month 11*th*. (*First-day*.)—Since the 30th ultimo, my pen has been laid aside as to a record of passing events, either outward or inward. My harp has been hung, as it were, upon the willow, and my lips have been sealed; but at seasons my heart has been softened by the love of God, and my peace has been permitted to flow as the stream of a mighty river, sheltered from every ruffling blast, and too strong to be impeded by trifles. In the meeting this evening a word of encouragement was spoken to the poor and needy, that are hungering and thirsting after heavenly food, and looking to the Lord alone for their souls' nourishment: verily the Lord will hear them, and they shall be fed.

18*th*.—Since last First-day, various have been my trials and provings; but the Divine hand has sustained through all; and by letters now received from England I am greatly comforted, inasmuch as the belief so strong in my heart, of the mercy and compassion of my God, is more than ever confirmed as regards the close of my precious William,—in several particulars far more abundantly than I could have conceived; and above all, in the certain evidence that He hath crowned him with everlasting life:—I had nothing more to ask. "The Lord hath heard the voice of my weeping;—the Lord hath heard my sup-

plication;—the Lord hath received my prayer;" and the kingdom, and the power, and the glory are His, for ever.

Seventh Month 10*th.*—On First-day the 2nd, both the meetings were held in silence throughout: this cannot be wondered at, when the expectation of many that attend on these days is evidently placed upon man, instead of gathering inward to the great Teacher of his people. Yesterday, the forenoon meeting was also held in silence: in the evening, the new covenant and its holy Mediator Christ Jesus, were proclaimed amongst the people, to my own relief. A solemn feeling was vouchsafed, under which we separated.

17*th.*—The fore-part of the morning meeting yesterday was greatly disturbed by persons coming in, and shortly going out again: towards the conclusion more settled quiet prevailed. The evening meeting was altogether more comfortable. The complaint of the Most High, through the holy prophet to His people formerly, it is greatly to be feared is equally applicable to many professing Christianity in this gospel day, as when uttered by Divine inspiration, in that period of degeneracy:—"The ox knoweth his owner, and the ass his master's crib: but Israel doth not know, my people doth not consider." I was largely opened to speak of the means mercifully afforded to all, through the blood of Jesus; by whom alone we can come to a saving knowledge of God the Father, and of His beloved Son, on which knowledge eternal life depends.

22*nd.*—Arrived the *Marian Watson* from Hobarton. Went on board and secured our passage on her return.

30*th.* *(First-day.)*—In the forenoon attended the meeting; I had to bear testimony to the power of Truth in the heart, if believed in and submitted to. Just as we are concerned to dwell near to this power in our daily walks through life, shall we be permitted to witness its influence upon our minds, when met together for the purpose of worshipping that God who is a Spirit, and must be worshipped in spirit and in truth. It was declared by the Saviour of the world, when personally on earth, that where two or three are gathered together in His name, there is He in the midst of them. But it would be well for us all to examine, whether we are met

in His name? whether His name, which is His power, doth rule and reign in our hearts? whether our thoughts are brought into obedience to the Spirit of Truth? None can meet in His name, in the expectation of witnessing His presence in the midst of them, but those who are subject to his power. It is for want of submission to this power in our hearts, that so many sit in dry places, where there is neither dew, nor rain, nor fields of offering. Such go from meetings as they came, barren, unfruitful, and unrefreshed; yet the Divine promise stands fast. "Where two or three are gathered in my name, there am I in the midst of them."

31*st.*—Left the colony of New South Wales, with a gentle and favourable breeze. There are on board ten prisoners in chains, with a guard of five soldiers, making up with the captain, crew and passengers, thirty-nine persons.

[After a voyage of eleven days, they reached Hobart Town, where they rejoined our friends James Backhouse and George W. Walker. Here again the ministerial labours of Daniel Wheeler, appear to have been pretty much confined to the meetings for Divine worship, kept up in this town by persons professing with Friends, and regularly held on First and Fifth-days.]

[Extract from a letter dated *Hobart Town, Eighth-Month* 16*th*, 1837.]

—— It is encouraging to observe, that the number of those who profess with us in this place is considerably increased, since our visit three years ago; but the house where they meet is so small, that the addition of Charles and myself amounts almost to an inconvenience, and the members are not in a capacity of themselves to remedy the difficulty. On First-day last in the morning, eight persons appeared in the ministry: and I think the persevering manner in which several of these attend, under very discouraging circumstances, and the solid deportment they manifest, is a strong indication of their having found something, which "the topaz of Ethiopia cannot equal" in value, nor the wealth of the universe purchase. About forty persons were present. Of the above indi-

viduals alluded to as having spoken, six are of those who have joined the Society by convincement. In my apprehension it does not necessarily follow, that such as these must become hereafter, or be extensively employed as gospel ministers; although they are thus constrained, like the tenth leper that was cleansed, to return and give glory to God, from a sensible conviction of the working of the power of the Spirit of Him, who speaketh in righteousness, is mighty to save from sin, and that to the very uttermost.

22*nd*.—We attended a meeting of the temperance society, held in Hobart Town: my mind is more and more impressed with the great importance of this institution, from a conviction that next to the gospel of life and salvation, and the circulation of the Holy Scriptures, it is of the highest importance to the well-being of the human race. Nothing stands more opposed to the benign influence of the gospel than intemperance. I believed it my duty to speak on this important subject.

27*th*.—In the forenoon the little meeting house was filled. James Backhouse had good service both in testimony and supplication. The afternoon meeting was somewhat smaller: James Backhouse had again to exercise his gift. Although much of what was expressed during the day passed before the view of my mind, yet not feeling what I deem sufficient qualification to warrant my standing up, I had no part in the vocal service; and although under much poverty of spirit was not conscious of having withheld what should have been uttered.

Tenth Month 31*st*.—Not feeling bound to remain any longer on this side of the globe, we this day engaged places in the *Lloyds*, which arrived yesterday with part of her cargo of oil, to load out here for London.

Eleventh Month 3*rd*.—Accompanied J. Backhouse and G. W. Walker on board the *Eudora*, who were about to proceed to some of the South Australian settlements. We did not think well to add to their unsettled situation by remaining long on board; but soon took leave, parting from them in much love, and under a feeling of Divine regard. Whether we shall ever meet again in this world is very doubtful; and as regards myself at least, I consider it a final parting; yet we know the Lord can

lengthen out our days at his pleasure. To Him I desire to commend both them and ourselves.

27*th.*—This day completed my sixty-sixth year. May the Lord be graciously pleased to make me more and more, a living monument of his everlasting mercy; and to humble me before Him under a sense thereof, until He shall say "it is enough."

30*th.*—Visited a young man in the hospital, who has just arrived here as a convict. His family were formerly in comfortable circumstances in England. He appears to have long strayed from the paths of virtue; but the laws of his country have now arrested his wild career, and he is sensible of his deplorable situation. I was led to commiserate his case, thinking it very possible, that though the hand of human justice has overtaken him, and he is doomed to several years of painful and degrading exile; yet that in reality he may not have been more evil-disposed than some others, who have escaped the laws of man, and who have in a still greater degree transgressed the laws of a righteous God, and been still more offensive in His sight. Amongst these I feel willing to number myself, remembering as I write, the words of the compassionate Saviour,—"Or those eighteen on whom the tower of Siloam fell and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwell in Jerusalem? I tell you nay; but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish."

Twelfth Month 7th.—Received a letter from our cousin John Kitching, communicating the mournful intelligence that my precious Jane had finished her course, and entered into rest. These tidings had truly flown apace, as it still wanted eight days to complete the fourth month since they were dispatched from Petersburg. Although this was sudden at last, and truly overwhelming for a time, yet the mercy and goodness of our heavenly Father soon changed the strain of sorrow, into that of adoration and thanksgiving,—binding up all the wounds of affliction in the healing virtue of His everlasting love: for her end had been truly peaceful; death was deprived of its sting, and the grave of its victory. Thus, the eldest and the youngest of my flock, have been gathered, since we left them, into the arms of everlasting mercy; whilst we are

left a little longer in this vale of tears. May the Lord Most High be graciously pleased to prepare us also in like manner, for the heavenly kingdom.

After calling upon all our friends and acquaintance for the last time, and desiring their welfare in the utmost signification of the word 'farewell,' we embarked on board the *Lloyds* late in the evening of the 9th; and early next morning, being First-day, the 10th of Twelfth Month 1837, we began to glide gently down the Derwent towards Storm Bay. We should have been rejoiced if the First-day could have been spent in harbour; but I believe the captain was desirous to get to sea, in order to keep his crew from getting intoxicated on shore, which often happens on such occasions, and causes serious delay to the shipping.

In the course of our stay at Hobarton we paid several satisfactory visits to the Lieutenant-governor Sir John Franklin and his family. Although the sphere in which they are accustomed to move, is not one that comports with those who profess to be followers of the lowly Jesus; yet we were not satisfied to shrink from such exposure altogether, however the non-compliance on our parts with the usual practices at such times, might entitle us to the appellation of fools by some of the more gay and thoughtless part of the company; if however the watch was properly maintained, our conduct may prove beneficial to others, by leading them to inquire into the cause of our differing so widely in life and conversation from our fellow-men.

The voyage to London, by way of Cape Horn was completed on the 1st of Fifth Month, 1838.

The following are the closing extracts from the South Sea Journal:]—

After a voyage of four months and twenty days from Van Diemen's Land, and the changes from heat to cold twice experienced during that time, my own health seemed scarcely to have been impaired; but from the weakly state of my dear Charles, whose constitution had been much shaken by a lengthened illness previous to our leaving Europe, he was less able to bear the total want of vegetables to which we were exposed for many

weeks, and the small quantity of fresh water, and that of a quality scarcely wholesome, to which we were subjected the latter part of the passage. With these disadvantages, which there is reason to believe contributed to reduce his already diminished strength, he landed in a very feeble and languid condition; but I humbly trust, he is under the immediate and protecting care of the great Physician, who alone hath power to heal, and to bless every endeavour to restore.

I should not be satisfied to conclude this unconnected and imperfect narrative, without saying, how greatly I have been aided in the course of this religious engagement by the missionaries from different societies in Europe and North America; who very kindly acted as interpreters on my behalf to the native congregations on the islands where my lot was cast, and opened their meeting-houses for our accommodation in the most brotherly manner; to whom, for this assistance and Christian kindness many ways exhibited, we feel gratefully and highly indebted.

I may also be allowed to add at the same time, that having been encouraged by my dear friends at home to accept the company of my son Charles Wheeler, I have found him very useful and strengthening to me, during our long sojourn in foreign parts, in a variety of instances, and on many important occasions.

For the best welfare of the dear and interesting people, who inhabit those isles afar off, which in the love of the gospel, I have thus been drawn forth, and enabled to visit,—a petition however feeble, must ever dwell in my heart; and on their behalf I would earnestly and affectionately crave the fervent aspirations of all my dear brethren and sisters, when it is well with them: and may they unite with me in commemorating the mercy, loving kindness and faithfulness of Him, who for His great name's sake, and for His beloved Son's sake, wrought the work, — hath so marvellously sustained us through every season of trial and conflict, and delivered us out of every distress: that the thanksgiving of many may resound to His praise, to whom the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, belong for ever.

CHAPTER XX.

ATTENDS THE YEARLY MEETING IN LONDON OF 1838—HIS PROSPECT OF RELIGIOUS SERVICE IN AMERICA—VISITS HIS FAMILY IN RUSSIA—SAILS TO NEW YORK—TRAVELS IN THE UNITED STATES.

SHORTLY after leaving England on my way to the islands of the Pacific, an unfading evidence was granted me that I should have to visit North America, after the service on which I was then entering should be accomplished. Such a marvellous unfolding of the Divine will as to the future, so condescendingly vouchsafed and permitted to make an impression on my mind at so great a length of time before-hand, could not fail to support, comfort, and strengthen me in every season of trial and conflict both inward and outward, which I had afterwards to pass through; and although at seasons my mind was put closely to the test, it was again and again renewed from the heavenly treasury of living faith, to strengthen my confidence in its holy Author and Finisher: for the brightest gleam of that soul-sustaining loving-kindness which is better than life, soon loses its lustre, unless renewed from time to time by Him in whose presence only there is life.

The statement which I felt called upon to render to the Yearly Meeting held soon after our return to England was very short, as my beloved friends were already in possession of the extracts from my Journal; and the time was not come for me to disclose how I had been favoured with such an evidence before-hand of a safe return to the land of my fathers. My exercise of mind during the Yearly Meeting may more easily be conceived than described: and though my countenance might sparkle with joy at once more beholding my brethren and sisters in religious fellowship, my heart was full of a subject which nothing could relieve but disclosure; and that seemed denied, until the appointed days were fulfilled that the

seal should be opened, and the thing proclaimed as on the house-top. At times I would gladly have taken counsel as to the right path of proceeding with my concern; but it seemed my place not to confer with flesh and blood, but to keep my eye steadily fixed on that Almighty power, which alone can qualify us like the left-handed sons of Benjamin, to throw a stone to a hair's breadth.

Eventually my way opened with clearness to attend Balby Monthly Meeting, and York Quarterly Meeting in the Sixth Month; and having returned the certificates granted five years and a half ago, after a brief statement of my late journey, and mentioning the earnest of a return in safety, which the Lord had granted me, I had to inform Friends that I no longer stood before them as one returning, but as one requesting a certificate to enable me to visit various parts of North America. As regarded my children, for whom I think I felt more than for myself, I remember telling York Quarterly Meeting when my concern was laid before it, that though human nature keenly felt the separation from, and would gladly remain in possession of its greatest earthly treasure, yet I did believe I could not promote the welfare of my beloved family in any manner so much, as by my own faithfulness to what I apprehended to be the duty required of me. A certificate was granted, setting me at liberty to pursue the prospect then before the view of my mind. That I might not be chargeable in the sight of any, with neglecting to look after the affairs of my own household, it seemed best for me before embarking for America, to visit the residue of my family on the plains of Shoosharry; although if my own inclination only had been consulted, I should have preferred, on several accounts, proceeding immediately across the Atlantic, after having passed the Morning Meeting in London.

[This visit to Russia was satisfactorily accomplished; setting out on the 1st of Eighth Month, Daniel Wheeler passed about as many weeks at his former abode as he had been years absent; returning through Finland and Stockholm, he reached London again on the 22nd of Tenth Month, and finally embarked from Liverpool on

the 25th of Eleventh Month following. It was no small trial to leave behind, in a drooping state of health, his son Charles, the faithful companion of his long journeyings. From the boyhood of the latter they had, with but little exception, dwelt under the same roof: and after the very close association of the last few years, almost by day and night, the separation now demanded was more than ordinarily painful to him. In a letter from D. W., written at sea, it is thus alluded to.

Twelfth Month 26*th*, 1838.

—— Having for so many years had the society of my dear Charles, under all circumstances, and through each wintry season as it revolved, I have never before felt so friendless and childless, as is now my portion. This circumstance, and the recollection of the bereavements which have befallen us about this dreary season, combine to darken the shade of the gloomy picture, with a deeper hue than it is wont to have, when clad in its own natural and beautiful, though cheerless garb. Truly may I say, "I had fainted if I had not believed," to see the loving-kindness of the Lord, and the greatness of his goodness, which is laid up for them that fear Him, and that trust in Him before the sons of men. In the time of trouble He doth hide them in His pavilion, in the secret of His tabernacle shall He hide them; He shall set them upon a rock. Although weak and feeble, and utterly unworthy in my own estimation, without might or power, storehouse or barn; yet, through that "mercy" which is "from everlasting to everlasting," I am at seasons, whilst floating on the mighty deep, permitted to feel an inward support in the belief, that I am moving in my heavenly Father's will.

Let none be cast down or discouraged; for greater is He that is for us, than he that is against us: and although many are the trials of faith and patience, the deep baptisms, and the tribulations which the Lord's children have to pass through, yet He delivereth out of them all; and He will deliver, and that to the very uttermost, all that in sincerity trust in Him. And how doth He mercifully vouchsafe unto such, in the abounding of His love, a blessed portion of that "peace which passeth all

understanding," to sustain them in the way that they should go.

[The Extracts which follow are from Daniel Wheeler's Journal and letters.]

First Month 1*st*, 1839.—This morning the Never Sink hills were in sight, and we worked up the bay amidst fields of floating ice, drifting from the mouth of the Hudson river. The morning was so foggy in the neighbourhood of the city, that the signal of the telegraph announcing the approach of the *George Washington*, was not discovered by the 'look out,' so that we were within three miles of the wharf at New York, before a steamer came to assist us through the ice. By the way, I think the method of steering the American steamers is admirable: the helmsman is stationed in the fore part of the vessel, where he can see all before him, instead of being in the after part, where he can scarcely see any thing for the masts, &c. of his own vessel: he is also sheltered from the weather in a large lantern, the windows of which he can open or shut at pleasure. Before noon we were at our desired haven, and I trust that some of our hearts were filled with gratitude and thankfulness.

Though unexpected and a perfect stranger, as by some means I had left England, without any introductions for New York, I was kindly received on shore by John R. Willis. In the afternoon, it was finally arranged that I should become an inmate with J. and P. Clapp.

2*nd*.—Attended the week-day meeting for worship and the Monthly Meeting held at its close. In the former, I had a short testimony to bear to the faithfulness of that God with whom we have to do.

4*th*.—Had a most unexpected visit from my much loved friend Stephen Grellet, who had come from his home at Burlington to see me. He struck me as very little altered since we parted in Petersburg twenty years ago. It was truly delightful to meet him again, though the interview could not fail to awaken many painful recollections of days that are past, when our little family circle was unbroken, and, as far as we can expect enjoyment while on earth, happy in itself. But though many seasons of sorrow were brought to remembrance, the never-failing

mercy of the Lord could be traced to have compassed us about as with a shield, for His great name's sake, from the time of our separation up to this very day.

6*th.* *(First-day.)*—In the early part of the meeting this morning I was greatly bowed down; but in the Lord's time was raised up to declare the way of life and salvation, and the necessity of the whole heart being given up to follow the Son of Man in the regeneration. In the afternoon I had to revive the words of the apostle,—"the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strongholds;"—querying, what we knew of this for ourselves.

15*th.*—We were favoured with a blessed meeting, when the poor in spirit were declared to be those, to whom the gospel was ever and is still preached. Elizabeth Coggeshall afterwards knelt down, and gave the glory to Him, who had thus condescended to grant us that drop of heavenly refreshment.

23*rd.*—Attended the Select Meeting at Westbury, where I had to encourage Friends to faithfulness in the maintenance of that cause, which is as precious at the present day as when David replied to the remonstrances of his elder brother, "What have I now done? Is there not a cause?" although in the promotion of this dignified cause, we may certainly have to drink of the cup which the Master drank of, and be baptised with the same baptism that he was baptised withal. The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord, &c.

24*th.*—Attended the Quarterly Meeting, in which I had to sound an alarm amongst Friends, declaring that the Most High will have a church, He will have a people for himself, that shall show forth his praise. Many were willing and ready to join in the "Hosanna to the Son of David; but how few were found to confess Him, and to stand by Him, at the blood-stained cross: one betrayed his Master, another denied Him, and they all forsook Him and fled. I stood long on my feet, and had peace afterwards.

On the 25th, the meeting for public worship was again held, and I was largely opened amongst them. The young people were earnestly entreated to hearken to the voice of wisdom, and offer an early sacrifice to the Lord:

and I had to acknowledge the loving-kindness of the Lord in spreading the mantle of His heavenly presence over us, to my own comfort, and I trust to the satisfaction of my brethren also. In the evening, some opportunities were afforded to address large companies of Friends, assembled at each other's houses.

27*th.*—Attended the meetings for worship, and had service in both, to my own peace.

28*th.*—Set out for Burlington, accompanied by Samuel Clapp and Wager Hull, by steam-boat to Amboy, from thence by railroad: the route led by the house and grounds of Joseph Buonaparte, on the banks of the Delaware. A heavy storm of wind and rain on the 26th, had raised the water in many parts to an unusual height, and occasioned much loss of property by sweeping the quays even of heavy articles, such as coal. The rising of the Delaware had spread large masses of ice over the neighbourhood; and the railroad by which we have travelled was in places entirely hidden by the water, which was still too high to be confined within its usual limits. The car in which we rode held about forty persons, with a stove in the middle of it, well supplied with fuel, which made it sufficiently warm. Reached Burlington as it became dark, and were soon conducted to the abode of dear Stephen Grellet. Remained here over their preparative meeting on the 31st, and had an opportunity of calling on many Friends.

Second Month 1*st.*—Took leave of the family, where my residence had been delightful, and which reminded me of dwelling in a nest of turtle doves. Friends of this place appear to live in much harmony, and have not witnessed many of those afflicting circumstances, in which many other meetings have shared, from the Hicksite apostacy. Proceeded to Philadelphia, in company with my country-people, Thomas and Elizabeth Robson, S. Grellet and other Friends; crossed the Delaware opposite the city by steam bridge: we lodged at the house of Ellis Yarnall, a quiet retreat indeed. Next day I attended and had service in the Select Meeting.

4*th.*—The Quarterly Meeting was held this day: it was the largest meeting of Friends I ever saw, except the Yearly Meeting in London: the attendance was greater,

perhaps by one-third, on the women's side of the house, than on the men's; and this is more or less the case wherever I go. I had to press upon Friends the necessity of attaining that state, which characterizes all the living members of the gospel church.

On the 15th, I visited an afflicted family, the mother having died two days before. After seeing the corpse, we had a contriting opportunity with the father and children, under the wing of the Prince of Peace. Coming to Philadelphia seems to have opened a wide door for me in the minds of a large body of Friends, and gives strength again to move forward: leaving New York has I trust been in the right ordering, in which I humbly pray to be preserved.

17*th.*—At the forenoon meeting under much discouragement. Had to stand some time amongst the people, and to insist on the necessity of our doing the will of the Holy Father, if we would know the doctrine of the Son; unto those thus found in obedience, his doctrine shall distil as the dew, and as the small rain upon the tender herb: they shall inherit substance, and shall certainly know that they have not followed cunningly devised fables, but living and substantial truth.

Third Month 11*th.*—Since the last entry very much confined to the house with an attack of influenza, which has prevailed here very generally. My mind has often been brought very low; but my gracious Master has been pleased to enable me to stand resigned to every dispensation of His holy will. Many Friends have called to console and comfort me, and the estimable family with whom my lot has been cast, have lost no opportunity to administer to my relief in every way; so that in every thing I have abundant cause to give thanks to Him, through whom all my wants have been so mercifully supplied. Yesterday got to meeting, and had a short testimony to bear—that the path to the kingdom changeth not, but is the same now as in the beginning; and this way is Jesus, the first and the last, the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the ending, the bright and morning star.

17*th.*—At the Western district meeting. Shortly after gathering, the silence was broken by one of the Hicksite

preachers. His doctrine was guarded, and condemnable rather for what he had not spoken, than for what he did speak. I thought that those who really knew what he was, were certainly blame-worthy in not apprising the elders, so that the meeting might not have been disturbed by him. The discourses of these people are frequently very extravagant; denying the divinity of the Lord who bought them, in terms little short of blasphemy.

19*th*.—Attended the North meeting, after which the preparative meeting was held. In the meeting for worship, seven ministers were present, but not a word spoken. It is truly and sorrowfully a low time, in which the rightly concerned must be willing to suffer with their suffering Lord, and be crucified with Him in the spiritual Sodom and Egypt of the present day.

20*th*.—Attended the Western meeting; after which the Monthly Meeting was held. I have been silent in several meetings of late, and at times much depressed from day to day. In the meeting for worship, a Friend from another meeting spoke encouragingly to my state, as one acquainted with the Lord's dealings, and the trials his servants have to pass through.

24*th* (*First-day*.) — Attended the Western district meeting in the morning, which was much disturbed by the indisposition of a female who had to retire, and by an alarm of fire. My mind was under exercise, and a woman Friend standing up, led the way for my declaring, that the Lord most assuredly is looking for fruit, even the fruit of the Spirit; afterwards reciting the words of our Saviour to his disciples,—"Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, He taketh away; and every branch that beareth fruit, He purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit," &c. I felt somewhat relieved at the close of the meeting.

In the evening attended a meeting appointed by Elizabeth Robson for the young people particularly. Dear Elizabeth Robson had to speak of the blessedness of those who take up the cross, and follow the Lord Jesus, and of the impossibility of serving two masters: towards the conclusion she supplicated on their behalf. It might be termed a solid meeting; but it seemed to me that the

minds of too many of our young people have already been so much dazzled with the glare of creaturely activity and excitement, as to have but little relish for the plain but incontrovertible truths of the gospel in their primitive purity. O! the beguiling influence of human wisdom! how doth it corrupt from the simplicity that is in Jesus: it strikes at the very life of spiritual christianity.

25*th.*—The day rough and cold with showers of snow. My health through favour is much restored: my only want is more and more of the Divine presence, and more ability to exalt the cause of truth and righteousness in the earth.

27*th and* 28*th.*—Attended the Orange Street and Arch Street meetings, after each of which the Monthly Meeting was held. At all the Monthly Meetings I have recently attended, it is very painful to witness the number of young persons who are leaving the Society. These for the most part were minors when their parents became Hicksites: and as they become of age, are disowned for non-attendance of meetings. Others, again, are selling their birthright for a mess of pottage; and it is evident, from the inconsistency of conduct of hundreds in this city, how lightly they esteem the principles in which they have been educated. Alas! Alas! what will they do in the end.

31*st.*—Attended the meeting now held as the wreck of the once large and comfortable meeting of Merion, consisting of thirty-six to forty persons. I had to stand up amongst them and testify, that "the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good;"—that the true worshippers are no longer under the law of sin and death, but under the law of the spirit of life in Christ Jesus, which makes free from the law of sin and death. They are not under the dominion of sin, but under grace,—that grace and truth which came by Jesus Christ: the Truth hath made them free, and they are free indeed. It is only such that can worship the Father in the beauty of holiness, and in newness of life.

Fourth Month 4*th.*—Attended the meeting at Haverford. It was a restless and trying time to me. I had to revive among them the passage, beginning—"Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty man glory in his might. Let not the rich man glory in his

riches: but let him that glorieth, glory in this, that he understandeth and knoweth me, that I am the Lord, which exercise loving-kindness, judgment, and righteousness in the earth; for in these things I delight, saith the Lord."

7*th*. *(First-day.)*—Attended both meetings at Burlington, having come by steam-boat yesterday. In the forenoon I stood up with these expressions,—the royal Psalmist, than whom none could bear a more ample testimony to the loving-kindness, mercy, and faithfulness of the Lord, had nevertheless his share of trial, and had at seasons to mourn as a dove in the absence of his Beloved; as when we find him making the solemn appeal,—"Will the Lord cast off for ever, and will He be favourable no more?" &c. In the afternoon, I revived the words of our dear Redeemer,—"Strive to enter in at the strait gate;"—which strait gate remains to be the only way to the kingdom. If "we live after the flesh, we shall die: but if we through the Spirit, do mortify the deeds of the body, we shall live:" the life of the Christian is a continual warfare,—the flesh against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; but the weapons of his warfare are inward and spiritual, and "mighty through God," &c.

8*th*.—Spent the afternoon much to my satisfaction with our ancient friend John Cox, eighty-seven years of age: he is a minister, and alive in the Truth. In the evening J. J. Gurney arrived from New York, whom it was very pleasant to meet again.

9*th*.—Returned to New York, and found J. Clapp and family well, and as kind as heretofore. The next day attended the meeting here, which proved satisfactory. I had to allude to the blessedness and peace that are the portion of the children of God, who have been ransomed from their sins by the blood of Jesus, and redeemed by submission to the operation of His Holy Spirit in their hearts: reviving the language of the prophet,—"Look upon Zion, the city of our solemnities; thine eyes shall see Jerusalem a quiet habitation,—a tabernacle that shall not be taken down." Several others spoke.

11*th*.—Returned by railroad to Philadelphia, having the company of Anna A. Jenkins and her companion from Providence.

12*th*.—Attended the Meeting for Sufferings, which

was large, nearly all the members being present. The subject of slavery came before it; and the case of the oppressed slaves, as well as of the slaveholders, was treated with much feeling. Many Friends seem under much concern on this subject; and on account of those of our numbers who have joined the Colonization Society, which is not unlike sanctioning the continuance of this cruel system. May the Lord be graciously pleased to break this inhuman yoke asunder.

14*th.* *(First-day.)*—Attended the meeting in Twelfth Street, in the fore-part of which Anna A. Jenkins appeared in supplication. A young minister followed in a lively testimony; after which I found an exercise which I was enabled to throw off, and had to encourage the young man who preceded me.

15*th.*—The Yearly Meeting at large sat down. I little thought that it would be my lot to break in upon the solemnity that prevailed, until a short interval before I found that I could do no other than petition on the bended knee, that the Lord in his everlasting mercy would be pleased to lift up the light of His heavenly countenance upon us. After taking my seat again, my soul was melted in humble contrition before Him, who liveth for ever and ever.

The Yearly Meeting continued by adjournments until the 19th instant inclusive, and was an exercising time, on account of the too general departure from, and ignorance of that light and truth, which distinguished the meetings of our worthy predecessors in so eminent a manner. On the subject of meetings for worship, I had one remark to make; and to declare that if ever we suffered the righteous testimony to the teachings of that Divine grace which hath appeared unto all men, to fall to the ground, or be lowered by departure from a silent waiting upon God for the blessed influence of the Holy Spirit, to enable us to worship Him aright,—the glory would depart from our Israel, and nothing be left us but an empty name.

When all the minutes were gone through, and the principal cases disposed of, dear Elizabeth Robson came into the men's meeting: before this scarcely any thing in the line of ministry was offered by any one: but now the seals seemed to be loosed. E. R. was highly favoured

and bore an awakening testimony among us. This opened the way for me to follow, exhorting all to turn to the Lord with full purpose of heart, in the very depths of humility. My soul had mourned over the low state of things among us: the sorrowful and manifest declension, which had so greatly marred and defaced our religious Society, might be traced to our having departed in heart from that precious principle of light and life, bestowed in redeeming mercy on every individual of the human race. It is high time to lay aside the unfruitful works of darkness, and to put on the whole armour of light: for the day is far spent, and the night is at hand.

[The following notice occurs of a visit paid by D. W. to the Women's Yearly Meeting.]

I had full opportunity to clear my mind in a crowded meeting, to my own great relief; and perhaps some longing desires might be raised in the hearts of individuals after that purity of heart and life, in which the Lord delighteth: the result I desire to leave to Him, who seeth the end from the beginning. As the men's meeting gathered, my exercise had become stronger and stronger, in tender mercy confirming me that it was of the Lord; and truly His heavenly power and presence went with me, and enabled me richly to open the way of life to my beloved sisters, and to encourage them to press toward the mark for the prize immortal, the high calling of God in Christ Jesus. I understood afterwards, that no other time during the whole Yearly Meeting, would have been so seasonable as the one I was pressed to resort to. Trust in the Lord, O! my soul!

23*rd.*—Attended the funeral of Timothy Paxton, a worthy elder, whom I had visited in the course of his sickness. The crucified Saviour was declared to a large assemblage, including I suppose many Hicksites, but all was quietly received.

27*th.*—Proceeded to Wilmington and was kindly received at the abode of Samuel Hillis. This city is built in a well chosen situation, with the noble Delaware in its front, and the Brandy Wine and Christiana rivers navi-

gable up to the wharfs. At the foot of the Brandy Wine, many mills are established, where the bulk of the American flour that is exported is dried and ground.

Attended both meetings in Wilmington, in which I had some service. In the afternoon an ancient Friend spoke, which opened the way for me to quote the apostolic declaration,—"That which may be known of God, is manifest in man, for God hath showed it unto him;"—making a solemn appeal to some present, whether they were not treating the Spirit of the Lord in their hearts, as His holy person was treated when on earth by the Jews; when "He was despised and rejected of men, a man of sorrows and acquainted with grief." Assuredly, a day will come when He who now pleadeth with them for their own soul's sake, in matchless love and mercy, shall be their judge. "I judge no man. The words that I speak, the same shall judge them at the last day."

Fifth Month 5th. (First-day.)—Had good service in the forenoon meeting, declaring the blessedness of those who do the will of the Father, by hearkening to the voice of His well-beloved Son. In the evening I had a public meeting, to which the inhabitants at large were invited: a considerable number assembled, but the house was not filled. It was an exercising time to myself, arising in part from the weight of responsibility resting upon me, and partly from having an intoxicated individual seated directly before me, who fell asleep, and leaned forward so much that his hat fell twice from his head. An attempt was made to persuade him to go home, but did not succeed: he eventually roused up, I was informed, and listened attentively. I sat pretty long before I felt strength to stand up. At length the following expressions crossed my mind, and brought with them the ability to testify, that "the God of Israel is He that giveth strength and power to his people. Blessed be God!" I had abundant cause as on many former occasions, to magnify that Almighty power, which enabled me to declare His mercy and His truth among the people; enlarging my heart, as I proceeded to speak with innocent boldness of the things of His kingdom. It was with me to set forth the glories of the present gospel day, and to query how far we were individually contributing or other-

wise to promote its fulness, as we have each a responsible part to act in the great work. My late visit to the South Seas was adverted to, and the message with which I was charged by Paofai, one of the principal chiefs of the island of Eimeo, was faithfully delivered.* I had to point out the dreadful national responsibility we were incurring, and the imperative necessity for all earnestly to consider, whether they were clear of contributing in any manner to the sacrifice of those poor islanders, who are fast vanishing from the face of the earth, in consequence of their intercourse with foreigners: reviving the words of the prophet of the Most High, "shall I not visit for these things; shall not my soul be avenged upon such a nation?" It was a solemn opportunity, and was overshadowed by the wing of everlasting love: so that my soul could truly say, I trust with humble reverence, at the end as at the beginning,—"Blessed be God," who alone "giveth strength and power to his people."

11*th.*—Took leave of Friends, and left Wilmington by railroad, with a peaceful mind. We crossed the noble Susquehanna river at Havre de Grace, and several branches of the Chesapeak bay and the Gunpowder water, on the way to Baltimore: we reached this city early in the afternoon, where I am now kindly entertained at the house of Dr. Thomas.

12*th.*—In the forenoon meeting I was closely engaged, standing up with the words of the blessed Redeemer,—"Ye worship ye know not what." However abrupt and unpalatable the accusation might appear, I found that I had no other course to take. Many Hicksites were at the meeting, for whom what I had to say might have seemed to have been previously prepared, if I had known that they would have been there: it was, however, a solid meeting. The afternoon meeting was silent as to myself, but we had the ministry of another Friend to satisfaction.

14*th.*—Believing that I could do no less than endeavour to meet the sailors, and others connected with a seafaring life, arrangements were made for this purpose; and the privilege obtained of the use of the Bethel chapel,

* See page 199.

when it was ascertained that the stranger for whom it was requested was not a Hicksite: the meeting was held at a suitable hour in the evening, and was considered large. As regards myself, it was a low season; and I believed while sitting in silence before them, that but few were present of the description whom my soul longed after. I was strengthened to declare the everlasting gospel amongst them: but seemed led along to a class making much higher profession of religion than those whom I expected to assemble. It was I believe, considered a satisfactory meeting; but the feelings of the unprofitable servant were mine.

16*th*.—The week-day meeting held in course was small, but very precious to a living remnant. I had much to say among them of an encouraging and comfortable nature; but I hope it was done in such a manner, that none could take that to themselves which belonged to another: the terms were rigidly specified. I had to commemorate the tender mercy of our God, and the continued regard of our holy High Priest, Christ Jesus; whose presence was livingly felt amongst us. It was a blessed season to myself; and I believe will not soon be forgotten by some others.

In the afternoon, took leave of my truly kind host; and accompanied by Samuel Carey, proceeded by railway towards Virginia. At Taylorsville we found comfortable quarters; but owing to some failure of letters, a carriage which was to have met us here was not to be found. We were now in a land of slavery, and the delay which this disappointment occasioned, afforded some opportunity of remarking the effects of the system; but although perhaps here in its mildest form, both the country and the people wear an aspect of wretchedness and poverty, quite striking to a stranger. The land has grown tobacco, until in places it can scarcely cover itself with a plant of any kind. Here and there a patch of Indian corn is to be seen, which, with hogs, seems to constitute the principal food of the inhabitants. In the afternoon we hired a pair of horses that had been ploughing, a very old shabby vehicle, and equally shabby harness, and set forward for Montpelier in Hanover county. Had to ford a small river by the way, in the middle of which the horses became awkward, pro-

bably from a desire to drink; when the harness broke, and the poor animals drank their fill, whilst our negro driver repaired damages, cutting up parts of the harness to strengthen what had given way. The weather was very sultry, and we reached the mansion of Nathaniel C. Crenshaw, just at the commencement of a heavy thunderstorm. We were most hospitably received, although a large party of Friends had already assembled, like ourselves, on their way to the Yearly Meeting of Virginia, to be held the next day at Cedar Creek, five miles distant.

19*th.* *(First-day.)*—The people collected for the forenoon meeting in great numbers. The neighbourhood of the meeting house exhibited such a display of equipages, as I could not have supposed the country hereaway was capable of making. Many of the coloured people also attended. The meeting-house was built before the separation, and therefore of large dimensions, so that there was room for all; but for a time we were much disturbed by the very loose behaviour of some of our well dressed white visitors. I was grieved with their conduct, and at length told them, that in order to get into a settled state, it would be well for each individual to consider in whose presence we were assembled, as became men and Christians, &c: we were afterwards favoured with a solemn season together. A few went out, but the more solid part remained, until the meeting ended. At my request a public meeting was held that afternoon. It was not so large as that in the forenoon, but the company were much more solid; and I humbly trust the great Name was exalted that day.

20*th.* *(Second-day.)*—It is the practice for the business of the Yearly Meeting to commence this morning. The men and women usually sit together for a short interval, and then the shutters are drawn up, which separate them into distinct meetings; but before this could be done, the people flocked in so numerously, as almost to compel the holding of a meeting for worship with them; and through favour it proved a season worth coming several hundred miles to witness. It was, I believe, a day of solemn warning and renewed visitation to many, and particularly to the young people in membership with us. I felt bound to revive among them the fatherly invitation of the Most

High, "Come out of Babylon, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues."—"Come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and I will receive you: and I will be a father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty." Let not the Babylonish garment, nor the wedge of gold, be in our camp; but save yourselves from this untoward generation, &c. The Lord's power was felt to prevail among us, to the softening of many hearts, and the encouragement of the faithful of this sequestered little flock. On the way afterwards to the house of Walter Crewe, in company with his daughter, and Samuel Carey, we experienced a marvellous preservation from being hurled down a precipitous bank. Owing to something being wrong about the harness, one of the horses got off the road, and dragged the other with him; and had the driver attempted to turn them again, we must have been overturned. Our escape seemed brought about by the horses being kept as it were before wind and sea, directly end-on, and almost on their haunches, sliding straight down the hill to level ground below. Had the carriage been turned ever so little on one side, it must immediately have toppled over, and probably would have rolled several times over before it reached the bottom; and yet such was the mercy extended to us that no one was hurt, and neither carriage nor horses apparently injured. Such unmerited favours demand our humblest gratitude.

Attended the different sittings of this Yearly Meeting on the 21st and 22nd. In the afternoon of the latter day, the business was nearly concluded, and I took leave of Friends, being desirous of attending the Yearly Meeting in New York, which is fast approaching. I was comforted in the belief, that in this Yearly Meeting, although small indeed to what it formerly was, there is yet a living remnant, to whom the cause of truth is precious. May the Lord preserve them in this land of oppression; and may their hands be unpolluted by the blood of the suffering sons of Africa. We set out the same afternoon, and were favoured to reach Baltimore the next morning, and were again hospitably received by Dr. Thomas and family. During the night there was a succession of thunder and

lightning: my attention was much attracted by the brilliant little lamps of the fire-fly, which were perceptible between the flashes of lightning, pursuing their nightly excursions, and filling their place in the marvellous works of this beautiful creation, according to their order and the part assigned them; showing forth the praises of their Almighty Creator.

Rested on the 23rd, and the next morning, again left my kind friends of Baltimore, and pursued my way alone to Philadelphia, where I reached the abode of my ancient friend Ellis Yarnall the same night; and finally got to my quarters in New York on the 25th. Attended the various meetings as they came in course, and sat for the most part in silence.

In the evening attended a meeting appointed at the request of Elizabeth Robson for the young people, in which she had largely to labour amongst them, in the love of the gospel,—I trust to the relief of her own mind, and to the benefit of many. It appeared from the different epistles, that there is a prospect of a succession of burden-bearers amongst the young people, which I sincerely desire may be amply realized; but to myself the prospect is very gloomy as regards our Society in this land.

Sixth Month 2nd.—In the forenoon, J. J. Gurney appeared at some length; and greatly do I desire that lasting impressions may have been made on some: but alas! how often doth the ear listen with gladness, and even the heart desire to become acquainted with those things that accompany life and salvation, whilst it still remains in the unregenerate state, for want of that self-denial and daily cross to our corrupt wills and inclinations, without which we cannot advance one step nearer the heavenly kingdom.

CHAPTER XXI.

TRAVELS IN NORTH AMERICA—RETURN TO ENGLAND.

Sixth Month 7th.—Embarked in the steamer for Newport, Rhode Island, with a company of two hundred and seventy-five passengers, including several Friends. We were favoured with a beautiful night, and rounded Point Judith next morning under the most favourable circumstances: this point being exposed to the swells of the Atlantic, is often a very rough part of the voyage. We reached Newport at five A. M. and proceeded in stages towards New Bedford, arriving by noon at Francis Tabor's; where I found a family dwelling much in the ancient style and simplicity of our early Friends, both the heads being elders in the Society. Here I was again a stranger, and without any defined prospect of duty before me.

The next day, the 9th, being First-day, my path was greatly opened; and at the close of the forenoon meeting the way was clear for me to request that a meeting should be appointed for the inhabitants generally, seamen, and those connected with a seafaring life; which was arranged for the following evening. We were favoured with two comfortable meetings that day; and in the evening, before separating from a large company assembled at the house of a Friend, it was with me to recognise that Almighty power, which "maketh the outgoings of the morning and evening to rejoice;" and to acknowledge the unspeakable favour, after a day full of mercy and full of love, to be sensible that the heavenly wing still overshadowed us,—a great and precious privilege, demanding all our admiration, gratitude, and humble praise.

10*th.*—In the afternoon attended the funeral of a young person who died after a severe illness, occasioned by sitting on the ice, when heated and fatigued, six months ago. Many were collected on the occasion, and

after two other Friends had spoken, I had to urge the necessity of our individually becoming acquainted with Him, who is, "the resurrection and the life;" and thus be prepared for the day of death appointed unto all men. The meeting in the evening was largely attended, and proved a solemn season. Friends of New Bedford were hearty in the cause, and had taken great pains to apprize their fellow-townsmen by advertisement, the circulation of hand-bills, and in some instances, by personal application. Notwithstanding the responsibility was heavy upon me, and the prospect truly formidable, I was supported under it to my own admiration; well knowing Him in whom I had believed, by His heavenly grace, to be sufficient for me in all things. That Almighty power which is the crown and diadem of every religious assembly, was mercifully pleased to own our gathering, and this evidence of divine regard was acknowledged, I trust to His glory and praise.

I came here poor and low enough; and now how eminently have I witnessed the gracious dealings of the Lord for His great name's sake! My heart feels more and more constrained to trust with humble confidence in Him, and to cast all my care and burden upon Him alone; desiring earnestly that self may be so kept down, that the Divine glory may be the only motive to action, in my feeble endeavours to promote the precious cause of truth among my fellow-creatures, as from time to time, I may apprehend required of me.

13*th*.—Came to Nantucket by steamer on the 11th, and was kindly received by Prince Gardner and family, with whom I am now staying. Yesterday visited several sick and infirm persons; I trust the time was profitably spent. I tried the fleece last night until pretty late, and at length concluded it safest for me to propose that a public meeting should be held here this evening; and Friends uniting in this prospect, notice has been given of the same.

This morning attended the week-day meeting, and although a considerable body of valuable Friends was collected, everything was like iron and brass about us; my mouth was completely sealed up, until the meeting was about two-thirds over, when a Friend stood up in the

body of the meeting and expressed a few sentences. This was what had to be waited for, and now my bonds were broken asunder, and my tongued loosed. Thus "day unto day uttereth speech," and instruction is sealed to the mind, more and more to cast our care upon Him, who careth for us,—although wholly unperceived, until He is pleased to reveal Himself to our finite understanding.

Newport, Rhode Island.—Sixth Month 22nd.—Unable from a variety of circumstances to resume my pen until this day. The public meeting on the 13th proved a highly favoured season, and much larger than the one held at New Bedford. Thus was this, (to me) eventful day rendered memorable to the very close, through Him who doeth all things well. At an early hour the next morning embarked with a goodly company of Friends on our way to the New England Yearly Meeting.* *16th. (First-day)* — Attended the meetings for public worship, to which the town's-people flowed like a living stream. The meeting-house holds, I was informed, about two thousand people; and it was so filled before the appointed time, that it was difficult to reach the gallery. In the morning after our aged friend Elizabeth Coggeshall had broken the silence by a solemn petition to the throne of grace, I had largely to declare the way of life and salvation, to my own comfort and relief.

The Yearly Meeting was considered large; and was favoured at seasons throughout its sittings with the Divine presence. Although it comprises many living members, yet there was much found to mourn over, and render getting along very heavy work, when the true state of the Society was opened out by the answers to the queries. There were many present I believe, who could say with the prophet,—"I was bowed down at the hearing of it, I was dismayed at the seeing of it." An address was drawn up by the Committee of Correspondence, and sent down to the different Quarterly Meetings, containing much excellent advice, very applicable to the state of things, in many of the meetings. Non-attendance of meetings, want of love, and in several

* Held at Newport, Rhode Island.

instances an attachment to military parade, were the principal causes of mourning.

The last sitting of the Yearly Meeting was held yesterday the 21st, and many Friends left Newport last evening; but the foggy state of the weather having prevented the arrival of the usual steam-boats, some hundreds, I suppose, are still in the boarding-houses. To-day I am lying upon my oars, and resting a little; it is probable that Providence may be the next point of destination; but I am waiting to see what to-morrow will bring forth.

Whilst looking round a little at New Bedford, I met with Matthew Luce, a captain who has made several voyages up the Baltic; but what makes the circumstance worthy of record, and attaches me to him, is the fact of his having been a fellow-passenger from Cronstadt to England with my ever dear and lamented William, a few weeks before his decease. Finding, that during the voyage, Captain Luce had rendered much kind assistance to this darling object of my hopes in his weak and declining state, I could not but feel him greatly endeared to me. He spoke with much feeling of dear William's pious resignation, and humble but firm confidence in the arm of everlasting strength; and that although he had no care-taker with him, or previous acquaintance to lend a hand of help, yet he comforted himself in the belief, that this and every other lack would be supplied: telling Matthew Luce that he considered him an instance of what would be cast up for him in his friendless condition. Matthew Luce said he considered it quite a privilege to have been with him. To hear this from so authentic a source was indeed very comforting and cheering to my heart, in the midst of a renewed sense of the treasure I had lost; and to find that he had been thus cared for, when in a peculiar manner cast out, as it were, upon the wide world. Truly,—"as the mountains are round about Jerusalem, so is the Lord round about his people, from henceforth and for ever."

24*th*.—Attended a public meeting held at my request. The evening proved wet; and the gathering not so large as was expected, but remarkably solid: and I was favoured with an open time among them. My mind afterwards felt peaceful; and I think I never was more sensible

that help and strength had been administered in the needful time.

Lynn, 26*th*. — Attended the week-day meeting of Friends; where we had renewed cause to bow in humble reverence to the great Preserver of men, for the extension of His goodness to His poor unworthy creatures, wherewith he was pleased to comfort us together in an eminent degree. After a long silence, and a female Friend had expressed a few sentences, I had to revive the sealed promises to the wise, and to them that turn many to righteousness, in the words of Daniel the prophet; and to declare the sure way for every individual to be numbered with those, who inherit such transcendant glory.—"Behold, thus shall the man be blessed that feareth the Lord."—"The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom." —"The secret of the Lord is with them that fear Him; and He will show them His covenant" of light, life, and truth;—which, if obedience keep pace with knowledge, will make us wise in heart, and enable us so to let our "light shine before men, that others seeing our good works, may glorify" God in the day of their visitation; and be strengthened more and more to follow after righteousness, that their example also may produce the like happy result. Thus many, by our faithfulness, may be turned to righteousness; and the language of inspiration will be fulfilled,—"They that be wise, shall shine as the brightness of the firmament,and they that turn many to righteousness, as the stars for ever and ever." The Lord was with us of a truth, to the tendering of the hearts of many. Reached the house of Abijah Chase of Salem, that evening.

28*th*.—In company with several Friends, went to Boston. As no Friends reside there, we put up at the Marlborough, one of the first hotels in the city, a Temperance house, where we were well accommodated. In the evening attended a public meeting appointed for me: and for which arrangements had been carefully made beforehand. We met in a house belonging to Friends, nominally at half-past seven; but it was much later before the meeting became tolerably settled. I had largely to labour among them, but found it heavy work: J. D. Lang, a Friend from the State of Maine, was present, and

his company very acceptable to me, though he sat by me in silence.

29*th.*—Returned as far as Providence, in company with W. Jenkins; and next day the 30th, attended meetings there. In the forenoon it was a dull season;—one of those when deep calleth unto deep. E. Robson was present, but both of us were silent. The expectation of the people being too much upon the poor instruments, was wholly disappointed; while we sat as fools among them: I would that this might operate as a sign, that man can of himself do nothing.

In the afternoon a public meeting was appointed for Elizabeth Robson, and good attendance given: E. R. had the whole weight of the service; and was helped through to my admiration and rejoicing. The day altogether was one that confirmed me in my belief of the sympathy and fellow-feeling of the living members of the one body. In the morning we shared the humiliating but wholesome season together; and in the afternoon were favoured to share in the love of the Master, which flowed to both in an encouraging manner. Before E. R. had uttered one word, I believe I could have foretold what she would say; such is the fellowship of the gospel flowing from the one holy Head: and how precious is this unity, in the one Spirit, even as we are called in one hope of our calling,—in the one faith and baptism of the same gracious Lord. It was a highly favoured meeting.

Providence, Seventh Month 7th. (First-day.)—Attended both meetings, in which I had some service.

8*th.*—Had a public meeting with the inhabitants. It was not large, but proved a very solemn and favoured time. Few, I believe, were present, but such as had something of the true hunger begotten in them; and I trust that these were fed with food convenient for them. The Lord was my helper, in humble thankfulness be it spoken.

On reaching this place on the 5th, I received accounts of the declining health of my dear Charles. I trust that these things, although deeply painful, may not be suffered to trouble me, nor hinder the service of the blessed Master; but rather have a tendency to promote his cause, by keeping me clothed with humility, and watchful to-

wards Him in His fear and in His love; who so often filleth my heart with His praise.

10*th.*—In company with Anna A. Jenkins, attended the meeting at a public school belonging to Friends, and had some counsel to offer, which perhaps might hurt neither teachers nor scholars.

11*th.*—Shortly after the week-day meeting gathered, a thunder-storm came on, and lasted for some time in a very awful manner, doing considerable damage in the neighbourhood. Had some service of an encouraging nature to the little ones. In the evening, at a public meeting held in a Temperance boarding house. It was well attended, and proved a comforting season, although commenced under feelings of much strippedness. Some sailors were present, and many of the wives and connexions of seafaring men.

12*th.*—Accompanied by Reuben Peckham proceeded to Lynn.

14*th. (First-day.)*—Had a public meeting in the evening, which was well attended and proved an open time; utterance being freely given. It was cause of thankfulness with me, and the more so, as I had felt unwell during the afternoon, and for a time had been doubtful whether I could attend the meeting. But my gracious Master was pleased not only to raise me up for the work, but abundantly to strengthen and furnish for it, beyond what has often been vouchsafed to me.

17*th.*—Reached Portland by six o'clock A. M. accompanied by Samuel Boyce. Arrangements were immediately made for holding a public meeting that evening. It was smaller than anticipated, but on the whole was a solid comfortable season. I found it very hard and exercising work to bear a testimony to the Truth, under existing circumstances at this place. Lodged at Peter Neild's, expecting to leave in the morning, but on rising did not feel satisfied without sitting with Friends of Portland in their own meeting, although most of them had attended the public meeting.

19*th.*—Left early by stage for North Berwick, passing in the course of the day, a large Shaker's settlement, and were favoured to reach the house of John D. Lang, the same evening. Since being in Portland my mind has

been much turned towards an infant people residing in Nova Scotia, who make profession with us; and I felt freedom to make several inquiries as to the best mode of getting there; but did not see how I could proceed farther without a suitable companion. At one time, I intended passing through North Berwick, and endeavouring to reach Newbury Port the same night, but not feeling quite easy to do this, I concluded to stop there accordingly.

The next day, the 20th, I found that J. D. Lang had been looking towards visiting Nova Scotia in the fall of the year, and had a certificate from his Monthly Meeting, granted some months ago, still in his possession. It soon appeared that he had given up to accompany me. To myself this was a confirming evidence that my going to Nova Scotia was in the ordering of the great Master, who had thus led me in a way that I knew not, and in paths that I had not heard of, to a companion of his own choosing; of whose intentions, and having a certificate in readiness, I had not had the slightest intimation. Our hearts in this thing soon became as the heart of one man, bound together in the bonds of the everlasting gospel.

J. D. L. accompanied us to Newbury Port, where efforts were made to arrange for a public meeting to be held the next day; but it appeared that so many meetings of the Universalists and Methodists would occur that day, that it would be unwise to attempt it, however much desired. As I had done all that I could to obtain a meeting with the inhabitants of this port, having purposely come about eighty miles to the place, my mind felt easy on the subject.

21*st*.—Attended the meeting at West Newbury, where the neighbours came in, and a comfortable season was vouchsafed to us. In the afternoon travelled about twenty-eight miles to Lynn, and reached the house of Isaac Basset. The next day took leave of J. D. Lang and went to Providence.

24*th*.—Attended the Monthly Meeting, in which I had to bear testimony to the ample and simple means of salvation bestowed on every mortal, through Christ the Saviour, who died that we might live. In the evening went by railroad to Stonington, and there embarked in the steam-boat, with two hundred and seventy-five passengers for New York.

25*th.*—Arrived at John Clapp's in good time this morning, and after attending to some needful arrangements, left the city the same day, viâ Providence and Lynn to Boston, where we arrived on the 27th, and prepared to embark in the *Boundary* sailing-packet for East Port, which is the boundary port of the United States, my friend J. D. Lang having arrived.

Left Boston on the 28th, and entered the passage towards East Port on the 30th. Saw several Indians in their canoes fishing, as we entered the Narrows. In the hope of meeting the steam-boat on her way from East Port to "St." John's, in the British province of New Brunswick, had our luggage prepared and brought on deck. The paddle of the steamer was heard for some time before she could be seen, the fog was so dense; but her captain told me afterwards, that he saw our mast-heads above the fog, and had steered for us. We got safely on board the steamer, to my rejoicing, having scarcely ever been more uncomfortable, or suffered more for want of rest, than while in this packet. Reached the city of "St." John's the same evening. Here we found two members, and several more or less connected with the Society, in all about twenty persons, with whom we had a sitting. My companion broke the silence, and we were afterwards favoured with an open time. I trust that some were encouraged to hold on their way, and the lukewarm and indifferent, as well as those who had been wholly neglecting the Lord's talent, were warned and entreated to avail themselves of their day of visitation. Returned to the steamer, and started at midnight for Windsor, in Nova Scotia. Arrived there early next day, and proceeded by stage to Halifax, which we reached the same night, the 31st.

Eighth Month 3*rd.*—Reached the neighbourhood of Picton, and when within three miles of the town, a Friend seeing our garb as we passed, came out of his shop by the way side to greet us. This was James Kitching, and we had intended stopping at the house of his brother, some distance further on; but finding that he was from home, we at once concluded to accept the hearty invitation of J. K., whose cottage was hard by. The father of our host, who made one of this large family and their apprentices

in the shoe-making business, was originally a member of our Society, and had emigrated from Whitehaven seventeen years ago. In the evening after a portion of the scriptures was read, we had a religious opportunity with the family, and were comforted together.

4*th*.—Sat down with the little remnant that meet regularly at J. Kitching's. Several persons attended, until every seat was occupied. Notwithstanding there was a precious seed in this company, we found it hard work to wrestle against those who are making only a lifeless profession of the Truth, and are led away by the pursuit of the perishing things of this world, to the neglect of those which are of eternal consequence. It was however a season, in which the Lord's faithful children were contrited together.

In the evening attended a public meeting in the meeting-house of the Seceders from the Scotch kirk, for which arrangements had been made the day before. For some time it was heavy work to labour amongst them, but towards the latter part, the blessed Truth had the dominion; and although some went out, yet a number of the weightier spirits seemed loath to separate from under the precious covering that prevailed.

5*th*.—Early in the morning the stage stopped to take us up, when we took leave of this family, who had become dear to us in the love of the gospel. J. Kitching accompanied us the first stage, where we breakfasted; and before separating, we were refreshed together in that love which makes one in the Lord. Travelled hard till nightfall, and got to Halifax by one P. M. the next day. The 6th, having previously engaged horses, after dining on wild raspberries and milk, we resumed our journey in an open waggon, and reached Windsor about midnight.

7*th*.—Left Windsor in good time, but our progress was greatly retarded, by having to take in tow a vessel, which had only just been launched. Soon after ten at night, the fog became so dense as to oblige us to anchor until daylight, when we again pursued our way, still towing the other vessel, and reached the town called St. John's, by ten o'clock A. M. of the 8th. We were kindly received at our former quarters, and arrangements were immediately commenced to procure a meeting with the inhabitants the

same evening: the Wesleyan Methodist meeting-house was cheerfully granted for the purpose. At the first collecting of this meeting, things appeared not a little discouraging; but before its conclusion our compassionate Lord condescended to magnify his power amongst us in a remarkable manner, and to own it with the life-giving influence of His heavenly presence.

9*th.*—Early this morning we again embarked in the steamer for Annapolis on the other side of the bay, touching at the village of Digby by the way. About twenty-five miles farther is Annapolis, where we were favoured to land safely that afternoon. This neighbourhood and for many miles up the river, is thickly studded with farm-houses, at the foot of a high mountain. On landing we were met by an individual connected with Friends, who eventually took us to his residence, about fourteen miles up the country.

10*th.*—In the evening attended a public meeting in the Wesleyan meeting-house at Bridgetown: being a Seventh-day, and the hay-harvest in progress, it was small; but a comfortable season was vouchsafed, and the blessed Truth was freely declared to the people.

11*th.* (*First-day.*)—Rising early, we crossed the North Mountain to Chute's Cove, where a number of people were collected, some of whom profess with us. Both my companion and myself had a searching testimony to bear among the latter, and an awakening one also to others present, amongst whom were some tender spirits. As another meeting had been appointed to be held at Bridgetown that afternoon, there was but little more time than was necessary to take some refreshment, and again to cross the mountain. We were favoured to arrive in time for the meeting, for which the use of the Baptist meeting house had been granted: this proved the largest meeting we had in these parts, and was mercifully owned by the Master's presence. Both J. D. Lang and myself had largely to declare the word among them, and I believe we both felt peaceful minds afterwards.

17*th.*—We reached the house of my dear companion J. D. Lang, at North Berwick, I trust with feelings of thankfulness for the many deliverances we had witnessed in the course of our journey. A considerable quantity of

religious tracts, and the writings of Friends were circulated, and in some instances deposited as libraries, along our route.

18*th.* (*First-day.*)—At the meeting at North Berwick, to which several seeking people came: we were favoured with a blessed season. In the afternoon attended a funeral at Dover, thirteen miles distant. The meeting was not held at the regular place, but at the house of the deceased.

21*st.*—The Quarterly Meeting commenced with a large meeting for worship, in which I had some labour: it was the first yet held in a new meeting-house.

22*nd.*—Feeling bound to attend the Ohio Yearly Meeting, and having the opportunity of accompanying William Deweese, we set out together this day, and reached New York on the 25th; the latter part of the journey in the steamer *Lexington*. I was no stranger to the character of this vessel, and had on a former occasion avoided travelling by her; but now I had no time to lose, and trusting in that Almighty power, which has so often been my preserver, we were favoured to reach New York without accident. Here I found distressing accounts from my family. In addition to the continued indisposition of dear Charles, it appears that the health of my son Joshua had so much declined, as to oblige him to return to England. I cannot but feel tried under this increased affliction, but I desire to be resigned to the will of my heavenly Father, in the belief that he doth indeed not willingly afflict the children of men. Attended the forenoon meeting for worship, and was strengthened to declare among them the way of salvation from sin.

On the 26th, we reached the house of my kind friend Ellis Yarnall of Philadelphia. Whilst here, I felt best satisfied to write to my children, holding out the probability of my returning to England after the Ohio Yearly Meeting, if the way should appear to open for this measure with clearness. Reached Harrisburgh, the capital of the State of Pennsylvania, the next day, and from this place proceeded by packet drawn by three horses on the Pennsylvania canal, along the beautiful valleys of the Allegany mountains, eventually crossing the Susquehanna river by a long and well constructed

bridge. Beyond Lewistown the valleys become wider and better cultivated, and the general appearance of things strikingly different to what we had lately seen in the State of Maine, in New Brunswick, and Nova Scotia.

28*th.*—After a night disturbed by passing many locks, we are still winding our way through beautiful valleys, backed although rather more distantly by well-wooded mountains.

On the 29th, reached Hollydaysville, where the railway over the Allegany mountains begins. We were drawn sometimes by locomotive, at others by stationary engines, then by horses, and eventually descended an incline, and again proceeded by canal to Pittsburgh. From this town we proceeded by steamer along the Ohio river to Mount Pleasant, where we arrived on the 1st of Ninth Month. The Yearly Meeting is held here.

Ninth Month 2nd.—The Yearly Meeting at large commenced, when my certificates were read, and I had to give the meeting some account of the Lord's merciful dealings with me. The Yearly Meeting ended on the 7th, and was favoured to its close with great solemnity. In the last sitting of the Select Meeting, I had some remarks to make on the great responsibility of those in the station of elders, who, if not anointed from on high, are incapable of discerning from whence the ministry proceeds; and to add my belief, that there is a ministry growing in the Society, which, if not checked, would fill the minds of the hearers with things like "the abomination of desolation," spoken of by the prophet,—that would stand in the holy place, where it ought not,—in the place of vital religion,—and would make truly desolate and destitute of the presence of the Lord. It was the elders of Ephesus who were sent for, and charged to take heed to themselves, and to the flock, by the great apostle. Set out the same evening in company with several Friends, on my return towards Philadelphia, which we reached on the 12th, after a fatiguing journey.

15*th. (First-day.)*—In the forenoon meeting I was largely engaged in declaring the blessed Truth. I had taken cold, and my cough troubled me during the early part of the meeting; but on standing up, to my admiration, it was no more felt.

16*th.*—Went to Burlington, and spent the night at the house of dear S. and R. Grellet. In the evening many Friends came in; and we were comforted together by the life-giving presence of the gracious Master.

22*nd.* *(First-day.)*—In the forenoon my mouth was opened, and my heart enlarged to declare, in the love of the gospel, the new and only way to the everlasting kingdom. In the afternoon, silent.

25*th.*—At a marriage in Twelfth Street meeting-house, Philadelphia, which was numerously attended by the public; I was strengthened to declare the day of the Lord amongst them, and to show that it is not to the mighty or the noble, not to the wise or the prudent, that the things of the heavenly kingdom are revealed; but to the weak and despised, to the unassuming and child-like: rehearsing the beautiful and instructive acknowledgment of our blessed Saviour,—"I thank thee, O! Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes: even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight."

26*th.*—Took leave of Friends as extensively as time and circumstances would permit; and the next day proceeded to New York. Here I examined the *British Queen* steamer, and the *Mediator* packet ship; and concluded, for various reasons, to take passage in the latter.

Tenth Month 1*st.*—Finally embarked for England. Several kind friends accompanied us as far as the vessel was towed out to sea, returning with the steamer. There are forty passengers on board, twenty of whom are in the cabin. May the Lord preserve me in watchfulness and prayer amongst them.

We were favoured to get sight of the Scilly Islands on the sixteenth day, when the wind changed and blew strong from the eastward, so that we did not anchor on the Mother Bank till the 23rd instant. The company on board proved one of the most agreeable that has ever fallen to my lot.

Left the vessel at Portsmouth, and after writing to inquire where the wreck of my family were sojourning, crossed the Isle of Wight to Niton, where I was com-

forted by the particulars I gleaned of the close of my precious William; and I had an opportunity of acknowledging personally, the Christian kindness of several whose hearts had been opened to administer to the comfort of his last days. Spent a solitary evening at the hotel, and occupied the chamber whence his immortal spirit had returned unto God who gave it, purified I humbly trust, through the blood of Jesus, and prepared for an admittance into the everlasting kingdom.

CHAPTER XXII.

ALARMING ILLNESS OF HIS SON CHARLES, THEN IN FRANCE, PROCEEDS THITHER, DEATH OF HIS SON—RETURNS TO ENGLAND—AGAIN SAILS FOR NEW YORK—LAST ILLNESS AND DEATH—CONCLUDING REMARKS.

On the 25th of Tenth Month, I learned that my children had left England, with the idea of wintering in the South of France; but that my dear Charles had been so much exhausted with travelling before they reached Paris, that the hope of continuing the journey had been relinquished. I also learned that they were accompanied by our true friends Wilson and Charlotte Burgess, which was quite a relief to my mind. Having now accomplished my mournful purpose, and visited at Southampton the grave of my first-born, I should have proceeded immediately in the track of my children; but that several circumstances compelled me first to return to London. This detained me till the 29th, when having obtained my passport, I went down to Dover by the night mail, intending to join the steamer for Calais in the morning. The day, however, proved so stormy, that it was with some difficulty I could procure a boat to take me on board the steamer, at that time hovering off the Foreland. At length I succeeded in hiring a stout boat with five men, who were willing to make the attempt. The risk was not a little; but on viewing the storm, and remembering the situation of my drooping child, who had so faithfully shared all my toils and cares during our long voyage in the Pacific, the thought of danger was at once outbalanced; and trusting in Him who knew my motive for making the attempt, at a suitable moment we launched into the surf, and were favoured to get well off the strand; and the steamer being judiciously placed to enable us to reach her, I was favoured to gain her deck without accident. After

leaving the coast the captain soon found that we could not fetch Calais, and very prudently bore away at once for Boulogne.

After a lonely winterly journey, arrived in Paris late in the evening of the 31st of Tenth Month, and the next day was favoured to reach the bed-side of my sinking Charles, in the little town of "St." Germains, twelve miles distant. The peaceful feeling that pervades the atmosphere around him is, I humbly trust, an earnest that the arms of everlasting mercy are open to receive him, when the awful change shall come. I found him apparently in a far advanced stage of consumption, and my dear Joshua looking very much shrunk, and altogether in very delicate health, although not actually confined to the house.

Extract from a Letter to SARAH SMITH.

St. Germain's [so called,] near Paris, Eleventh Month 2nd, 1839.

—— Little did I then anticipate that it would ever be my lot to address thee from this neighbourhood; but I was very unexpectedly prompted to look towards crossing the Atlantic, if only for a season, should the way fairly open after the close of the Ohio Yearly Meeting; and the step be approved by my American friends. During the first sittings of the above meeting, I felt discouraged, and doubts arose in my mind whether I could possibly clear myself towards that large assembly so as to feel at liberty when it was over, as I had been prevented by the lowness of the water in the Ohio from arriving in time for the two public meetings held previously to the sitting down of the Yearly Meeting; but at the conclusion an opportunity was afforded me of seeing the whole body of Friends collected under one roof, I suppose two thousand persons; when to my unexpected consolation, a most relieving season was vouchsafed. During the last sitting, I had a full opportunity with women Friends, and afterwards in the men's meeting, before the concluding minute was read. I now felt perfect freedom to leave Mount Pleasant, and proceeded eastward the same night. ——

We have the comfort of having our friends Wilson and

Charlotte Burgess with us; so that amidst our sorrows we are still favoured with many blessings which sweeten the bitter cup; and when I reflect that I have not to grieve for the misconduct of my children as having brought this affliction upon themselves, my heart is humbled under a sense that the present dispensation is of the Lord;—desiring to bow very low before Him, and believing that it is by these things we live, and in all these things is the life of our spirits. Our dear friends will I hope remember us, as I am sure we stand in need of the prayers and sympathy of the faithful, if ever any poor creatures did, under the accumulated trials of a dark and cloudy day; that so we may be preserved in humble resignation to the unerring will of our heavenly Father, and that others may see by our patience, the blessed effects of the power of the Spirit of the Lord Jesus "in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity."———

[The following sketch of Charles Wheeler's illness and death occurs in his Father's MS. Journal.]

Although my dear Charles had been nearly two years in a critical state of health, and for the last six or eight months rapidly declining, he did not appear *entirely* to lose the idea of recovery, until about a fortnight before his decease: of its great *uncertainty* he was fully aware. In the early part of his illness he would say, 'if it be the will of my heavenly Father, I could enjoy life a little longer:' but in its more advanced stages he would acknowledge, that 'life is no longer desirable, under such an accumulation of suffering: but the will of the Lord be done.' About twelve days before his close, he said to me, 'I am going,—I see it plainly;' and then adverted to a check which had occurred in his disorder, and had been the means of allowing him to see all his family; speaking of it as a mark of Divine condescension, quite incomprehensible to himself. 'It is one of the links in that chain of providences, with which I have been so marvellously encompassed.'

He used frequently to compare his own case with those of others in the family who had preceded him. Speaking

about this time of dear William, he observed, 'I know little about his death, but I know how he lived; he fed on heavenly food. O! that I were as much prepared for the change as he was,—to him, to die was but to sink into his Father's arms;'—adding with much emphasis, 'blessed are those who can die as he did.'

He often spoke of his own unworthiness, saying, that his only dependence was on the mercy of God in Christ Jesus; and on this he seemed to rest without a sense of fear. Once or twice, when referring to the composure he felt, he said, 'surely I am not self-deceived;' shortly adding, 'O! no; it cannot be that the mercy, which has so signally followed me up to the present time, should now forsake me.'

On one occasion he said to his sister, 'heed not the world, nor the things thereof: I wish I had heeded it less;' and once when in great bodily extremity, he exclaimed, 'here is the end of pride!'

He frequently engaged in fervent prayer for patience and support, for the pardon of all transgressions, and a release in the Lord's time. Three days before his death, he was heard to say,—'"Bless the Lord, O my soul! and forget not all His benefits." Even though he slay me, I will trust in Him. Blessed be His name, He has granted me a little relief. One crowning mercy yet remains; and for this I desire to wait his time. O! grant me grace for this. Thou, O Lord! art full of compassion and gracious, or thou wouldest long ago have abandoned a wretch like me: even yet I feel my proneness to rebel. O! let thy Holy Spirit support me through the few fearful hours that may remain; and grant me patience to wait thy time. I ask it for the blessed Saviour's sake.'

A text on which he frequently dwelt, was that in Revelations, "They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more," &c.; and perhaps his own sufferings from thirst, which were at times distressing, led him to realize more fully the blessedness of those thus set free from the infirmities of the flesh. A few days before his death, when parched with fever, and much exhausted, he exclaimed, 'I shall soon be where all is rest, and more than rest,' referring to the passage, "Eye hath not seen," &c.

One evening when in a very suffering state, he re-

marked, that this was a new kind of conflict to him,—he had long been accustomed to mental conflict; but such positive physical suffering, he had neither known nor imagined. On being asked which he thought the more difficult to endure, he replied, that in his present state, he greatly preferred the contest allotted him; but that, when in health, when the mind was vigorous, he thought the mental struggle less severe.

On the morning of the 5th (of Second Month, 1840,) we thought him very near his close; but he afterwards revived, and seemed disappointed at being again delayed. On the same day, when in severe pain, he supplicated thus: 'O! Lord, if it please thee, grant me a little patience, for without thy holy aid, it is past all mortal endurance.' As evening approached, he seemed to have an extraordinary dread of the coming night, exclaiming despondingly, 'another night, another night;' and truly it proved a season of severe conflict, though the last of mortal suffering. About nine P. M. a change was noticed, which he soon detected himself,—saying, that he thought he was dying; and shortly afterwards, 'O! Lord, if it please thy righteous will, release me. Blessed be thy holy name!' A short time before the close, on being asked if he felt peaceful, he replied calmly, 'I feel no fear.' He bade us separately farewell; and I believe his last connected expressions were,—'You are very kind—the Lord Almighty bless you.' The pains of the body seemed all he had to contend with: the struggle continued until four A. M., when he quietly expired, being apparently sensible till within a few minutes of the close.

In the course of the illness of my dearest Charles, and the frequent opportunities we had of close converse on subjects of the highest importance, he never once brought into view his having forsaken all from an apprehension of duty to accompany me on the long voyage in the South Seas. To have reminded him of a sacrifice which had cost him so much, and which I humbly believe was not only called for, but accepted at his hands, by Him who had prepared the offering, would but have raised a feeling of honest indignation in his mind,—that an idea should be entertained of any merit being due to him, or that he had any act of dedication to lean upon, or to plead his cause.

On the contrary, he seemed truly to possess nothing of his own, but the infirmities incident to the frailty of human nature; often dwelling on his own unworthiness of the least of all the Lord's mercies extended to him, and alluding to them in humblest gratitude. Doubtless it was best that he should cherish so humble a view of himself; and I never found it my place to throw out any hint (of a contrary kind;) preferring to commit him into the hands of Him who judgeth righteously, whose compassions fail not, and who never faileth freely to forgive all that have nothing of their own to pay unto their Lord,—who are truly poor and of a contrite spirit.

[The remains were removed to Southampton, and] interred within a few feet of those of his beloved brother William: dear Maria S. Fox kneeling at the grave side, offered the tribute of thanksgiving and praise to that gracious Being, who had thus prepared and taken to Himself, him for whom we mourned. The meeting afterwards proved a solemn, and I trust, an instructive season, wherein the life-giving presence of the great Master was felt.

My attention was next turned towards finding a suitable situation for my dear Joshua, whose declining health rendered it needful to remove into some more sheltered part of the island; and the west being strongly recommended, we made our way towards Bristol, and succeeded in obtaining apartments for him at the Hot Wells, (sheltered by the stupendous cliffs from which the place above takes the name of Clifton,) which were considered very suitable for him in his present weak state.

Third Month 8th. (First-day.)—Attended both meetings at Bristol; and in the forenoon had to declare the Truth among them, to my own relief.

Feeling my mind attracted towards Balby Monthly Meeting, I set out in time to attend the Select Meeting at Sheffield on the 11th: I was comforted in beholding the addition that had been made to their numbers during my absence; and my mouth was opened amongst them, in an encouraging manner. Next day attended the Monthly Meeting. In the meeting for worship that preceded it, my heart was enlarged towards my dear

friends; and the way of life and salvation was proclaimed amongst them.

15*th.*—Attended the meetings at Dewsbury, in both which my mouth was largely opened.

23*rd.*—Bristol. Through all the vicissitudes which have of late attended my tribulated path, the inhabitants of the western world have been renewedly brought to my remembrance, under a feeling of that love, which would gather all mankind into the fold of rest and peace,—though I have felt no liberty to take any decided measures till lately: but the way has within the last few days so remarkably opened, as to remove every doubt from my mind of the propriety of making preparations for my departure thitherwards.

27*th.*—At the week day meeting in Bristol, I stood up with the words,—"Then restored I, that which I took not away;" stating that these expressions had attracted the attention of my mind; and although the mysterious language of inspiration, I believed they might be understood by all who had passed through the great work of regeneration. The Lord Jesus restoreth the heavenly image in man, which was lost by transgression: and which the shedding of His precious blood had placed all in a capacity to have restored to them, who believe in Him, and are willing to submit to the power of His Holy Spirit in their own hearts. The poor of the Lord's people were encouraged; and the sons and daughters of Zion strengthened to trust in their God.

28*th.*—Took leave of dear Joshua,* and accompanied by my dear S., went to Portsmouth to meet the ship, which was to leave London on the 29th. The next being First-day, knowing of no Friends residing in this town, we remained at home, and enjoyed a quiet and peaceful Sabbath together before the Lord,—something like a little passover before the painful moment of separation which was fast approaching; it brought with it the bitter cup of which we had before so largely partaken, but now under the pressure of more sorrowful circumstances.

* His son Joshua survived till the following spring: his decease took place at Clifton on the 29th of Third Month, 1841. He was mercifully permitted towards the close of life, to enjoy a trembling, but we trust a well-founded hope of acceptance.

30*th.*—Embarked in the *Mediator;* it was late before our final departure, and grew dusk soon after sailing.

31*st.*—Worked all day against a head-wind, of sufficient strength to confine the major part of our company to their berths. To myself, I seemed like a poor outcast among them; and could I not have felt something like a foundation cause for being there, sufficiently firm for me to ground an appeal in brokenness of spirit to Him from whom nothing can be hid, there would have been nothing for the feet of the mind to rest upon. It is no light matter, at my age, to embark single-handed for the American shore; but I have been so mercifully led, guided, and sustained through all my late trials, that I dare not for a moment doubt my being in my right allotment; and particularly because of the peace and love which have not unfrequently been permitted to flow through my heart, since having again forsaken all that is dear to me in this world for the blessed Master's sake.

Fourth Month 2*nd.*—Wind to the eastward of south, and in the night became still more favourable, when all sail was crowded to the breeze, and every advantage taken of it. Eventually it became a strong breeze from the north-east. The ship now made rapid progress, and but for an old north-west swell, the motion would have been comparatively trifling. On the 3rd we were found to be in longitude 13° 30′ west; and now the 4th, being Seventh day afternoon, we are still rolling on with a fair wind, though its strength has somewhat lessened. Yesterday before breakfast the sea made its way through the cabin windows, some of which had been raised for the admission of air. Happily no material quantity of water got in, though it ran to the far end of the main cabin; my cabin escaped, which I consider a privilege and favour.

Here our dear father laid down the pen never to resume it, except to address a few trembling lines to his children from his sick bed. It appears that after he had been about a week at sea, he took cold, which affected the chest, and was accompanied by great oppression of the breathing, and inability to use a recumbent position. As

there was no surgeon on board, he could not have the medical treatment which his symptoms so urgently demanded, and though in every other respect he received the utmost attention and kindness, his disorder gained a fearful ascendancy during the three following weeks which he remained on ship-board. A few days before the vessel reached her destination, he was so extremely ill that his fellow-passengers doubted his surviving till they entered their port. He had himself, however, no apprehensions on this head; and on the 28th of Fourth Month, he was landed at New York, in a very feeble and suffering state. He was immediately taken to the house of his kind friend John Clapp, from whose family he was favoured to receive the most unremitting and tender care, during the remainder of his illness.

The change from the inconvenience of ship-board, to comfortable accommodations on shore, combined with the tender assiduities of the dear friends around him, appeared to be refreshing to him. The night after landing he rested well, and the next morning seemed so much better, that those around him felt quite cheered respecting him. Towards the evening of the 29th, however, he became greatly oppressed, and lay in a very suffering state. After passing a restless night, in the morning of the 30th the oppression returned with increased violence; and from the coldness of the extremities, and the state of exhaustion to which he was reduced, it was thought by his medical attendant that he could not long survive. On being informed of this by a dear friend, he replied calmly, 'All has been done that could be done; only write to my dear children how it is. The work has been going on with the day. Love to all my friends on this side of the Atlantic, as well as the other. It is a great thing to be clear of pain. I want nothing but the love of my heavenly Father, and I witness it.' After remaining for some time in this state, the oppression gradually subsided, and he enjoyed some hours of tranquil sleep. This refreshed him much, and towards evening he had so far rallied, as himself to address a few lines to his distant family; they are written in a very tremulous and almost illegible hand. In these he remarks, 'I have been landed a very sick man in this city; but my most gracious Lord hath borne me

up in a marvellous manner through a multitude of distress and difficulty, for His great name's sake, and for His dear Son's sake;—to His own everlasting praise be it spoken:' —thus evincing, that thankfulness and love to our heavenly Father, so conspicuously the covering of his mind in the time of health, still pervaded his spirit on the bed of languishing.

For several succeeding days his disorder fluctuated greatly: at times he appeared very comfortable, and then again laboured under great oppression. On the night of the first of Fifth Month, a friend sat up with him, whom he had not seen since his return to England the preceding autumn. On observing him, he said, 'Ah ——, I have had a suffering time since I left America; but I have been mercifully directed as to an hair's breadth.' Then spreading out his hand, he added, 'Yes, plainly, as if I had had a scroll of directions in my hand.' Towards morning, when apparently in a very exhausted state, he said to those around him, 'Well now, my dear friends, I want to be left entirely alone with my heavenly Father;' and several times during his illness he made a similar request.

On the 2nd, he was bled from the arm, which produced considerable relief to the breathing: the following day the bleeding was repeated, and again the oppression appeared to be diminished by it. During the operation, he remarked to his medical attendant,—'without blood, there is no cleansing.' Dr. Willet replied,—it is "the blood of Jesus that cleanseth us from all our sins." 'Yes,' said his patient, 'but not in our natural unregenerate state: when we are in the light, as He is in the light, then I believe it will cleanse us from all our sins. Yes,' he added, with much emphasis, 'I know it.'

Through the day he appeared more comfortable; but in the evening the oppression returned, accompanied by great prostration of strength. This continued nearly an hour; when a little revived, he said, 'I have had a hard struggle. At one time I did not know but it was the cold sweat of death.'

On the 4th, 5th and 6th, he remained in a suffering state. On the morning of the latter day, after making some arrangements respecting his papers, &c., he said he

had now done with the things of this world; he had no wish to live, but for the sake of his family, and that the Lord Jesus might live in him: He had been his guide for many years, and he had declared His name unto thousands: he had no hope but in Him:—He was the same Lord over all. It was not the prospect of an immediate release that led him to speak thus, for he did not see that; but it was in his heart, and he must say it while he had words. Many other remarks he made at this time, in a very impressive manner, and with a strong voice. After this he had some refreshing sleep.

In the afternoon of the same day, he received a visit from his beloved friend Stephen Grellet, which proved an occasion of deep interest. His mind seemed to overflow with admiration of the goodness of his dear Lord and Master, which had constantly attended him in his varied pilgrimage. He recapitulated briefly what had occurred since he left America, alluding to the consolation he received at the death of his beloved Charles, when he was made to rejoice in the midst of grief. He added, 'the Lord is good to them that love and fear His name. Great things hath He done for me,—things so wonderfully marvellous, that they would hardly be believed were I to tell of them. If I have experienced any shortness in my journey Zionward, it has been on my side, not the Lord's,—for He has been faithful, and his promises have been and remain to be, yea and amen for ever. Whilst I was on ship-board, and thought by some of the passengers to be nigh unto death, how did the Lord appear for my help and consolation; and since I have been in this chamber, how has He appeared for my comfort in the night season; and I have been enabled to sing hymns of praise and thanksgiving unto Him. When the ship made her soundings, I made my soundings upon that Rock, whose foundation is from everlasting to everlasting. I saw that I should be safely landed, though extremely weak in body; and I was enabled to say, should the Lord see meet to raise me up, and strengthen me still to show forth His wonderful works to the children of men, or cut the work short in righteousness, "Thy will O God, not mine be done." I do not see how the end will be.'

He spoke of the last First-day he had spent in England,

and of the precious season before the Lord, which he had then enjoyed. It was like a little passover, but whether unto death or unto suffering, he could not tell.

For several succeeding days, the disorder appeared very stationary: he lay in a languid state, but apparently suffering little positive pain. On the 11th, he received a letter of sympathy from a kind friend, who remarked that he felt a very comfortable assurance that the Lord would still continue to protect him, &c. The dear sufferer said that he was too ill to write himself, but wished those about him to do so, and to tell his friend that he believed it would be as he had said; adding, 'I feel the Saviour to be near me every hour of the day.'

After this period, considerable mitigation of the symptoms occurred, and for two successive weeks, he appeared to be slowly gaining ground, so that his anxious friends were ready to take comfort in the hope that his life might yet be spared to them. For a time, he seems himself to have participated in this expectation; and a very cheering letter written on the 13th to his children, led them also to indulge the hope, that the bitter cup might for the present be permitted to pass from them. His full heart seemed to overflow with the love and praises of the Lord, for all His rich mercies towards him; and in the feeling of some degree of returning health, he was afresh animated to pursue with unreserved dedication of soul, the service of his dear Lord and Master.

On the 19th, he addressed a few lines to his family for the last time, which breathed the same spirit of encouragement and thankfulness as his preceding letter. The following is an extract.

MY VERY DEAR CHILDREN.

I wrote you a few lines on the 13th instant, by the *Stephen Whitney* packet-ship for Liverpool; and again, through Him who died that we might live, I am enabled this day to send you a still better account of myself; at which, with me you will rejoice in the true fear that keepeth the heart clean. You must accept it in the gross, as in the present state of my convalescence it is impossible for me to delineate one-half of the Lord's gracious dealings with me. —— I trust I shall be able to ride out for air

daily in a short time. The weather here is very hot, which makes writing more irksome to me than it otherwise would be; but I know that you will make every allowance for me. Scatter abroad my love, wherever you go,—take as much as you can desire for yourselves, and believe me,

Your ever affectionate father,

DANIEL WHEELER.

At this time he had rallied so much, as for several days to be able to rise and be dressed, and to walk with assistance into an adjoining room; and the improvement in his appearance, and the cheerfulness of his spirits quite encouraged those around him. Soon, however, these pleasing prospects were overcast, and the last fondly cherished hope of his restoration to health entirely faded. On the 26th of Fifth Month, he appeared more feeble than before; and after passing a most restless night, on the morning of the 27th, he sank into a state of insensibility, accompanied by a convulsive movement of the hands and feet: in this situation he continued several hours. When partially recovered from it, a kind friend called to see him. On being told she was present, he held out his hand, saying, 'thou seest a poor creature.' 'Yes,' she replied; 'but rich I trust in the Master's favour.' 'If it were not so,' said he, 'I should be poor indeed.' She was afterwards engaged in supplication by the bed-side, fervently imploring the continuance of Divine love and mercy towards him; but he seemed scarcely sufficiently collected to be aware of what was passing around him. Towards evening, the stupor was in degree relieved, and he passed a more tranquil night than the preceding one.

In the morning of the 29th, he laboured for some time under great oppression of the breathing; when this had a little subsided, our friend Jacob Green, who was about returning to his home in Ireland, called to take leave of him. At the conclusion of their interview, our dear father observed that as to himself, he had no doubt:—he had the same faith that had been with him through life, founded upon the gospel of Christ; and which enabled him to say with the apostle, "nevertheless I live, yet not

I, but Christ liveth in me; and the life which I now live, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me."

30*th.*—This morning, in reference to the ship in which he had come over from England having again sailed, he remarked that the captain had gone and left him; but added in a moment, 'if my heavenly Father cares for me, I shall fear nothing: He will carry me safely through:—He is my only hope.'

On the 3rd of Sixth Month, a friend from a distance who had come to see him, remarking how glad he should be in any way to help him, our dear father replied,—'I have but one Helper, but He is Almighty.'

On the 6th, when his kind hostess entered the room, he was engaged in vocal prayer, but she was unable to collect much that he said. On some friends who were leaving the city calling to bid him farewell, he said they must leave him in the hands of his heavenly Father,—to his love and mercy. He could not tell half what had been done for his soul; but the time might come when it would be proclaimed as on the house-tops. On a previous occasion, when the same friends were seated by his bed-side, one of them remarked, that it was a great favour to see him preserved in so much calmness and quietness. 'Ah, he rejoined, you *would* think so, if you knew all;' at other times he intimated the favoured state of his mind.

For several succeeding days he remained in a state of great feebleness and exhaustion, apparently without much suffering, except from occasional oppression of the breathing, and generally in a drowsy state; so that he entered very little into conversation of any kind. During this period, he took extremely little nourishment; and his weakness increased rapidly in consequence. From the state of the mouth and throat, he could not swallow without pain and difficulty; and on one occasion as one of his affectionate attendants was urging him to take something,—saying she thought he stood in need of it, he replied—'I think not; and when there is need, my heavenly Father will enable me to take it, for there is not a pang I suffer, but what is known to him; and I have evidence, that though far from home and my native land,

I am not forgotten.' Thus mercifully was he sustained, and his faith and confidence permitted to remain unshaken, amidst the sinking of nature.

On the morning of the 12th, he appeared unusually feeble, though not apparently worse in other respects. He was wheeled into the adjoining apartment as usual; and shortly afterwards remarked to one of the family, who had most affectionately watched over him, 'perhaps this day will end all your cares and troubles.' It was an unusual remark; but as it was supposed to arise from the feeling of present weakness, it did not excite any particular alarm. The heat of the weather being oppressive, he was placed in a current of air, and was almost constantly fanned. His mouth he said was better; but still it was with difficulty that he was induced to make the effort to take any nourishment. In the afternoon, one of those around him making some allusion to his returning to England, he remarked,—'it is very doubtful whether I shall be permitted to return to England.' His friend expressed her hope that it might yet be permitted; for though he felt very weak at that time, his symptoms were better than they had been; his only answer was an incredulous smile. After this he was supported from one bed to another; but it was observed that his steps were more faltering than before.

Between four and five o'clock that afternoon, a young friend who had been much with him during his sickness, and had watched by him a part of the preceding night, called to take leave, as he was about to attend a distant Yearly Meeting. Our dear father acknowledged his kindness, adding,—'give my dear love to all my friends. God reigneth over all: His mercy and goodness have never failed me. The end I have not been able to see.'

The end thus veiled from him, was, however, near at hand.

About eight in the evening, being offered some tea, he remarked, that he could not see it; and it was evident that his sight had quite failed. Shortly afterwards he fell asleep; but his breathing was more laboured than usual. This being observed, he was twice asked if he was comfortable, to which he replied, 'yes.' The difficulty of breathing continued, and he was turned partly

on one side, which not arousing him, his friends became alarmed; various means were resorted to, but nothing seemed to afford any relief. In this state he continued, apparently breathing with the same difficulty as before till a little after twelve at night, when he gently passed away without sigh or struggle.

The funeral took place on the 15th of the Sixth Month: it was largely attended, and proved a season of much solemnity; in which survivors were loudly called upon to follow the departed, as he had been concerned to follow Christ. At the grave side, the voice of thanksgiving and praise ascended to him, who had sustained His devoted follower through all the conflicts and trials of his pilgrimage,—who had prepared him for Himself through the sanctifying operation of His grace, and had now been pleased in His abounding mercy to gather him in peace into the heavenly garner, even "as a shock of corn cometh in in his season."

CONCLUDING REMARKS.

It is far from being the intention of the Editor to attempt any elaborate delineation of the character of the subject of these Memoirs:—this he thinks will be best gathered from the correspondence and memoranda which have preceded. There is however one feature, on which he hopes the reader will bear with him, whilst he offers a few remarks, which appear to be called for by the peculiar opportunities for observation which he enjoyed,—viz. the mingled fidelity and tenderness with which his beloved father sustained the responsible character of a parent. In reverting to this particular, those who enjoyed the privilege of a filial relationship, feel that they have abundant cause to rise up and call him blessed. From their early years, the benign influence of his devout and pious spirit was forcibly felt; and it is now a mournful satisfaction to the survivors to recollect, that their earliest impressions of good were associated with the affectionate counsels of their departed father. His was not the language of precept only,—that of his strikingly consistent example was still more powerful. It was impossible to observe from day to day the thankful, cheerful, humble frame of mind which he so uniformly manifested,—his watchfulness to check every rising of improper feeling,—and above all, the deep reverence and filial love which pervaded his heart towards the great Author of every mercy,—without being made sensible of that blessed and all-pervading principle, which regulated the daily tenor of his life. His children at once loved and honoured him; for while he possessed their entire confidence, and the fullest hold on their affections, they knew that he was unflinching in the refusal of whatever he felt to be inconsistent with his principles or their highest good. Notwithstanding the kindness of his nature, and the strength and warmth of his parental feelings, his known firmness precluded all hope of inducing him to yield to their inclinations, when these stood opposed to their eternal interests. Many

perhaps may have been more systematic in their instructions; but few could keep more steadily or practically in view the superior importance of heavenly things.

From their early years, he patiently laboured to imbue the minds of his children, with the love and fear of the Almighty. He instructed them diligently in the holy Scriptures; and endeavoured to explain in a manner suited to their capacities, the truths they contain. He was also persevering in his efforts to exhibit to them the example of the righteous of other generations: and especially that exemplification of the fruits of his own principles, which the lives of the early members of our Society so strikingly display. For this purpose he set apart a portion of time daily, in which he read to his family works of this description; a practice that was continued up to the period when his religious labours called him from them. Perhaps some might be ready to think that such a course would be found irksome by the young; but certainly in the present instance the result was widely different, and his children can now recall the feelings of solemn interest and enjoyment that often attended these readings, and the short period of quiet by which they were invariably followed. It was also his custom each evening, when his children had retired to rest, to visit their chambers, and endeavour to direct their hearts to their great Creator and Preserver. On these occasions, he would repeat, or teach them to repeat passages of Scripture, or poetry of a devotional character, to which his own admonitions were frequently added; and he generally closed these sweet and well remembered seasons with a solemn pause: during which, doubtless, his pious spirit was often engaged in committing them to the Lord.

As his children advanced towards maturity, instead of relaxing his watchful care, he felt that there was need rather of redoubled vigilance to shield them from surrounding danger. Ever anxious for their best welfare, yet deeply sensible that through Divine grace alone, their youthful minds must be awakened, quickened, and enabled to lay hold of a Saviour's love; he was earnest in imploring for them this heavenly gift, and diligent in watching for opportunities to impress upon them the importance of spiritual things. One instance of the condescension of

the Lord in hearing and answering his prayers may be here introduced. As his eldest son attained the age of manhood, earnest were the cravings of his father, that the Lord would direct his heart "into the love of God, and into the patient waiting for Christ." He knew well that to the natural man, the things of God must ever be a mystery; and he longed that through submission to the operations of the Spirit of truth they might be opened to his understanding. Often with parental tenderness he silently watched the opening convictions of his inquiring mind, and as opportunities presented, he laboured to explain to him the views he had himself received. At one time the sentiments of his son on these all-important subjects were exceedingly unsettled, and he passed through deep mental conflict before he yielded to the light of Divine truth in his soul, which dispelled the doubts and reasonings by which he was assailed. It was at this period, that one evening his father and he being alone together, they had much conversation on the points which then pressed heavily on the mind of the latter. Before retiring to rest, his father handed him the Bible, and requested him to read a chapter: he took the book and read the third chapter of Malachi. Deep seriousness overspread his countenance, and after a considerable time of silence he repeated, "The Lord whom ye seek shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant whom ye delight in;"—and he shall be "like a refiner's fire, and like fuller's soap;" adding, 'yes, he will come into his own temple, the temple of the heart, and there do his own work. I never understood this chapter before, nor saw, as I now see it, the spiritual nature of the gospel dispensation.' The impression thus made was not soon effaced; and it was evident to his thankful and rejoicing parent, that the prophetic declaration was indeed fulfilled in his experience,—that the Lord had come into his temple, and was there working to the purifying of his soul. The change which gradually succeeded was most striking; clearly evincing to those around, that the day had indeed dawned and the day star arisen, in a heart long oppressed with darkness, and a prey to many doubts. In reference to this period his father once remarked with much emotion,—"this kind

can come forth by nothing but by prayer and fasting," intimating the long continued exercise of soul through which he had been led on behalf of his son.

Two avenues to evil, he guarded with especial jealousy in his domestic sphere,—the introduction of books of an injurious tendency, and the association which he allowed to his children. With respect to reading, he was liberal in supplying whatever he thought calculated to improve or expand the mind, and furnish profitable exercise to the understanding; but very few productions of a frivolous or hurtful nature escaped the vigilance of his watchful eye. On these occasions, he regarded not the inclinations of those he so tenderly loved; and he has been known, when works that he disapproved had been lent to his young people, to return them himself to the parties from whom they came, accompanied by a frank avowal of his sentiments respecting them. With regard to society for his family, his situation in a foreign country, far separated from those of his own religious views, would doubtless have appeared to many to present unusual difficulties. These he endeavoured to obviate, by rendering home as pleasant and cheerful as possible, and thus leaving his children little to desire beyond its precincts. Perhaps few domestic circles ever presented a happier scene than his own, while its links were permitted to remain unbroken. Doubtless the result of such a system has been to make the changes and separations, inevitable in a world of fluctuation and mutability, fall heavily on the hearts of survivors; but the shelter thus afforded to their inexperience, and to the unfixed principles of early years, was an invaluable safeguard; and they can now look back with grateful hearts to the wisdom and care of their departed parent. If his labours have not always been attended with adequate results, his children can freely, though with shame acknowledge, that the fault rested not with him but with themselves; and as respects those who have been called from this state of probation, the survivors are permitted to believe that the counsels and prayers of their pious father were blessed on their behalf, and that they have been made partakers of that redemption which is in Christ Jesus, and favoured to know their robes washed and made white in His precious blood.

And how full of consolation is the belief, that their spirits are now united with his, who so fondly and faithfully watched over their early years,—shielded them from temptations to surrounding evil,—and turned their feet into the path that leads to blessedness:—"Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in His temple: and He that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them. They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat. For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes."

LONDON:
RICHARD BARRETT, PRINTER, MARK LANE.

FRIENDS' BOOKS

PUBLISHED BY CHARLES GILPIN,

LONDON.

1.

DANIEL WHEELER. Memoirs of the Life and Gospel Labours of the late Daniel Wheeler. Abridged Edition, cloth, price 3s. 6d.

2.

SELECT MISCELLANIES, Chiefly Illustrative of the History, Christian Principles and Sufferings of the Society of Friends. By Wilson Armistead. 6 volumes, cloth, price 3s. 6d. each.

3.

EDWARD BURROUGH, A MEMOIR of a Faithful Servant of Christ and Minister of the Gospel, who died in Newgate. By William and Thomas Evans, of Philadelphia. Cloth, price 6s.

4.

MEMORIALS of REBECCA JONES, Compiled by William J. Allinson. Third Edition, with an Appendix. 8vo., cloth, price 7s.

5.

CHRISTIAN BAPTISM: or the Baptism of Christ. Do the Christian Churches generally entertain sound Scriptural views respecting it? 12mo., cloth, price 9d.; sewed, price 4d.

6.

GEORGE FOX, the FIRST of the Quakers; a Popular Life compiled from his Journal and other authentic sources. By Josiah Marsh. Cloth, price 6s. 6d.

7.

MARY ANN GILPIN, of BRISTOL: consisting chiefly of extracts from her Diary and Letters. Third Edition. 12mo., cloth, price 2s. 6d.

8.

SELECTION from the WRITINGS of PATRICK LIVINGSTONE; a Faithful Minister of the Gospel, in the Society of Friends, and a patient sufferer for the same. Now first published from the original manuscript volume, together with a brief Memoir of him. 12mo. cloth, price 4s. 6d.

9.

EXTRACTS from the LETTERS of ELIZABETH LUCY, JUDITH, and SUSANNA USSHER, late of the City of Waterford, to which is subjoined a short Memoir of their Mother, ELIZABETH USSHER. 18mo., cloth, price 1s. 6d.

10.

RICHARD & ELIZABETH SHACKLETON, late of Balitore, Ireland. Memoirs and Letters of the late R. and E. S., including a concise Biographical Sketch and some Letters of her Grandfather, ABRAHAM SHACKLETON. A new Edition, containing many valuable Letters never before published. Cloth, price 5s.

11.

A JOURNAL of the LIFE and GOSPEL Labours of JOHN CONRAN, of Moyallen, in Ireland, who died in the year 1827. Now first published from the original MSS. Foolscap 8vo., price 3s.

12.

MEMORIALS of DECEASED MEMBERS of the Society of Friends. Compiled from various authentic sources. By SUSANNA CORDER. Sixth Edition, with a considerable number of Additions. 8vo., cloth, price 7s.

13.

A SELECTION of SCRIPTURE POETRY. By LOVELL SQUIRE. Third Edition, containing many original Hymns not hitherto published. 18mo., cloth, price 2s. 6d. The same may be had nicely bound in silk, with gilt edges, price 4s.

14.

MEMOIRS of MARIA FOX, late of Tottenham, consisting chiefly of Extracts from her Journal and Correspondence. 8vo., cloth, price 8s.

15.

JOURNAL of the LIFE, TRAVELS, and GOSPEL LABOURS of that Faithful Servant and Minister of Christ, JOB SCOTT. New Edition. 12mo. cloth, price 3s. 6d.

16.

HISTORY of the SOCIETY of FRIENDS: compiled from its standard Records, and other authentic Sources. By WILLIAM R. WAGSTAFF, M.D. 8vo., cloth, price 12s.

17.

EXTRACTS from the LETTERS of JONATHAN HUTCHINSON; with some brief Notices of his Life and Character. Second Edition. 12mo., cloth, price 5s.

18.

ON the HISTORY and MYSTERY of (those called) the Sacraments, shewing them to be Jewish Institutions, and not Ordinances appointed by Christ, to be observed in his Church. By JACOB POST. Foolscap 8vo., price 1s. 6d.; a sewed edition, price 1s.

19.

A MEMOIR of JAMES PARNELL. With Extracts from his Writings. By HENRY CALLAWAY. 18mo., cloth, price 1s. 6d.

20.

EXTRACTS from the MEMORANDUMS of JANE BETTLE, with a short Memoir respecting her. Reprinted from the American edition. 12mo., cloth, price 1s. 6d.

21.

A SELECTION from the LETTERS of the late SARAH GRUBB (formerly Sarah Lynes). 8vo. cloth. price 8s.

22.

EXTRACTS of the MEMOIR and LETTERS of the late LOVEDAY HENWOOD. 12mo., cloth, price 1s. 6d.

23.

THE LIFE of OLIVER SANSOM, shewing his convincement of the truth, the exercises, trials and sufferings, which came upon him for his obedience thereunto: also relating some of his travels and labours in the work of the Ministry for turning people from darkness to light. First printed in 1710. 12mo., cloth, price 4s.

24.

AUTOBIOGRAPHICAL NARRATIONS of the convincement, and other religious experience of SAMUEL CRISP, ELIZABETH WEBB, EVAN BEVAN, MARGARET LUCAS, and FREDERICK SMITH. Foolscap 8vo., cloth, price 3s.

25.

SOME ACCOUNT of the LIVES and Religious Labours of SAMUEL NEALE, and MARY NEALE, formerly MARY PEISLEY, both of Ireland. A new Edition, considerably enlarged. Foolscap 8vo., price 4s. 6d.

26.

THE LIFE and TRAVELS of JOHN PEMBERTON, a Minister of the Gospel of Christ. Compiled for the American Friends' Library. 12mo., cloth, price 3s. 6d.

27.

A JOURNAL of the TRAVELS, and Religious Labours of WILLIAM SAVERY, late of Philadelphia, a Minister of the Gospel of Christ in the Society of Friends, compiled from his original Memoranda by JONATHAN EVANS. 12mo., cloth, price 3s. 6d.

LONDON:

CHARLES GILPIN, 5, Bishopsgate Without.

MAR 2 1904

Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide
Treatment Date: April 2006

PreservationTechnologies

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS
0 017 496 350 2